# SHROUDING THE HEAVENS

BOOK 1

Chen Dong

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# *Shrouding the Heavens*

**(遮天)**

*by*

## *Chen Dong*

**(辰东)**

# *Synopsis*

In the cold dark reaches of space, nine huge dragon corpses are pulling a large bronze coffin giving off an aura of ancientness. This image was captured by an unmanned space probe in the depths of the cosmos.

Did this mean the return to the ancient era? Or did it mean reaching the other side of the stars?

A vast world filled with bizarre and mysterious immortals. A world where hot blood erupts like volcanoes. A world where passion surges like the vast ocean. A world filled with an endless abyss of desires. On the road to ascending heaven witness a melodious journey, a journey that would shroud the skies.

# *Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes*

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Fak @ FAKTRANSLATIONS

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# *Chapter 1: A Bronze Coffin In The Sky*

Life is the world's greatest miracle.

Front, back, left, right, up and down, these directions can be said to make up the universe. Reality dictates that there are no fixed paths which one should pursue. From past to present it has always been known as 'universe'. Although the universe has been continually expanding, it is unknown from whence it came.

In the limitless starry sky among the vastness of the universe, scientists have speculated that life only exists on earth.

The human species has always been lonely. Despite countless billions of stars in the far reaches of space, there have been no signs of life in other star systems thus far.

Humans have however never given up on the exploration of the unknown and have been sending out space probes since the last century. Voyager-II was an unmanned space probe that was sent forth in 1977 from the Kennedy Space Centre in the United States of America.

On the Voyager-II was a gold plated album with the theme 'Greetings to the Universe' and it contained popular music as well as greetings in fifty five of earth's spoken languages. This was done in hopes of being intercepted by an alien civilization.

Since the 1970s, the lonely Voyager-II was like an insignificant speck of dust travelling in the vastness of space. Similar space

probes released in the same era had mostly already malfunctioned or lost connections, becoming forever lost in the loneliness of space.

After more than 30 years, science had advanced rapidly and humans had developed advanced space technology that allowed space probes to search for other stars. In the near future there may even be further breakthroughs as science continues to progress.

Even so, the other space probes which were released much later were still unable to catch up to the Voyager-II.

33 years have gone by and the Voyager-II is at a distance of 140 billion kilometers from the Earth.

As of this moment, it had already reached the third cosmic velocity(interstellar speed) and was unable to return to our solar system. It had become an interstellar space probe.

In the dark and cold universe lie many stars, each seemingly like diamonds embedded on a black canvas.

The Voyager-II space probe currently traveled through space and the vastness of space made it resemble an ant crawling in the dark depths of the earth.

More than 30 years have already gone by and at this very moment, the Voyager-II had made an earth-shattering discovery!

In the lonely universe, nine enormous bodies were floating there.....

22nd May 2010, The Space Agency in the United states of America received a cryptic data message from the Voyager-II and after deciphering with great difficulty, they were faced with something unimaginable.

At this current moment, in the NASA mission control centre, shocked reactions appeared on all the personnel's faces. After a long while people finally came back to their senses and the mission control centre was in a frenzy.

"Oh lord, what have I seen?"

"How can this be possible, It can't be true!"

The Voyager-II had long lost the ability to receive instructions and could only proceed forwards, after sending back the cryptic data message it continued onwards in the darkness of space, continuing towards the depths of the new star system.

As that piece of space was too distant, even if another astonishing discovery was made, humans would be helpless in pursuing it.

This top secret information was not disclosed to the public. Shortly after, the Voyager-II was cut off from the mission control centre.

This may have been an end to the story, however, things often happen out of our expectations.

.....

Regardless of whether it was towards space observation and exploration or the study of the science of life and animals, the International Space Station was blessed with the most suitable environment.

Since the Soviet Union launched the first space station in 1971, nine other space stations have also been successfully launched.

11th June 2010, at this very moment inside the International Space Station currently orbiting the Earth, the crew members complexions were changing and their pupils were constricting.

On this day, the existence of God had been clearly denied, believers of a higher power were just praying to seek solace.

At this very instant, a few of the elite crew members were suffering from a huge surge of emotions as they faced an inconceivable picture.

Outside the International Space Station, in the universe where coldness and darkness coexist, nine huge monsters lay motionless. It seemed as though these monsters had been there since the beginning of time, giving people a sense of bleakness and ancientness, the monsters were actually nine dragon corpses!

These dragons were exactly the same as the dragons depicted in ancient legends.

Every dragon corpse was 100 metres in length, seemingly made of cast iron, filled with vigour and strength.

The nine corpses were of the 5-clawed dragon species. Other than the dragon's crystal horn giving off a purple shine, the dragon's black lustrous scales appeared to flicker mysteriously in the darkness.

The mythical existence of dragons, similar to the existence of gods, something that lay above the laws of nature. With the constant development of Science who would actually believe that dragons existed?

The astronauts in the International Space Station were distraught as their emotions surged due to having their ideologies challenged, the scene in front of their eyes was simply unfathomable!

In the loneliness of space, the cold corpse of the dragon was like an indestructible steel wall, one could almost sense the frightening power that was within that body.

But alas, they had lost the breath of life and were destined to rest in the cold depths of space forever.

“That is……”

After the initial intense shock, a few of the world class crew members pupils once again constricted, they were seeing another unbelievable image.

At the tail ends of the nine 100 metre dragon corpses, a 20 metre long bronze coffin was linked with thick black iron chains and simply floated in the deathly silence.

These giant chains that had withstood the test of time appeared to shimmer with light causing it to exude a cold feeling.

The bronze coffin was simplistic in design, there were old pictures engraved on it that gave off a feeling of endless time, it was unknown exactly how long it had been floating there.

Nine dragons were dragging a coffin!

In the bleakness of space, the nine dragon corpses dragging along the bronze coffin was a breathtaking sight to behold.

After the initial shock had passed from facing this unbelievable scene on their monitor screens, a few of the elite astronauts immediately dispatched signals.

“Calling Earth……”

# Chapter 2: Basic Question

“The people of ages past, regardless of spring or autumn, even if temperatures reached 100 degrees, their movements did not falter.”* Ye Fan closed the <The Emperor’s Inner Canon>, the records regarding the ancient times contained within the first portion of the book <Basic Question> was truly fascinating.

[*T/N Old chinese saying from the fundamental medical text for chinese medicine book one of three]

There were not many accurate records regarding the ancient past as it remained a highly mysterious time period.

A gentle breeze swept through the courtyard, the rustling of the leaves made a “shua shua” sound as fresh air flowed in from the window.

Ye Fan loved reading the “strange” genre of books, after brewing a refreshing cup of green tea, he continued to peruse the book.

“No human can live past a hundred years without showing signs of aging. The ancient period, just how mysterious is the ancient past …”

Being a modern man, he did not believe in the recorded dialogues of people from ages past written in the book. He was just curious why the ancient era mentioned in many of the old books were always only skimming on the subject, as though a large part of the information on the ancient era had been erased from writing in the

passage of time.

Was there really a brief period of history that nobody knew about? After a brief reverie he continued to read.

<The Emperor's Inner Canon> was a rarity among the ancient books, as a book from thousands of years ago it was one of China's three great ancient books, although the overall contents were not really believable but it was still a valuable piece of history.

"Marshaling heaven and earth, Grasping the Yin and Yang, Breathing in Spiritual Qi, Using oneself to guard the spirit, Body as one. Thus, one can experience immortality in this world, a life without expiration, this is the way of life."

The <Basic Question> was often mentioned in the ancient era, beings that can flip heaven and earth, refine spiritual Qi as well as immortals. The modern man cannot possibly believe in their existence.

……

Unknowingly the sun was already gradually setting, the lawn outside the window and trees were painted with a faint hue of red.

Ye Fan placed the <The Emperor's Inner Canon> down and prepared to go for an important meeting with his classmates.

Having graduated from university three years ago, Ye Fan

remained in the same city after graduating. Thinking back, gone were the days of the simple school life

Three years had passed in the blink of an eye, the classmates of the past had already become distant and everybody had their own life's path to follow.

The ringtone of his cell phone interrupted his thoughts, it was his classmate Lin Jia, an extremely intelligent and beautiful woman. After graduating she had gone to the neighbouring city and with her exceptional abilities rose to the position of department manager.

Upon answering the phone call, sounds of Lin Jia's bantering could be heard. Her exceptional social skills since the university days meant that there was never an awkward moment.

"What's up, miss me?" Ye Fan coolly retorted.

An enchanting and mesmerizing laughter was transmitted from the other side, "I'm not sure how to go to the meeting location, let's head there together."

Upon confirmation of the meeting place, Ye Fan got into his car and drove off. Back in University Ye Fan had previously courted Lin Jia however was cruelly turned down after she said that the two of them were unsuited for each other.

Although Lin Jia was a beautiful and charming lady, her

intelligence and reasoning abilities were ahead of her looks. As a realist, she knew what she wanted and how to get it done.

Ten minutes prior to the agreed meeting time, Ye Fan found a parking lot and got off the car to wait by the roadside for Lin Jia.

The entire city was enveloped in the rays of the moon, every building had a sheen of pale gold on it, the vehicles travelling on the road were endless and pedestrians could be seen everywhere.

Seven to eight minutes later a Toyota parked by the roadside, a beautiful and exquisite face was revealed, Lin Jia stepped out of her car.

“There’s even a chauffeur.” Yefan mentioned in a joking manner.

“Quit taking a dig at me, I don’t have a chauffeur, that would be our classmate Liu Yun Zhi.”

Although there had been some contact since graduating three years ago, Ye Fan met her only once since two years ago. The ever youthful Lin jia was dressed casually in a pair of skinny jeans with a purple top, which further accentuated her curves.

“Haven’t seen you for two years, how are you?” Lin Jia said with her shoulder length silky black hair, sparkly eyes and long eyelashes that were fluttering, making her exude a peculiar aura, extremely charming and mesmerising.

“Alright I guess.” Ye Fan smiled gingerly and said: “ Lin Jia with your natural beauty it’s such a waste that you haven’t joined any idol groups to perform.”

“Looking for a beating?” Lin Jia laughed charmingly, as her phoenix eyes shone brightly while glancing to the side. Paired with those seductive red lips, she was simply captivating.

At this moment, the windows of the Toyota parked by the roadside winded down, the person in the driver’s seat was a familiar face, it was actually Liu Yun Zhi.

Similar to Ye Fan, after graduating Liu Yun Zhi had remained in the same city. Due to connections with a relative of relatively high standing, he managed to open a decent sized company and was considered to be relatively successful amongst the classmates.

Although Ye Fan and Liu Yun Zhi lived in the same city, they almost never kept in touch. This was due to certain altercations between the two of them during their University days.

Liu Yun Zhi did not get off the car, and said with a wry smile: “Long time no see.”

Oh yea, if there’s time we should meet up more often.” When faced with Liu Yun Zhi who did not even bother to climb out of the car, Ye Fan only answered with a generic greeting.

“Took a taxi here?”

When faced with this sudden contempt, Ye Fan did not bother to refute and grunted.

Being a smart person that could read the atmosphere, Lin Jia smiled and said to Ye Fan “After arriving here in a hurry and calling up our old classmates that are residing in the city, we should take Liu Yun Zhi’s car and go together.”

Ye Fan had not replied but Liu Yun Zhi had already apologetically said: “Really sorry, previously I’ve already arranged to pick up another two of our old classmates just down the road, it seems that there won’t be enough seats.”

“No issues, you should go ahead first, I’ll reach there shortly.” Yefan turned to Lin Jia and asked with a smiling face “Going with me or …”

Lin Jia was hesitating, Liu Zhi Yun saw this and urged: “Beautiful Miss Lin, i think you should hurry and get on my car, otherwise I’m afraid that I may drown from other people’s spittle.”

After standing on the roadside hesitating for a few moments, Lin Jia gave an apologetic expression but still climbed onto Liu Yun Zhi’s car after his incessant urging.

While the windows were winding up, Ye Fan managed to overhear Liu Yun Zhi’s condescending tone: “It’s the rush hour now, it will be impossible to get a cab !” Shortly after, the Toyota sped off in the distance.

Back in the day, Ye Fan was a notable character in the University. However, right now, he was considered to be unable to afford a car, seemingly rather pathetic.

When faced with people like Liu Yun Zhi, he could immediately ignore whatever drivel was said, however he was shocked at Lin Jia also behaving the same way.

Everybody had their own way of living. It was unavoidable for a person to have certain traits like pride, vanity, envy and e.t.c. Ye Fan did not feel disgusted because of this.

.....

As the sun set in the horizon, the blood red sky started to darken, the city was gradually covered in a thick layer of darkness as night fell.

At this very moment, the nine gigantic dragon corpses pulling the bronze coffin were currently motionless in the deep dark reaches of space, this shocking visage remained in perpetuum.

The personnel within the International Space Stations had already sent the groundbreaking news back to Earth and were waiting for directives.

# Chapter 3: Past And Present

Although it could not be said that Ye Fan had a successful career, because of certain events that transpired he actually had quite a bit on hand and actually purchased a Mercedes which was more expensive than Liu Yun Zhi's Toyota. This way of deciding prestige or wealthiness felt vulgar to him and thus he did not make comparisons.

Ten minutes later, Ye Fan drove his car to the meeting point at Sea Moon City.

This was a restaurant and bar of one of the super casinos, it was located in a prime location and the luxury cars that were parked there were testament to the opulence of the area.

Having only graduated from University for three years, most of the students did not have successful careers yet. Ye Fan felt that choosing such a venue for gathering was a bit extravagant.

Upon leaving the carpark and arriving at Sea Moon City, Ye Fan saw some familiar figures of old classmates, there were even classmates whom he had not seen for three years.

"Ye Fan!" A handsome and cultured looking young man walked up to him with a smile on his face: "This is your city however you are so late to show up, you should be the first to arrive to organise and lead the gathering, this is your mistake."

This cultured youth was Wang Zi Wen, he was one of the

organisers and was a very energetic personality back in University. In the three years since it was rumoured that his expansion into another city was very successful and his business was flourishing.

The few others also came over and although a long time had passed the feelings amongst them were warm and jovial.

It was obvious that Wang Zi Wen was there waiting for somebody and the person who could make him stand in front of Sea Moon City to welcome them was very obvious as it could only be that one or two people.

Wang Zi Wen was a very intelligent person and he did not continue waiting outside alone but rather led the group of people into Sea Moon City. The fifth level was a small business centre that could hold anywhere between thirty to fifty people and was already booked.

It was already nightfall at this point and most of the classmates attending the gathering had already reached.

The arrival of several people made the scene lively and greetings were thrown out here and there. Being able to gather together once again made them feel as though time had rewinded and they were back in their University days.

Having graduated for three years, everybody was already twenty five years or older, several people had already married and there were even two who were mothers already.

Everybody had their own life's path however a majority of the classmates could be said to be living ordinary lives, the dreams of the past had long since been worn away by the passing of time and the dullness of life had made their lives ordinary.

With their dreams lost, a majority of the people felt the reality of being fated to be an ordinary person.

Ye Fan was brought by Wang Zi Wen to one side of the gathering, upon closer inspection, the classmates here were more affluent; either because of a successful career or having someone to depend on in their family.

"Ye Fan, you were so late to arrive, you must be punished with three glasses."

"Three glasses are too little, you guys are underestimating Ye Fan's drinking capacity." Lin Jia sat by the side, eyes glancing sideways, body slender with graceful curves, sexy and moving.

"Which pretty woman wants to punish me?" Ye Fan jested as he referred to both the men and women in the group.

"You've only just arrived but are already taking advantage of us, punish, we must punish you!" The men and women chimed in unison.

Liu Yun Zhi also had some background in the city and was thus also a part of this affluent group. He naturally said: "I actually thought that you would arrive even later considering that you had to take a cab over."

Once Liu Yun Zhi spoke the atmosphere immediately became awkward. The classmates there knew that Liu Yun Zhi and Ye Fan had some grievances back in University and now that Liu Yun Zhi had been successful with his business in the city he bluntly pointed out that Ye Fan had taken a cab to come, it was clear what his intentions were.

The other classmates also noticed that the atmosphere was weird and looked over however Ye Fan only smirked but did not say anything.

“I’ll go out to pick up Zhou Yi.” Wang Zi Wen attempted to change the topic and turned to leave.

Lin Jia and two other female classmates started discussing about cosmetics and designer products whilst other people started to reminisce about the goofy events that occurred in the past and the awkward atmosphere gradually melted away and began to warm up again.

However, the atmosphere was still delicate and nobody talked about punishing Ye Fan and more conversations were talking about Liu Yun Zhi.

Although Ye Fan was an outstanding personality back in University, once one graduated success in one’s career was what was most sought after.

From time to time there were glances over to this area; this area

was one for the more affluent classmates and they had mostly been successful since graduating. This group of classmates were gradually ostracizing Ye Fan.

When faced with this, Ye Fan was very calm however he eventually decided to stand up and join another group of classmates. He did not want to be marked and ignored by the others at the table.

Cosmetics and designer goods would always be the favourite topic for the ladies while the guys would talk about soccer and the latest news.

……

Half an hour had passed and the participating twenty five people for the gathering had all arrived. The class initially had thirty three people however three people were overseas and the remaining five had other commitments that prevented them from coming.

The gathering had several organisers to hype up the atmosphere and people split into small groups and began chatting away.

A period of time had passed and it was finally time to toast to the reunion. There was no fixed position to stand in however groups of people had congregated together for the toast.

Ye Fan was not part of the group with Lin Jia and Liu Yun Zhi but was very comfortably seated at another table.

After another round of speeches the scene became even more hectic. People were going from table to table to toast and there were some people who had no time to move as they were continually drinking toasts.

三年来发生了很多的事情，每个人的变化都很大。也许是因为酒精的刺激，不少同学都谈起了自己的生活，有人得意有人失意。

With the passing of three years many events had occurred and the changes in everyone were drastic. Maybe the alcohol helped to loosen everybody up as many classmates started to talk about their lives, some spoke of their fortunes while others their disappointments.

Some people hated how their bosses were too strict, always wanting them to do over-time work yet their pay was so meagre.

A female student bragged about how her boyfriend was a manager of a well-known enterprise, another student bragged about her husband already being the corporate vice-president of a company, there were even people who bragged that their fiance was the niece of a person in an influential position in the bank.

There were others who became speechless after hearing the bragging, many people's lives were not that smooth sailing.

There was a particular female classmate who looked particularly haggard, there were rumours that she had married somebody that she did not love, the marriage was not blissful and her husband was a drunkard. Classmates who visited her when they were in her

city even saw bruise marks on her body.

“Please find me if you have anything that you need help with……”

Towards this haggard looking female classmate Ye Fan was filled with compassion. He still remembered the days in University when she was innocently standing by the soccer field and cheering him on.

It could be seen that her life was really pitiful. She was grateful to hear those kind words and softly said: “Thank you….”

“Ye Fan, I think you should help yourself first……”

The girl who said her husband had risen to a manager in a well known enterprise said while intoxicated. “Look at how successful Liu Yun Zhi is.”

The classmates of Ye Fan’s table looked at him then looked at Liu Yun Zhe sitting at the table with the affluent classmates.

“Ye Fan, it’s not that I want to badmouth you, back in University you were certainly a big shot, however things have changed since we graduated, we have to work hard to succeed.” The classmate whose fiance was the niece of an influential person in a bank preached to Ye Fan.

Hearing them mention of the table of Liu Yun Zhi and the

affluent classmates, there were some classmates on this side who lamented that the people there who were previously inferior were now in entirely different leagues.

There were also people who became very boisterous and drunken, saying that the people came to the gathering just to flaunt their success.

There were even a few female classmates who laughed at Ye Fan, saying that they were lucky to have only secretly liked him and only felt remorse at having rejected Liu Yun Zhi's advances.

Still the same city, still the same people. However, each person had drastic changes to their personalities due to their circumstances.

# Chapter 4: Ancient Engraved Copper

Night had already fallen, neon lights were flashing on both sides of the road and the nightlife in the city was bursting with energy. Skyscrapers dotted the area reaching towards the sky.

All this when viewed from space just be a speck, seemingly small and trivial.

This was a night that was destined to be special. The many monitoring rooms on Earth were all closely monitoring the sky.

In the loneliness of space, nine dragon corpses had palm sized black scales on their bodies giving off a faint metallic glint.

The dragons from ancient legends that should never exist were actually floating there in space.

The images that were captured from space painted a picture that was shocking to the soul; dragon horns that seemed to be filled with a mysterious power, bodies that were as big as mountains, scales that were metallic and sharp, cold and majestic.

Nine corpses of dragons, this was an affront to all the current knowledge of human society, this discovery shocked the very foundations of people’s beliefs.

……

“Ye Fan, how have you fared during these three years from graduation?” Many people asked Ye Fan filled with concern.

“I’ve done alright, my life has been rather dull, nothing interesting has happened in the past three years…….”

At this moment, Liu Yun Zhi and the classmates at his side came over to toast glasses, saying many greetings and constantly toasting glasses making the atmosphere very lively.

The classmates who first wanted to punish Ye Fan into drinking did not come to toast him and only Lin Jia and Wang Zi Wen came respectively to give a toast to him.

[T/N In chinese culture not toasting to Ye Fan can be seen as a form of disrespect]

As the night wore on, many people grew more intoxicated from the alcohol and they proceeded to sing karaoke. The songs sung caused the classmates to reminisce their university days.

“How many people used to admire the looks of your youth, who would be willing to endure the passing of time, how many people used to crowd around you, in this life I will always be by your side……”

Maybe it was due to all of them being drunk, a pair of lovers back in University, forced apart after graduation due to circumstances were silently facing each other.

As the song continued to play the girl gradually lost control of her emotions, her eyes started to tear up and she eventually broke down crying, the people around came over to console her.

Because of several different reasons, all the couples amongst the classmates had broken up even though some had put in a lot of effort to maintain those relationships.

This may be the curse of graduation, every year the graduating class would face the same tragedy of couples being forced apart.

It was unfortunate that this tragedy was likely to go on, whether it be the recklessness of youth, the pressures of work or the pressures of society..... There could be multiple other reasons as well.

Almost everybody singing chose songs they sung back in the University, some sang songs dripping with emotion, making the classmates reminisce their times back in university, each event seemingly flashing in front of their eyes.

The drunk students were hogging the microphone, their sounds were loud and boisterous, no proper melody could be found. Although their ears were aching from all the noise, everybody was still in a very jovial atmosphere as laughter filled the air.

The night dragged on till late at night before the classmates finally started to leave Sea Moon City. There were still activities planned for the next day; visiting their Alma Mater.

Those classmates that travelled a long distance to the city had chosen to stay in the same hotel and the few who drove were responsible for sending them to the hotel.

“Lin Jia let me give you a lift to the hotel.” Liu Yun Zhi stopped his Toyota beside Lin Jia.

The rest of the classmates wanted to take cabs to the hotel as there were limited seats available amongst the classmates with cars.

At this point a Mercedes stopped by the road side and Ye Fan got off the car and spoke to the haggard looking girl: “I’ll send you back.”

Ye Fan felt especially compassionate towards this female classmate. Back in university she was a happy and innocent girl who liked to cheer for the boys on the soccer field. She even occasionally bought them drinks.

But the misfortunes of life had hit her hard and she was silent the entire night, looking both pale and frail.

With Ye Fan stopping by the roadside to invite her for a lift, she felt gratitude but also shyness as she became the centre of attention with everybody staring at her.

Liu Yun Zhi saw Ye Fan stepping out of the Mercedes and his

initial shocked expression gradually became even more crestfallen.

In the surrounding area, people shared different expressions ranging from curiosity to befuddlement, shock as well as a mix of all the above.

Everybody inadvertently looked towards Liu Yun Zhi, the scenario in front of their eyes was different from the picture he painted for them earlier.

Liu Yun Zhi felt that his face was burning up, as though someone had given him a solid slap on his cheek.

The classmates who previously spoke down to Ye Fan from their high horse also similarly felt embarrassed, and felt like explaining the situation but were unable to do so.

A small group of the classmates especially those who had sat on the same table as Ye Fan had amused expressions on their faces, they felt that Ye Fan had thoroughly embarrassed Liu Yun Zhi and his group of classmates.

Whilst this was happening two classmates had already climbed onto Ye Fan's Mercedes; these classmates were best buddies with Ye Fan and did not need to seek permission.

The Mercedes quickly left after all passengers had boarded, several people were still feeling rather lost and Liu Yun Zhi's body was rigid, he felt the glances of everybody and they felt like

daggers in his back.

At this instance, in the International Space Station which was floating high above, the crew members faces were stiff and they felt extremely nervous.

In the cold and dark universe, the bronze coffin that was linked to the nine dragon corpses made people feel a sense of desolation and old age.

The top brass on Earth had already come to a consensus that should there be any adverse changes to the situation the nine dragon corpses would be immediately destroyed together with the bronze coffin.

But of course nobody wished for such a situation to come to pass.

The value of the nine dragons and the bronze coffin that came from the depths of space was immeasurable!

Suddenly, NASA's main control room captured a signal of mysterious fluctuations. The mysterious fluctuations were actually emanating from the ancient and obscure patterns on the bronze coffin.

The signal that was sent back to Earth was being deciphered by the latest state of the art supercomputers but nothing could be understood.

It was very difficult to see the patterns on the bronze coffin clearly as the rust on it obscured the patterns.

“From our preliminary assessment, the engravings on the bronze coffin have a close relation to the legends of ancient china.” That was the conclusion of each of the state representatives. The animal patterns on the bronze coffin were similar to those recorded in China’s and the human figures on the bronze coffin seemed to be divine in nature.

Although there was guesswork on the origin of the engravings on the bronze coffins, the signal being received on earth was still undecipherable and they had no idea what was happening.

# Chapter 5: Li Xiao Man

Their Alma Mater was the same as the past, nothing much had changed besides the people who went there; 4 years of their youth was spent there creating unforgettable memories.

Under the shade of the trees were many of their juniors silently reading, Ye Fan and his classmates felt as though they had travelled back in time and the distant memories three years back were racing through the minds.

After graduation, a majority of the class had were busy with their works and aspirations and besides Ye Fan and a select few, this was the first time the others had come back to their Alma Mater.

By the lake in the University, ripples gently spread out, the scenery was the same as the past, beautiful and stunning. One could almost imagine the scenes of the past, where people laughed and sang songs and listened to the gentle strumming of the guitar.

Although many years had passed, every time one heard the melodious sounds by the lake, it would lead one to reminisce those years of youth and innocence, giving one a bitter sweet feeling making them feel very emotional.

The passing of time would often leave a sour taste in one’s mouth.

The only problem was finding the people who used to sing and play the guitar by the lake would be difficult as so many years had

already passed.

"I've heard some of my friends mention that the amazing guitar player worked in a bar in another city but did not have much success."

"Do you still remember that long legged beautiful singer in the school band? I've heard that she now works as a hostess in a nightclub."

Everyone could only let out a sigh of helplessness.

After graduation, many people were faced with the reality of life. Life was sometimes very difficult, often leaving one confused and frustrated.

After a brief period of contemplation, the classmates continued into the campus.

At this point, Lin Jia gingerly walked up to Ye Fan's side.

She was wearing a blue and white chiffon dress which barely reached her knees while exposing her long slender white legs. She wore a black belt at her waist which further accentuated her curves and her long silky hair draped over her voluptuous chest.

A pretty face, in combination with her pale white skin and her beautiful sparkly eyes made Lin Jia seem like a goddess.

“You obviously had a car, why didn’t you tell me that yesterday?”

“Since when did I have a chance to mention it?”

“You aren’t going to invite me to take a ride on your car?”

“I’d be honoured, I am officially inviting Miss Lin Jia to take a ride on my car.”

They both laughed after their short round of banter.

Although Lin Jia was very abrupt in mentioning yesterday’s events, she very skillfully brushed past the topic and even spoke in a very close manner making it difficult to be unfamiliar with her.

Having said her piece, Lin Jia turned and walked away. She was a smart woman, she understood that suddenly becoming too close would be hypocritical and it would be better to be more natural.

This miraculous transformation in treatment also happened among some of the other classmates.

When the classmates left the school, it was already noon time and they gathered to eat at a restaurant once again.

Wang Zi Wen personally invited Ye Fan to sit at their table however after a couple of drinks Ye Fan went back to the table of

classmates who sat with him previously.

“Ye Fan, yesterday I was in a drunken stupor and said some silly things, I hope you won’t take it to heart. I’ll toast a cup to you and drink first as a sign of respect……”

This was the person who bragged about his fiance being the niece of someone in an influential position in the bank. Yesterday he spoke to Ye Fan in a derogatory tone however he quickly adopted a respectful tone today.

As for the girl who bragged about her husband being the Vice-President of a well known enterprise also had a complete change in attitude and was respectful to Ye Fan.

“Come everybody, let’s toast!”

……

In comparison to the previous day, Ye Fan’s table was very rowdy. People continually came over to toast him and Ye Fan naturally did not reject and was swarmed by people. All the people at Wang Zi Wen’s table had come over to toast him a glass.

Liu Yun Zhi was very calm, although he was very embarrassed the previous day, it seemed as though he had already forgotten about the past events and was acting as though nothing had happened.

“Everybody, Yesterday I received a call that came from overseas.....”

The person who spoke was precisely Zhou Yi, he was a refined gentlemen and everybody knew that his background was rich. The previous day Wang Zi Wen was precisely waiting for him.

Everybody stopped what they were doing and looking towards Zhou Yi. Zhou Yi was a very carefree person and never let anyone feel that he was arrogant.

Zhou Yi said that three of their classmates who were overseas were actually flying back to the country and this piece of news excited the gathered classmates.

.....

“After having graduated, we each treaded on our own life’s paths and being able to finally gather together was very difficult. When we finally gathered together after three years, some of us have already turned into fathers or mothers and the next time we meet who knows how long it will be. I propose that we extend our gathering and wait for the three classmates who are flying back to the country.....”

.....

Ye Fan drove home and after brewing himself a cup of soothing green tea he stared out the window at the tree outside and recalled

certain events that happened in the past.

A person that he missed, those slowly leaving footsteps seemed like the leaves of a tree gently floating towards the ground.

The name of the person, Li Xiao Man had long faded from his memory.

After graduation Li Xiao Man went overseas to further her studies. Although their relations were very close initially, as time slowly passed by their emails gradually became lesser and lesser and eventually they stopped all communications.

Rather than say “Separated by the sea but looking forward to meeting, One would be better off saying separated by the sea and forgetting.”* A relationship that was frowned upon by their friends actually fell apart as though prophesied.

[*T/N I left it in the direct translation as I feel it conveys the author’s usage of the chinese phrase better the author says 隔海相望，不如说隔海相忘 and the difference of 望 and 忘 create this differential in meaning even though they are both similarly pronounced as ‘wang’.]

Upon hearing Zhou Yi mention Li Xiao Man’s return to the country, Ye Fan actually felt that the name was rather alien to him. Looking back, it had already been over two years since.

As the time of the gathering had been extended, the classmates

decided to go visit Mount Tai. All expenses would be covered by Wang Zi Wen, Zhou Yi and the other more affluent classmates. To ordinary people this expense to travel would be considered opulent but it was nothing to the more affluent classmates.

Three days later, Ye Fan and the classmates had gathered at the foot of Mount Tai and he saw a familiar silhouette. Three years had gone by but Li Xiao Man was still tall and graceful and had not changed much.

Li Xiao man was 1.7 metres in height and was sporting a pair of sunglasses. Her black hair was flowing in the wind and she was standing there like a model. She was dressed simply, wearing a pair of shorts that exposed her smooth white legs and a printed tee that had a cartoon figure on it.

Li Xiao Man was undeniably beautiful, her skin was snow white, large eyes with long lashes giving off a very demure feel, coming off as confident but not arrogant.

She was very composed and naturally spoke to all the surrounding classmates, gradually becoming the centre of attention. She was somehow able to make anyhow speaking to her feel a sense of closeness.

Beside Li Xiao Man was a tall man who she introduced as her friend from America. Compared to the more gentle features of Asians, her friend had the sharper features of Westerners giving off a feeling of masculinity. His nose was sharp and his sapphire blue eyes and blonde curly hair definitely could be considered handsome among the Westerners.

“Hi guys, my name is Carter, I’ve always..... Looked forward..... to visiting Mount Tai.” Carter said in passable mandarin that could still be understood.

The other two students who had returned from overseas were also surrounded and being questioned on how it was living and studying overseas.

Having been separated for three years, Ye Fan felt that time had rewinded on seeing Li Xiao Man again.

Both people were very calm when they greeted each other, there were no emotions of joy of reunion after a long period of absence. There was only a sense of calm.

They did not speak much, but that short exchange and the words unspoken were enough to say what had happened between them.

# *Chapter 6: The Land Of Fengshan Sacrifice*

In the vastness of space, nine dragon corpses floated with a bronze coffin, the bronze coffin gave off a feeling of agelessness as though it were as old as space itself.

Many days had gone by but the people on Earth were still unable to decipher the mysterious signals. They were also unable to find a safe way to send it to Earth.

“It’s moving!”

“Differing from usual trajectory, it’s descending!”

At this moment the elites in the International Space station had their pupils constricted. The nine dragon corpses were actually descending.

Mount Tai was tall and magnificent, of the five mountains it was ranked as number one.

Since ancient times Mount Tai had always been a sacred symbol. Mount Tai was located in the most eastern part of the Central Plains, surrounded by the Yellow River and Wen Shui River , in ancient times it was regarded as the place where the sun gave birth to all living things.

Since the beginning the mountain had always been there huge and ancient.

Mount Tai had a very colourful history surrounding it, as it was there since the Three Kings and Five Emperor period and was viewed as the place nearest to heaven.

“The heavens are beyond our scope however if we practice the Fengshan sacrifice on Mount Tai we will be nearer to god.”

The Qin emperor who conquered China as well as the great Han Dynasty all came to Mount Tai to hold the Fengshan sacrifice.

Even before them there were 72 emperors who also went to Mount Tai to perform the Fengshan sacrifice.

In the Pre-Qin period classics it records: ”In the past, Huai Shi, Fu Xi ,Sheng Nong, Yellow Emperor, Yao and Yu conducted the Fengshan sacrifice on Mount Tai.”

[ T/N* Complicated ancient chinese text that mentions the ancient emperors who conducted the ritual]

Back in the ancient era, ancient emperors all chose to perform their Fengshan sacrifice on Mount Tai, this caused Mount Tai to be shrouded in an aura of mystery.

In the Spring and Autumn Period*, Kong Sheng also visited Mount Tai to look for traces of past Fengshan sacrifice however did not manage to find any clues.

[ T/N* A period of time during the Eastern Zhou reign over China ]

Only in future generations did someone manage to find some clues to Fengshan sacrifice.

20th Year Min Calendar, General Ma Hong Kui led his troops to take position on Mount Tai and inadvertently discovered a five coloured altar that contained two jade scrolls which were sealed with golden prayer beads and buried underground.

°

Why did the emperors of ancient Qin practice Fengshan sacrifice on Mount Tai, this is still a mystery even today.

……

After a night of rest at their hotel, Ye Fan and his classmates began their ascent of Mount Tai.

For most of the classmates it would be their first time climbing Mount Tai and only by personally climbing it could one feel the majesty and magnificence of the mountain.

Mount Tai's geological structure has three grand fracture layers. There are also places such as the Heaven Stairway platform, from north to south the mountain's foot to zenith was about ten kilometers long.

When looking at Mount Tai closely or from afar, one would still

feel the enormity of the mountain. This caused the classmates to be excited at the prospects of climbing it.

In front of the vast Mount Tai, people get the impression that they were like little ants and even the stars and moon in the sky seemed insignificant in comparison.

This was a kind of feeling that shocked one's soul.

Humans are always curious about mysteries as well as the unknown and when the tour guide mentioned the Fengshan sacrifices held on the summit, the classmates begun to contemplate.

Li Xiao Man and Carter walked side by side as she patiently explained all that was said about Mount Tai and its mysteries. Carter was very interested and continually asked questions.

Liu Yun Zhi was gloating as he looked at Li Xiao Man and Carter and then looked at Ye Fan, however, Ye Fan appeared to have noticed his expression but had no reaction and this left him feeling disappointed.

In actuality, Ye Fan had not noticed Liu Yun Zhi's expression and was thus calm.

Ye Fan had already finished reading and thought back to what was written about the emperors' of old performing their Fengshan sacrifice. He suddenly had a weird thought: if what was said in the

books were true then could there possibly be a vanished ancient civilization there? Mount Tai was always viewed as a sacred ground in that period.

Ye Fan immediately shook his head and felt that he must have been too bored recently to have come up with such a ridiculous idea.

Mount Tai had lush trees and flowing rivers that created a majestic scenery. This coupled with the layer of clouds that surrounded the place created an atmosphere of profoundness and mystery.

The route to the summit was filled with countless attractions which made one sigh in admiration.

From the foot of the mountain passing by the Dai Temple to the summit at the Jade Emperor Peak was a journey of ten kilometers that could be said to link one from the mortal realm to the heavenly realm.

It was evening and they had finally climbed to the peak of Mount Tai. Looking down at the scenery below and the long winding Yellow River allowed them to more clearly understand what Confucius meant when he said “Climbing Mount Tai makes the world seem small.”

Regarding Mount Tai, the great poets also left behind the masterpiece “On top of Mount Tai all other mountains are like hills!”

At this moment the sun was setting and the clouds were coated with a golden lustre, faintly glowing like jewels.

Everyone was fully immersed in the moving scene in front of them.

Suddenly a few black spots appeared in the sky which gradually grew larger and the sound of thunder could be heard.

Nine huge bodies were falling down from the sky and all the people on Mount Tai had rigid expressions as they looked at each other in shock.

There were actually nine dragon corpses pulling a bronze coffin heading straight for the peak of Mount Tai.

The mythical existence of dragons, similar to the existence of gods, something that circumvents the laws of nature. With the constant development of Science who would actually believe that dragons existed?*

[T/N* This may seem familiar as the author used the exact same words in an earlier chapter]

The tourists at the peak of Mount Tai were all breathless and there was only silence all around.

After that brief silence, Mount Tai became a buzz of activity. People started to run haphazardly in all directions seeking to run away from those dragon corpses.

This was such a shocking scene; under the faint glow from the setting sun nine dragon corpses and a bronze coffin were falling towards Mount Tai!

Frightened screams and helpless cries filled the night as everybody tried to escape.

The nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin fell at a slow pace but when it eventually crashed onto Mount Tai the mountain trembled.

“Boom!”

The impact of the nine huge bodies on Mount Tai caused the Jade Emperor’s Peak to immediately break and form multiple fractures with rock and mud flying everywhere.

The bronze coffin landed with a “Bang!” causing the entire mountain to shake as though an earthquake was occurring. Several rocks were rolling down the mountain and the sounds were like cavalry charging into the battlefield.

Several people were affected by the aftershocks and some were hit by the falling stones crying as they were pitifully thrown off the mountain.

The shaking had stopped and the mountain was in a state of deathly silence. Many people had fallen in their attempt to escape and there was chaos all around. Several people were bleeding from their heads as they ran frantically to the foot of the mountain.

Nine dragon corpses were on top of Mount Tai with a large portion of their bodies at the peak whilst a small portion of it was overhanging off the edges. This scene looked like black steel walls on top of Mount Tai and made people feel shocked.

The Jade Emperor Peak had been split asunder and there were many fissures on the ground.

The twenty metre simplistic bronze coffin with engravings on it was giving off a mysterious aura.

# Chapter 7: Five Coloured Earthen Altar

Everything had happened so suddenly and the image in front of their eyes was an impossibility!

“This……” Everybody was filled with disbelief.

Nine dragon corpses and the bronze coffin were in front of their eyes and they had no way to refute this fact.

This was something that went against common sense and everybody’s thoughts about what was real were challenged.

When the bodies crashed onto Mount Tai, Ye Fan and his group did not run away haphazardly but stuck together till the Jade Emperor Peak was peaceful again, nobody had suffered any major injuries except for some minor scratches.

At this moment their faces had shock written all over it; this scene would remain in their minds for the rest of their lives.

The Nine dragon corpses laid peacefully together with the bronze coffin. This seemingly peaceful scene was too mysterious and shocking.

Everybody was speechless and their hearts were racing. Each person was experiencing various emotions ranging from fear to shock.

After a long period of time, Lin Jia softly spoke out: “Let’s hurry and head down the mountain.”

Everyone nodded and felt that leaving immediately was the right choice. Nobody was willing to continue staying there as everybody was questioning where did the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin come from? Why did they land on Mount Tai? Even though the reality was in their faces everybody was still filled with disbelief and unease.

Under the blood red glow of the setting sun, the Jade Emperor Peak was devastated. This was especially so for where the bronze coffin landed; the area had a huge crater and the surroundings had large fissures measuring one to two metres in width that spread out like a spider web in all directions.

One of the fissures was like a winding centipede that extended to the feet of Ye Fan and his group however it was only a palm sized gap due to the distance from the epicenter of the fall.

Just when everybody was prepared to leave, Li Xiao Man pointed in front and said: “What is that?”

The ground that had split apart showed half a piece of a jade tablet that was reflecting sunlight.

Everybody was fearful but still slowly walked forward and looked. In the metre wide fissure there was actually an altar that had half broken pieces of jade on top that looked like jade books.

“How can this be, is it possible that something is actually buried underneath?”

That circular altar was not big, it was ancient looking yet simple, made from five different colours of special dirt filled with ancientness that made one unable to guess how long it had existed.

“Look over there, there’s more!” Wang Zi Wen who was standing at the forefront said and pointed towards the areas with even larger fissures.

In the fissure that extended almost two metres also sat a five coloured earthen altar. It had already been sundered apart and a jade tablet that was inside had fallen out. The jade tablet had many weird words and symbols on it that nobody could recognise.

At this moment everybody showed expressions of shock; this could well be the ancient altar of heaven of old that the emperors used to perform Fengshan sacrifice.

In the five coloured circular altar lies a jade script, it resembles the script which was compiled by Ban Gu during the Eastern Han Dynasty. It states “Gold clay with Silver ropes, roped glowing stones that are sealed in the ground”. While Grand historian Sima Qian’s Shiji also mentions “ as the hero ascends, the gold clay stones records.

[T/N* Both articles refer to the process of Fengshan sacrifices regarding the worship of instruments/objects, have no idea what it means, if anyone has any inkling, do write in the comments]

In a short while, the classmates discovered that the surrounding fissures also had similar five coloured earthen altars and there were more than ten of them!

Every five coloured earthen altar looked as though they had seen countless years and each had either jade pieces or jade tablets that were carved with the mysterious symbols and words.

Everyone had a similar thought: “could the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin be related to these altars?”

Ye Fan loved reading the “Strange” genre from old texts and knew more about Fengshan sacrifice than all the others combined. He was stupefied at the moment; could it be that the Fengshan sacrifice done during the Three Kings and Five Emperor period and seventy two emperors had taken place here?

Maybe the legends were real otherwise how could there be so many five coloured earthen altars. From the words on the jade pieces a large majority were from the Oracle Bone Script* which coincided with the theory.

[ T/N* Oracle bone script is the set of ancient chinese characters found in Bronze Age China ]

Everyone should have immediately run away but they did not. Although fearful of the nine dragon corpses, being shocked at the 20 metre long bronze coffin and surprised at the many five coloured earthen altars, curiosity got the better of them and they

had already walked around the bronze coffin.

“Seems like there isn’t much danger, however these dragon corpses……”

After everyone completed their circle around the area, the fear in their hearts had gradually subsided however they still felt relatively uneasy and decided to head down the mountain.

“Look, the fissure in the centre has a huge altar!”

The bronze coffin had made a giant crater in the ground and now that they were on the other side what they saw shocked them.

In the deep fissure there was a magnificent altar, not made of mud but five different kinds of different coloured boulders. The 20 metre coffin lay on it and the altar was in no way damaged.

This monstrously large five colour stone altar was clearly different from the normal earthen altars. It’s position was also in the centre of the Jade Emperor Peak.

The bronze coffin that fell from the sky had such a tremendous impact however there was not even a scratch on the stone altar making it hard to imagine what sort of rock was used to create it.

Besides the bronze coffin which was on top of the monstrously huge altar, there were also many jade and stone tablets that looked very old.

Be it the jade or the stone tablets, they all had mysterious hieroglyphics and symbols on them that were far more refined than those found from the other altars.

It was surprising that the jade and stone tablets were still lined up orderly on the large altar even though the bronze coffin had landed with such a tremendous force.

“Let’s hurry and leave this place.” Ye Fan and Zhou Yi said at the same instant urging their classmates.

Everyone nodded, as the current situation seemed unsafe and although there were mysteries abound, it was certainly not up to them to check. The nine dragon corpses were unsettling and the bronze coffin made their hearts tremble.

Just as everyone turned to leave, a female classmate let out a scream as a piece of rock she was standing on gave way making her fall towards the centre fissure.

“Careful!” A male classmate had reacted quickly and managed to grab her in time while the classmates by the side also reacted and helped pull her to safety.

The piece of rock was making rumbling noises as it fell towards the crater before crashing into the large altar with a “Bang!”.

The large altar let out a hazy five coloured glow and everyone

suddenly felt an immense force acting on their bodies, making them completely unable to move their feet.

“Bang!”

The large altar started to tremble violently causing the entire Jade Emperor Peak to tremble as well. The people standing by the sides of the crater lost their balance but were unable to move and started to tumble towards the giant crater.

Fear gripped their hearts as everyone landed onto the large altar!

# Chapter 8: Ancient Route Among The Stars

Everyone had fallen on top of the large altar and a stack of jade and stone tablets were knocked down causing the scene to be a mess.

The ancient bronze coffin was lying by the side and although it was covered mostly with rust, it was still possible to see the bronze engravings depicting the pictures of ancient gods.

Being this close made everyone fill with anxiety, their backs were soaked with cold sweat.

This five coloured stone altar that had seen countless ages was created by their ancient ancestors for performing the Fengshan sacrifice, could it be that the emperors of old were really able to summon stuff with it?

At this moment everyone was experiencing a flood of emotions as they felt the atmosphere circulate a desolate and old energy.

The nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin that were lying in front of them, could it be that the five coloured stone altar had attracted them?

According to legend, before the period of the Qin emperor and the Han dynasty, during the period of the Three Kings and Five Emperor and Seventy Two Emperors all performed the Fengshan sacrifice here. What did they manage to attract?

The five colours were glowing and the jade and stone tablets on the large altar became transparent as the engravings on them started to glow, filling the entire area with a soft layer of light.

“Crack…Crack…”

Sounds of cracking resounded, the stacks of jade and stone tablets started to break apart, rays of light were emitted; the ancient characters that were on the tablets seemed to suddenly come alive as they all floated in the sky.

“Shmm! Shmm! Shmm!”

The ancient words gradually filled the air until finally all the jade and stone tablets disintegrated. All the ancient characters floated in the sky, emitting a faint golden glow.

Above the bronze coffin and crater were thousands of ancient characters that looked as though they had been cast from iron, giving off a metallic sheen.

“Crack…Crack…”

The sounds of cracking once again filled the air and ancient characters also started to glow and float out from the smaller altars.

The surroundings of the bronze coffin were littered with glowing lights like stars glittering in the sky. Coupled with the setting sun this was a very moving scene.

There were other people on the Jade Emperor Peak however on seeing Ye Fan and his group fall into the giant crater and seeing the mysterious glowing lights they were filled with fear and ran down the mountain.

In the midst of the mayhem people were falling down and cries of pain and helplessness filled the air.

While this was happening, the ancient characters in the air started to merge together forming a large figure of the eight trigrams that emitted a mysterious aura.

The scene in front of them was mesmerizing, the ancient characters had merged to form the picture of the eight trigrams and floated above the area, giving off a feeling of refined gold that had been smelted many times.

“I want to leave this place!” Someone in the giant crater shouted tearfully.

“I can’t move my body……” Though their hearts were filled with fear and trepidation, they were unable to do anything.

“That is……”

At this moment in the centre of the picture of the eight trigrams emerged a Tai Chi symbol depicting the Yin and the Yang.

Although it was the era of science and modern technology, the old picture of the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams had many mysteries surrounding it. Somebody once studied the relations between the stars and the eight trigrams and using astronomical calculations managed to discover the orbital velocity of the stars. The person who created the binary computer also did so after studying the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams and after a moment of inspiration managed to create the computer.

The ancient Tai Chi Eight Trigrams has always been a mystery even for the modern man. Exactly who created it and for what purpose? Even now there are rumours abound however nothing conclusive has been found.

At this moment Ye Fan and his classmates witnessed a usage of the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams that no one knew about: It could affect Time and Space.

At the area around the large Tai Chi Eight trigrams, space started to distort and blurry lights started to form the words, Qian, Dui, Li, Zhen, Xun, Kan, Gen and Kun. The corresponding symbols began to emit light mysteriously while exuding an aura of an ancient code.

[T/N* The 8 words have various meanings, such as the elements, directions etc.]

In the centre of the Tai Chi symbol the Yin and Yang fishes were like two doors as they continually trembled slowly opening a gap to an unknown plane.

The eight symbols on the eight trigrams were continually flashing in an intricate pattern before finally glowing in unison, emitting a bright radiance.

“Boom!”

With the sombre sound of quaking, the Yin Yang fishes in the middle of the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams began to open. During this process, there were stars radiating light and even depicted an ancient path of starry skies.

In the end, the Yin Yang fishes were like gatekeepers that opened a doorway. revealing a mystical huge portal, no one knows where it may lead to as it appeared to be pitch black inside.

At this moment, on the peak of Mount Tai, the Nine Enormous Dragon corpses started to shuddered while the copper coffin produced a deafening “Klang!” and shook intensely.

Ye Fan and his classmates were in close proximity with the coffin and many people started to scream and shout to the extent that some girls even started to cry hysterically.

“What should we do?”

“Somebody save us……”

In the circumstances that they were stuck in, everyone felt helpless and the sounds of the girls crying hysterically worsened the atmosphere.

Some people who were mentally stronger stared in alarm at the giant bronze coffin. The lid of the coffin had moved from it’s initial position and from the crack a strange aura was emitted.

“Klang!”

As the copper coffin shook again, the lid fell off and a bizarre invisible force started to beckon people over. In the next moment, everybody felt dizzy and groggy. Darkness was all around them as they realised that they had already entered into the bronze coffin.

“Aaahh…”

“Save me!”

Several people started to break down, the cries of terror filled the night.

“Bang!”

The lid of the coffin abruptly shut and the nine dragon corpses that were overhanging started to tremble.

Soon after, the nine dragon corpses started to rise into the air. Although there was no presence of life on them, they continued to pull the bronze coffin slowly towards the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams going through the mystical portal into the unknown.

“Boom!”

The entire Mount Tai shook vigorously as if the sky was about to plummet. The Jade Emperor Peak emanated a five coloured celestial light that bridged the heavens and the earth.

Thereafter, the sun had finally set and Mount Tai was shrouded in darkness. The portal in the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams had completely shut and it slowly disappeared.

The nine dragons and bronze coffin had disappeared!

The jade and stone tablets on the large altar had all turned to dust and as a breeze blew by the dust scattered with the wind.

The events that had transpired on Mount Tai was sure to create a storm of activity that would further increase Mount Tai’s notoriety but all this no longer concerned Ye Fan and his schoolmates.

It was icy cold within the confines of the pitch black bronze coffin, several female students were filled with helplessness and fear but they were too afraid to bawl loudly and suppressed their voices leaving only little sobbing noises in the background.

“What should we do? Who will save us?”

“Are we really within the bronze coffin?”

“How can this be? Isn’t there any way to get out of here?”

There were people constantly dialing their mobile phones but there was no connection and no way to communicate with the outside word, this served to only raise their fears.

“Everybody let’s stay calm, even though we are currently unable to contact the outside world with such a huge event occurring on Mount Tai it will be in no time at all before the rescue workers arrive.” Zhou Yi said convincingly. His confident words made the flustered hearts of the students calm down.

“Zhou Yi is correct, everyone do not panic, we need to remain calm, I believe everything will be alright.” Wang Zi Wen’s calm voice further mellowed the emotions of the classmates.

“That is correct, everyone do not fret, since this situation has already come to pass it would be useless for us to worry needlessly. Let’s work together to think of a way out of this precarious situation.” Lin Jia was a person with a staunch personality and was not flustered like the other girls.

Ye Fan sat quietly without speaking as the image of the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams constituting of darkness and the mystical portal materialized in front of his eyes. Are we still on Jade Emperor

Peak? Ye Fan's heart contained an ominous feeling.

Expressions of fear could be seen from the faint light emitted from the cellphones and many people's faces were pale and some were even shivering.

Li Xiao Man was seated with her hands hugging her knees and although her face was rather pale she was relatively poised. At her side was Carter and they were conversing in low tones using English.

Li Yun Zhi was firmly grasping his hands to the extent that his nails were white; it was evident that he was extremely nervous however he maintained a collection expression.

It could be seen that the people were still restless even with the words spoken earlier as they were still stuck within the bronze coffin.

"Did everybody fall into the copper coffin? Let's do a headcount for confirmation"

"1,2,3……28,29,30!" When the number 30 was called and no one else spoke, the person in charge of the head count trembled and said: "How can this be…… 30 people?!"

During this Mount Tai trip, three classmates managed to come but five other students were held up, in total twenty eight people should be here. After adding Li Xiao Man's American classmate

Carter, there should only be twenty nine.

At this moment how could there be thirty people? In the cold and dark coffin everyone felt their goosebumps stand on end and their backs were drenched with cold sweat.

# *Chapter 9: The Thirtieth Person Within The Bronze Coffin*

“How could there be…… One additional person!”

“Who…… Who is it?”

The voice of the person who raised the question in everyone’s hearts was trembling.

Everyone switched their phones to maximum brightness as they used the light to scrutinise the people beside them. Everyone was worried they would see someone they did not recognise.

People began to gather together with the people they were familiar with and threw furtive glances all around them.

Everyone finally realised that there was indeed one additional person in the corner of the coffin.

“You…… Who are you?”

“Are you a human or are you a ghost?”

Being trapped in the mysterious bronze coffin anything could happen and the people were growing restless knowing that an unfamiliar person was with them.

A heavy cough came from the dark corner and the black figure said in a low and hoarse voice: “Ghost……Ghost……”

The hoarse voice reverberated within the bronze coffin. At this moment everyone felt their goose bumps once again stand up and the atmosphere seemed much colder.

Everyone felt as though they had been submerged in ice, a few female students started screaming and crying and some even fell limply to the ground.

“”Ghost……Place……”* The voice was very weak and it could be felt that the black figure was very tired as he tried to stand up.

[T/N* The author uses a play on words when the chinese words for ghost and place are combined together they carry the meaning of ‘Damned Place’]

“This really is a…… damned place, are we really in the bronze coffin?” The black figure in the corner slowly got up and spoke in a confused tone. His voice was gradually gaining strength.

Seeing that the tall black figure in the corner had stood up many people inadvertently started to back away.

The black figure moved towards them while saying: “It’s me, Pang Bo.”

“Stop right there! Don’t move!” Everyone had their handphones facing the front, using the dim lighting to get a clearer picture.

Ye Fan broke off from the group and gingerly walked forward saying: “Are you really Pang Bo?”

“Can’t even recognise me from my voice?” The dim lighting from a phone illuminated a familiar silhouette. Pang Bo had big eyes, thick bushy brows and was well built.

Pang Bo was one of Ye Fan’s best friends in university and was actually unable to attend the gathering due to some personal matters. Now that he had suddenly appeared anyone would have been left suspicious .

“I don’t believe you, Pang Bo never came to the gathering, who are you?” Someone in the back of the group chimed.

Someone who wasn’t supposed to be around was now standing together with them in the bronze coffin, this made a few people feel their scalps tingle.

“Naturally I’m Pang Bo, does anyone have water? I’m so thirsty right now.” The black figure continued to advance towards them.

“Stop right there!” Everyone still found it hard to believe.

Pang Bo could only stop and start to speak about events that had happened in university to prove his identity.

“I believe that he is Pang Bo.” Ye Fan said in a firm voice and walked briskly towards Pang Bo’s side, the two people had not met in a long time and under the current circumstances, they gave each other a bear hug.

“Initially because of some family matters I was unable to make it for the gathering however I heard that you guys were heading to Mount Tai and since I had already settled my family matters I decided to rush over……”

Pang Bo took a water bottle from Ye Fan and “Gulp, Gulp, Gulp” drank many big mouthfuls before continuing with his story on how he entered the bronze coffin as well.

Everyone had already started climbing by the time he reached and he had decided to take a cable car to the top.

He was considered relatively lucky, when the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin had crashed into Mount Tai he had just reached the Jade Emperor Peak. He did not follow the crowd and run down the mountain but rather hugged a large tree until the tremors stopped and was not hurt.

Thereafter he saw from afar that Ye Fan and the other classmates were falling into the giant crater and rushed over. That was when he saw the ancient characters floating in the air and suddenly felt immobile. The bronze coffin then started to tremble and he was brought inside together with the rest of them.

Pang Bo was not on the large altar when he was brought into the bronze coffin and had fainted upon being transported in.

Only after a series of explanations did the students eventually believe him and start to calm down again.

“We must find a way to save ourselves, it is impossible to remain completely calm within this coffin and i’ve got a bad feeling……” Li Xiao Man said palely, her beautiful visage looking towards the dark areas of the bronze coffin. Compared to the other female students, Li Xiao Man and Lin Jia had fared much better.

Hearing this, several people felt a chill up their spines.

“Guys let’s stick together and not split up.” Zhou Yi said constructively.

Everyone huddled together and used the dim light from their phones to move together while analysing the situation. Sticking to one side of the coffin and moving they saw that the bronze engravings could be seen inside as well; there was a picture of a nine headed phoenix as well as a giant ferocious beast whose body was covered with long hard bristles roaring at the sky.

A rusty and oxidized bronze sculpture resembled a ferocious and primitive beast from the wilderness. It exuded a gluttonous aura seemingly able to devour everything, it’s figure was big and it’s face was savage looking. The sculpture was extremely lifelike and made one feel fear.

Following the inner wall of the bronze coffin, people saw that there were also people engraved, these people looked like ancient ancestors or even ancient gods. Thereafter the group discovered a bizarre picture that was dotted with stars seemingly depicting the universe.

The bronze coffin was 20 metres in length and 8 metres in width and the group had only explored one corner of the coffin. They did not continue exploring as people felt that there was something else within the coffin.

All the handphones were raised and as the group slowly progressed forward they could make out a rectangular shaped object in the centre of the bronze coffin.

When it was obvious that the object was neither a corpse nor a living thing, the group approached slowly after calming down.

“A coffin within a coffin! There’s actually another bronze coffin here!” Upon seeing the object clearly several people gasped.

In the very centre was another bronze coffin that was about 4 metres in length and 2 metres in width, ancient yet simplistic in design with engravings on it that seemed to be extremely weathered with time. It was daunting to imagine what could be in that coffin.

“It isn’t a coffin within a coffin, this is the real coffin that holds the corpse. The outer bronze coffin is just the outer layer and together with the inner one they are a set. The outer coffin could

be seen as a decorative piece to cover the inner coffin.” Pang bo said to the few who did not understand what they were seeing.

Hearing that there could actually be a real corpse within the inner coffin,”shuffle shuffle shuffle” several people backtracked as their hearts were filled with trepidation.

What sort of person could be put away into such a mysterious coffin? Everyone was filled with fear and alarm.

In the past they had known that set coffins were usually done for tombs of pharaohs or emperors of old but those seemed insignificant when compared to the bronze coffins.

Who had ever seen a 20 metre bronze coffin set? Who had ever witnessed a giant coffin falling from the sky? Who had ever seen nine dragons pulling a coffin? This led people to wonder what sort of personage was buried within and if it was only one person.

# Chapter 10: The Broad And Vast Land

The people within the dark confines of the outer bronze coffin were filled with fear as they looked at the smaller bronze coffin.

The smaller bronze coffin was also dotted with rust and one wondered who or what was kept within?

“All this should be related to the five coloured stone altar on Mount Tai.”

After a long time people started to converse softly among themselves wondering why did these events transpire.

“It should have something to do with the five coloured ancient altars and the altars somehow attracted the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin.”

All that had happened thus far was too unreal that everyone was left pondering. The five coloured altars that were constructed by their ancestors were so mysterious. Ye Fan was also pondering: “Could there be more secrets from the ancient era that are still hidden?”

Everyone started to calm down and analyse the situation in front of them as there was no immediate danger apparent.

“Perhaps, the nine dragons and bronze coffin were summoned by our ancient ancestors.” When these words were said, someone

immediately refuted: “Our ancestors have long passed away, how could it be?”

“What I mean to say is the nine dragons and bronze coffin were summoned by our ancestors but were late and only appeared now.”

When the female student said her piece, everyone fell into contemplation. A summoning by their ancient ancestors that led to a late arrival of over thousands of years, this was unbelievable!

“What the truth is we will never know, we can only guess as the possibilities are endless.”

“It’s true, it could be related to our ancient ancestors but at the same time it could also have come on it’s own.”

“Have you guys seen the engravings on the bronze coffin? There is a depiction of our ancestors of old as well as ancient gods and many of the characters are carved with tears making one feel their desolation and sorrow as though the engravings are trying to tell as a story of old.”

“Perhaps it’s true, nine dragons pulling a bronze coffin breaking through the natural boundaries and returning to Earth! A bloody and tear stained past……”

Could it be that the ancient ancestors had some special methods to explore places that were far away and unknown? Nine dragon corpses and a bronze coffin, alive when they first left and only

returning back as wrapped corpses.

In the midst of the conversations everyone's fears gradually subsided as they discussed about the different possibilities. Nobody was willing to step near the smaller bronze coffin to open it.

"I think the rescue workers should already be climbing Mount Tai and will be arriving in no time at all."

"Hopefully there are no other accidents and we will be safely rescued."

Nobody had a way to leave the larger bronze coffin, it was eight to nine metres in height and was sealed tightly with a lid making it nigh impossible to escape.

As everyone was looking forward to getting rescued, the larger bronze coffin started to tremble violently causing many people to fall onto the floor.

"What's going on? What's happening?" Everyone was filled with uncertainty. Some female students started to cry again hugging the people by their sides.

"Have the rescue workers arrived? Are they trying to free us?"

In the midst of their worries and fears the larger bronze coffin trembled more violently causing everyone to fall to the ground putting them in close contact with the cold bronze coffin.

“Bang!”

Another intense tremor ran through the coffin; it felt as though they were in a plane currently encountering turbulence as it continually trembled.

“Boom!”

There was a final violent collision that sounded like thunder that could disintegrate everything. It was obvious that the large bronze coffin had a large collision with something.

At this moment, within the pitch black bronze coffin, the engravings within started to give off a faint hue and dissipated any forces from the impact.

Everyone was shocked; one minute they felt as though the sky was going to fall and the next moment, everything was peaceful.

“It can’t be, there was such a strong force from the impact previously, how could it be peaceful so suddenly?”

“We aren’t delusional, the bronze coffin had definitely made a large collision with something and had turned over a few times however we are unaffected.”

At this moment the group realised that the small bronze coffin

was on the ceiling and it was stuck there without any indication of falling.

"The larger bronze coffin has already fallen upside down and the smaller bronze coffin must have been firmly cast to the bottom of the large coffin. This is why it seems as though the smaller bronze coffin is on the ceiling because we are actually upside down."

It could be imagined how terrifying the force would have been if not for the engravings on the bronze coffin that negated any forces. This was simply inconceivable.

"Light, there's light coming in from the outside!" Li Xiao Man exclaimed.

Everyone turned their heads to the direction that Li Xiao Man was looking at and faint rays of light could be seen shining in.

"Now that the larger bronze coffin has been overturned, the coffin lid is at a slant revealing a small opening, we have finally escaped danger!"

The opening left by the slanted coffin lid was big enough for two people to walk out however it was dark outside and the light streaming in was minimal.

Everyone started to cheer and rush towards the opening, nobody was willing to stay a second longer in this pitch black and scary environment.

As people rushed out of the bronze coffin they became rigid like statues.

The ground seemed to have been dyed in a blood red, reddish brown colour that looked cold and desolate. As far as the eye could see it was empty and desolate with huge rocks scattered over the ground looking like large tombstones. It seemed like an evening shrouded in black fog with a deathly aura coupled with dim lighting.

Everyone stood transfixed, this place was definitely not the summit of Mount Tai!

An endless red-brown earth that seemed to be void of life, this was a place that none of them had ever encountered.

Nobody had ever seen or heard of this place before, this was a totally unfamiliar and mysterious place!

“This is..... Where is this? Have we already left Mount Tai?” Someone spoke while trembling.

“Have the rescue workers placed us in an area without humans for fear that the nine dragon corpses could cause us harm?” The person who said these words doubtfully had trouble believing himself.

Everybody had a feeling of unease that something terribly bad

had happened to them. At this instant many people started to take out their handphones to try to make calls but there was no signal.

“If this isn’t Mount Tai then where are we?” Many people had panicked expressions. There was no longer any joy from leaving the confines of the coffin and only fear remained.

From being trapped in the bronze coffin till finally escaping took no longer than fifteen minutes however the scenery in front of their eyes had totally changed. The towering and imposing Mount Tai was no longer there and all that was left in front of them was a gentle undulating terrain of rocks and barren desert.

Ye Fan silently looked at the surrounding area and felt that the unease he felt earlier had actually became a reality. He had a bad feeling since the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams appeared in the sky and formed the portal leading to the unknown. Although they were within the coffin and did not see the nine dragon corpses pulling the bronze coffin into the portal, the scene in front of their eyes made it clear that this was no longer Mount Tai or any place on Earth.

# *Chapter 11: The Source Of Light*

“Where are we? I miss home……” Some female students could not control themselves and started crying.

“Another five coloured altar……” Pang Bo and Ye fan stood looking at each other shaking their heads. They had been best friends since university and often met after graduation and understood each other well. They both understood that the situation looked grim and everyone was in peril and the future was filled with unknown variables.

At this moment the others retreated their gaze from the horizon and started to look at their surroundings in panic.

The large bronze coffin was behind them and it was situated on top of another five coloured stone altar. This altar was very similar to the one on Mount Tai and was also composed of five different coloured rocks.

The five coloured stone altar took up a huge plot of land and it could be imagined the magnitude of construction when it took place. With the passing of time the monstrously large altar that should have been standing high above the ground was actually covered with red-brown gravel such that it was flush with the ground.

The nine dragons and bronze coffin had crashed heavily into the ground dislodging the surrounding surrounding gravel and revealing the outline of the altar. All nine dragons and the bronze

coffin were on top of the altar and one could only imagine how the size of the altar.

"We are..... lost, there's no way to go back." A frail looking female student cried out, her body swayed and if no one was there to support her she would have fallen to the ground.

Several people were ghastly pale and everyone was thinking of all the possibilities to refute that they were in another strange and alien world. Although no one was willing to accept it, Mount Tai was gone and the empty desert in front of their eyes made them sink into silence.

"Let's not panic or fear, there must be a way to get out of this situation." Ye Fan loudly shouted.

"How are we going to solve this problem? How are we going to go back? How are we going to leave this strange and alien world?" The one's who voiced these questions were males and their voices were trembling as well. It could be seen that they were filled with intense emotions of fear and uneasiness.

When faced with the unknown, some people would feel reverence and fear towards it while others would have the desire to explore it.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo walked away from the dragon corpses and proceeded onward to to get a feel of their surroundings.

Not far away, Li Xiao Man stood hugging herself seemingly quite cold. Her face was a pasty white but she seemed rather calm, like

an elegant lotus blooming in the twilight. As Ye Fan walked by he took off his shirt and handed it over to Li Xiao Man but she shook her head while saying her thanks.

Ye Fan was not trying to salvage their relationship and only felt concern. He did not persuade any further and wore his shirt before venturing forward with Pang Bo. Bypassing the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin, they saw Carter also surveying the nearby area, occasionally gasps of “God……” could be heard.

There was a large rock sitting not far from the altar, it was approximately 20 metres in height and could be easily scaled as the slope was gentle.

Ye Fan was about 1.79 metres and although he looked gentle on the outside, his body was actually very robust. Back in university he was one of the main players for the soccer team and was known as the barbarian of the soccer field.

Just like his name, Pang Bo had a “bulky”* physique but he was not fat, in fact he was a hulking meathead whose neck was the size of a man’s thigh.

[T/N* a pun on Pang Bo’s name]

The two people had very athletic physiques and quickly ran up the large rock without bothering to climb safely. Standing atop the huge rock and looking off into the distance, it was surprising to them that they could see faint flashing lights in the distant darkness.

“Most of us will not be able to make it back.” regarding his best friend Pang Bo, there was nothing that could not be said, Ye fan continued by sharing his speculations: “This place is definitely not the same piece of time and space as where we came from.”

“This place certainly isn’t the same time and space as that on Earth.” Pang bo said seriously. Although Pang Bo often joked around, when it came to serious matters he was all business and as he looked at the lights far away he frowned and said: “Do you think there are really gods in this world?”

Ye Fan also glanced up at the distant flashing lights and said: “We’ve already seen dragon corpses, even if I were to see a living god in front of our eyes I would not be surprised.”

“A living and breathing god appearing in front of our eyes..... I wonder what sort of scene that would be.” Pang Bo said in a low voice.

There was a noise from behind them, Carter who was 1.90 metres in height had also climbed up the giant rock. Carter gasped as he saw the distant flashing lights.

“All praise be unto the merciful lord, I see the light!” Carter said with broken chinese then turned around and waved towards Li Xiao Man and the group shouting: “ I see it! I see the light!” Thereafter he leapt off the rock and ran towards Li Xiao Man.

Carter’s shouts created chaos in the group and a number of

people came running over to take a look.

Pang Bo looked at the not too distant Li Xiao Man and Carter while saying to Ye Fan: “Is that American Li Xiao Man’s boyfriend?”

“How would I know?”

“Are you really just going to give up like this?” Pang Bo glanced at Ye Fan.

“There are some things in life that you can go back to but it will never be the same as before. Although it people may meet at two different points in their lives the feeling would never be the same as that initial meeting. All things that have happened are in the past and as humans we can only progress forwards.” Ye Fan shook his head as he seemed to think of something amusing and said: “It would be better to be you Pang Bo, handsome and suave leading such a frivolous nightlife.”

“I really despise you, how can my life be compared to yours?” Pang Bo looked at Ye fan then looked at the not too distant Li Xiao Man and said: “With a man’s intuition I feel that you and Li Xiao Man will start something again.”

“Don’t spoil my reputation.” Ye Fan laughed and said: “You have the same sixth sense as women?”

At this instant the two of them seemed to be the only ones still able to laugh, they were optimistic people and would seldom be seen with a frown.

Not long after, several people also climbed up the huge rock. Gazing into the distance, faint lights could be seen like fireflies flickering the in distant darkness. That light was not bright but it had ignited the hopes of the group and many female students started to cheer.

Although it was unknown what was ahead, the lights in front made them want to advance. This may be a human's natural instinct, fear of darkness and always heading towards the light.

"Please don't let us be disappointed."

"Please let there be a miracle."

Everyone started to climb down the huge rock and gathered at the large altar to discuss their next course of action.

"Everything here is alien to us, although there is a light ahead, I feel we should be cautious in our advancement." Wang Zi Wen quickly suggested as he was a prudent person.

Zhou Yi who was steadfast throughout also nodded and said: "That's right, we should select a few people to explore the road ahead. The lights ahead don't seem to be that far and it would be safer this way."

The others voiced their agreements as well. Nobody could predict what would happen in the alien environment ahead and it was

better to be careful.

“Bang!”

Suddenly, a trembling sound could be heard and the bronze coffin on top of the large altar let out a metallic ringing sound.

“What happened?”

“I seem to hear noises coming from within the coffin.” A female student who was nearest to the bronze coffin said palely.

Hearing this, everyone’s faces drained of colour, within the large coffin there was only a small bronze coffin that was possibly storing a corpse.

# Chapter 12: Shimmering Planet

“Don’t talk nonsense, previously when the large bronze coffin fell over, the bronze coffin within was not in a stable position and must have shifted causing the noises.” Lin Jia said calmly pacifying the group’s emotions.

The nine dragon corpses were 100 metres in length, their scales were awe-inspiring and seemed to shimmer. Lying beside was the bronze coffin which was 20 metres in length lying on top of the large five coloured stone altar giving people strong feelings of unease.

“I think we should go together to explore the lights flashing in front.”

“I also feel that we should move together as a group.”

Several people also voiced similar opinions and it was clear that people were fearful of continuing to stay near the dragons and bronze coffin. Finally, it was decided that everyone would go together towards the light source.

This piece of land was mainly composed of reddish-brown soil and gravel, a barren land that was sporadically dotted with huge rocks.

Walking by the large rock that was used as a viewing platform, Liu Yun Zhi exclaimed: “This large piece of rock has writings on it!”

Looking at the side of the large rock facing the light source, it was clear that two huge ancient words were engraved on the rock. Each word was 5 – 6 metres tall, strong skillful stroke, majestic and filled with vigor and strength like two angry dragons spiraling together to form the word.

The two words were several times more complicated than modern words and it was unknown how many countless years the words had been engraved there. Everyone gathered before the large rock looking at the two ancient words frowning as they tried to make some headway as to what the words meant.

“This seems to be a bronze object with inscriptions, the first word appears to be ‘Ying’ ”. Zhou Yi was able identify the first word, with raised eyebrows he uttered softly: “What sort of place have we been transported to……”

“This is indeed a bronze inscription and the two words spell the word ‘Ying Huo’*.” Ye Fan explained as he recognised the words. Ye Fan looked calm on the outside but the meaning of the two words made his heart tremble.

[T/N* Ying Huo is the short form of “Shimmering Planet”, the ancient chinese name for Mars]

Ying Huo, how can it be Ying Huo? He could not believe what he was seeing and looked towards the sky but the although it was very dark the few stars could be seen.

“Ying Huo, what does that even mean?”

“Ying Huo, is that a place?”

Many people did not comprehend what the two words meant.

When Zhou Yi heard the two words “Ying Huo”, his heart was trembling just like Ye Fan, his face visibly paled as he said: “The luminous flame burns, leaving chaos in its wake. We really..... have no way to go back anymore.”

“What do you mean? Where is this place?” Everyone was feeling alarmed.

When Wang Zi Wen heard the two words Ying Huo, he understood the meaning and explained to the group: “I’m afraid that we are no longer on earth. Dazzling like fire, the people of old coined the term Ying Huo which was a premonition for bad things to come. Ying Huo was how the people of ancient times referred to Mars.

Eons ago, the people of old had long noticed the crimson colour of Mars. The brightness changed unceasingly and glowed like fire. It moved constantly in the sky, sometimes in the East and occasionally in the West. This inexplicable phenomenon puzzled the people of ancient times which led to “The luminous flame burns, leaving chaos in its wake” and hence the name “Ying Huo”*.

[T/N* Ying Huo is a combination of the words from phrase above.]

The emperors of old believed that when Mars appeared it was always an ominous sign and a prime minister would be dismissed or the emperor would die every time it appeared. The modern man dismissed these tales as simply superstitious beliefs.

“Oh my god!” Carter said after finally understanding what was said regarding Ying Huo and it’s meaning. He started to grab at the reddish brown soil and hit the surrounding rocks, constantly inspecting the substance of the land and shouting weird noises at the same time.

“How can this be possible?” Many people were dumbfounded and were unable to face the reality in front of their eyes.

“This piece of reddish-brown land below our feet is actually Mars?! We are no longer on Earth?!” Everyone was left in a daze, this simply did not make any sense.

Half an hour ago they were still on the summit of Mount Tai, half an hour later they were on Mars, this was simply preposterous!

Lin Jia was slender and charming, her pretty face was slightly pale as she looked at the group and said: “We’ve only just seen the engravings on the huge rock, this doesn’t confirm that we are really on Mars.”

“But it’s been said that on the dry surface of Mars the ground is littered with red soil and rock, and the environment around us is precisely that. Isn’t that so?” A female student tearfully said.

Mankind had sent space probes to explore Mars since the 1960s and in 1997 “Mars Pathfinder” managed to make a successful landing on the Martian surface.

After several tens of years of exploration, Mars was no longer a complete mystery and humans had obtained many valuable information on it.

“Martian soil contains large amounts of iron minerals and having been exposed to ultraviolet rays over a long period of time the whole of Mars is a rust covered world. This is exactly the scene in front of us. Could it be that we have really left Earth and are actually standing on another planet?!” A male student said while clenching his fists till his nails turned green.

“If we’re really standing on Mars, it wouldn’t be possible for us to live. There isn’t enough oxygen and the temperature would be sweltering…….” Although Li Xiao Man’s face was pale but her words lifted the hopes of several people.

Throughout this entire process Ye Fan, Pang Bo and a few others were calm. They believed that they were no longer on Earth and what could be worse than that? Anything that happened from here on would pale in comparison.

Everyone stood in front of the huge rock for a long period of time before finally leaving towards the light source. The light source seemed rather near but after walking over 500 metres they had yet to reach the light and it looked as though it would take another 500 metres to get there.

Everyone’s hearts were heavy and few people spoke. The atmosphere was stifling and people were afraid that their last vestiges of hope would be extinguished.

“Bang!”

Pang Bo kicked away a piece of broken rock creating a small cloud of dust. His face had an expression of surprise as he realised that the piece of rock that he kicked away actually looked like a tile.

“It really is a tile!” Upon picking up the broken piece of tile he immediately recognised that this was a coarse man made tile.

The group immediately crowded over to look at the broken tile and their expressions were filled with excitement.

“ Since there are tiles here there must be buildings as well. This piece of land must surely have people living here. There aren’t solely altars here.”

“We are saved!”

“We can finally escape from danger!”

With the chance to live on, their feelings of pessimism lessened and their feelings of hope and joy were rekindled

At this time the sky had already turned dark and the sky was filled with stars.

Ye Fan looked at the sky and noticed a blurry disc hanging in the sky that looked to be half the size of the moon. This was sufficient proof that this was no longer Earth. At another spot in the sky there was a star the size of a fist that was brighter than the other

stars but dimmer when compared to the small moon. It could be said that the stars were far too bright and the moon was far too small and dim.

Zhou Yi, Wang Zi Wen and Liu Yun Zhi were standing not far away and they noticed Ye Fan's actions and also looked up at the sky. When they saw the two moons that were suspended in the sky their faces drained of colour.

# Chapter 13: Remains Of A Heavenly Palace

“This is……” Although their hearts were prepared, many people had faces filled with disappointment.

Influenced by the actions of the others, the rest of the group also looked up into the sky and saw the reality of the two moons suspended in the sky.

“How could it be like this?” Many people could no longer keep it in and let out their emotions. Their last hope of returning home had been destroyed, never having a chance of seeing their family again. Many female students cried till they lost their voices and people understood that they were really far from Earth and there was no way back.

“Mars…… has two moons……similar to the moon we see on earth……” Carter said in broken Chinese and thereafter spoke rapidly in English to Li Xiao Man.

For decades several space probes had been sending information regarding Mars back to Earth. There were actually two moons orbiting Mars and these were actually extremely small objects however due to the distance from Mars and other reasons, when viewed from Mars one of the moons would seem to be half the size of that on Earth and the other would be slightly smaller.

When the information on Mars was shared, everyone felt deep disappointment. It seemed like there was certainly no road back home and now they could only find a way to go on living on Mars.

The group's distance from the large altar was already 600 metres and it looked like they would arrive in no time. The group decided to not tarry any longer and continue moving forward.

Under the night sky, there was a cool breeze blowing.

Having travelled another hundred metres someone exclaimed. There was a collapsed building that seemed to have been an old pavilion and it had collapsed with the passing of time.

"A man made pavilion, this desolate planet should have humans. We will definitely be able to go on living."

"Is this really Mars? How can there be man made constructions here? The air, temperature and gravity here are all so similar to that of Earth. It's actually very similar to a desert on Earth."

Although they were filled with disappointment, they had not fallen to despair and had many doubts.

"We've even seen dragon corpses, what else is impossible? Maybe we're in some special area on Mars."

"That is a possibility. There is a five coloured stone altar here, it's possible that it attracted the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin. If one were to say that this place was sealed by the gods it isn't an impossibility."

“If our guesses are correct and this really is some special area on Mars, i’m afraid that the space that we can live in won’t be very large.”

Once these words were said everyone fell into a brooding silence.

“If this area is just a small piece of liveable land on Mars, what other options would we have to go on living?!”

Everyone felt emotionally distraught, this concerned their lives and nobody could be calm about it.

°

“Aaahh……” A female student suddenly screamed as her cry resounded through the night.

“What happened?!” Everybody paled as they urgently questioned.

“A skull, a human skull!”The female student trembled violently as her face lost all colour.

Not far from the collapsed pavilion, the top half of a white skull was protruding from the ground. The female student had stepped on the skull and it was not a surprise that she had been frightened.

All the male students gathered around as Pang Bo kicked the skull out of the soil. The skull was definitely that of an adult, it had seen the weathering of time and there were many cracks on it.

What made them feel surprised was that the skull actually had a smooth round hole on it's frontal lobe. This hole had the thickness of a finger and looked as though it had been punctured by a sharp weapon. The edges of the hole were also very smooth.

"It seems that this place is filled with many unknown variables, although this is a dried up skull that has been here for a long time, we should still proceed carefully."

In an alien environment, all these factors of uncertainty were frightening.

"What's that up ahead?"

Under the hazy night sky, the moon light was faint and only shadows could be seen on an undulating track of cluttered rocks that were uneven and jagged.

Walking forwards, everyone was in a daze. This entire area was actually a ruins. The portion in front of them was only a small part of the entire ruins which expanded into the distance.

The ruins were a land of rubble, the floor was covered in broken tiles having been through a past that was forever lost. Under the moonlight, this place seemed particularly destitute. It seemed to have been a magnificent palace in the past but now had turned to waste.

This was a vast ruin, its foundations were solid being made up of

boulders that were stacked together. One could imagine the majesty of the palace that had once stood here.

The source of light was coming from the end of the ruins behind a broken wall.

“Are we..... really on Mars? There was actually such a majestic palace here?”

“How much manpower would have been required for a construction of this magnitude?”

“What possible reasons could have caused such a large and majestic construction to turn to ruin?”

Everyone forgot their fears, the scene in front of them was far too astonishing. If this really was Mars then everything would be simply too inconceivable.

Ye Fan evenly said: “Actually this isn’t much. We’ve already experienced so many things that can’t be explained with common sense. Even if someone told me the ruins in front of us were the remains of a heavenly palace, I wouldn’t be surprised.”

Pang Bo exclaimed: “ Remains of a heavenly palace..... Could this really be possible? I mean we have actually seen dragon corpses already.”

The group was startled hearing these words, saying that these

were the remains of a heavenly palace really was not too absurd!

The light source was just in front, a hazy light faintly glowing behind the wall with an indefinable holiness.

“What could that possibly be?”

The light source at the end of the ruins continued to envelope the area, making the area seem especially destitute but at the same time mysterious.

“Crack!” “Crack!” “Crack!”

The group started to make their way towards the light source, the noises they made as they stepped over the rubble resounded into the night and as they walked passed several collapsed palaces they finally reached the wall. A large portion of the wall had been destroyed but it was still 4 – 5 metres in height, who knew how imposing it was back in the past.

“I’d really like to see what that light source is!”

The classmates carefully bypassed the wall and suddenly felt a very comforting feeling envelope them. It was as though there were rays of divine light that were shining onto them, filling their vision.

Everyone had already walked past the ruins and were standing past the broken wall staring clearly at the light source.

At an area 50 metres away stood an ancient temple, a green fluorescent Buddhist lamp was lit in the distance.

In front of the temple stood an imposing Bodhi tree that was bare except for a few leaves that were dangling in the air just two metres from the ground. Each leaf was translucent and was of a brilliant emerald colour that bore resemblance to a jade treasure of the gods.

# Chapter 14: Great Lei Yin Temple

Past the ruins, an ancient temple stood in the deathly silence. The temple was small and could not be considered magnificent. There was a stone Buddha within and by the side an ancient bronze lamp swayed giving off a faint light.

Beside the temple stood an old but stalwart Bodhi tree. The tree was so large that even six or seven people would not be able to surround it. It's trunk was already hollowed out from old age and if not for the sparse green leaves that dotted its branches one would have assumed that the tree had already withered.

The temple and Bodhi tree stood side by side, giving people a sense of eternity as though countless years had gone by and people felt endless peace and serenity.

Everyone felt different emotions at the scene in front of them. The magnificent palace behind them had already turned to ruin and yet this small temple had withstood the test of time. This gave them a feeling of surrealism.

"Why is there such a temple here?"

"The green leaves on the Bodhi tree are actually shimmering with a faint green glow!"

The Bodhi tree can also be referred to as the Buddha tree as its beginnings can be traced to the start of Buddhism. According to legend, more than 2500 years ago Shakyamuni* sat under a Bodhi

tree and attained enlightenment thus ascending to Buddhahood.

[T/N* The sage whose teachings Buddhism was founded on, also known as Gautama Buddha]

The ancient Bodhi tree and temple seemed like they were companions for life and together they seemed extraordinary making one marvel at them.

“Why do I have this feeling of the river of time, as though this scene in front of us has been there for untold years and been through countless pasts.

Fifty metres was a short distance and everyone had arrived at the temple. Each person was filled with a strange feeling, as though the scene before them was an old historical picture and the feeling of eternity filled the atmosphere.

“Could it be that a god used to live in this temple?”

“This world can’t really have Buddha.” The temple was dilapidated however it still gave people a feeling of peace and tranquility as though in a meditative state.

The temple was deathly silent, it was extremely peaceful.

“There is a bronze plaque over there and it seems that there are writings on it.”

In the dilapidated temple there was a rusty bronze plaque with four words inscribed on it, a dense aura of zen filled the air . Although it was written in the difficult to understand Bronze Inscriptions, the first word ‘Da’* could be easily made out. Even those who did not know the language could also recognise the word.

[T/N* Da also means big, but refers to great in this context]

“The last word is ‘Temple’. Zhou Yi had a slight grasp of Bronze Inscriptions and managed to make out the last word.

“These four words come together as the ‘Great Lei Yin Temple’.” Ye Fan combined the words and read them.

Everyone was shocked and had expressions of incredulity.

“Great Lei Yin Temple…… Did I hear wrongly?!”

“How can this be……”

The Great Lei Yin Temple of legends that Buddha resided in was regarded as a sacred ground to Buddhists. The dilapidated temple in front of them was so small and did not have any semblance of grandeur. There was only a single temple, why was it named Great Lei Yin Temple?

Having already witnessed nine dragons pulling the bronze coffin, the group had long been prepared to witness the existence of gods or already believed in it. The sight in front of them still left them shocked. Mars had a temple named Great Lei Yin Temple, what did this imply? Perhaps parts of history and legends would be explained and the veil on the mysteries of the ancient past would be uncovered.

“The way of the Buddha, reverberated like thunder.” The Great Lei Yin Temple!

Could it be that the ancient temple in front of their eyes was actually that temple?

If their speculations were correct, this would indubitably be stupefying. The reddish-brown ground that was made up of soil and gravel on Mars stood an ancient temple, the origins of the temple were astonishing.

The more the group looked at the temple the more they felt that it was extraordinary.

The palace behind them had been large and majestic but it had been destroyed and only rubble was left. The temple was seemingly dilapidated but it continued to withstand the test of time, forming a strange contrast between the two.

With the Bodhi tree accompanying it, the Buddhist lamp glowed in the background.

Simplistic, quiet and serene it had withstood the weathering of time. Only “truth” would be left behind and any superfluous extravagance would return to the earth in a cloud of dust.*

[T/N* Author is saying that something of substance will withstand ageing but something superficial will not]

A lamp, Buddha, temple and tree. Seemingly eternal existences that have always existed in this world.

The peace and tranquility was uplifting, as though there was ethereal chanting in the air.

“If this really is the Great Lei Yin Temple of legends, could the Bodhi tree beside it be the tree where Shakyamuni attained enlightenment?”

“How could that be possible, that should just be a legend from the Buddhist teachings. Do you really believe that 2500 years ago Shakyamuni sat under a Bodhi tree on Mars for seven days and seven nights before becoming a Buddha?”

“From what we have experienced so far, nothing is impossible!”

The events the group had experienced today made them feel as though they were living in a dream however all this was actually cold hard reality.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo suddenly went forwards into the temple and

at the same time Zhou Yi followed closely behind by Wang Zi Wen also entered the temple.

At the back, Liu Yun Zhi also seemed to think of something and rushed in as well. The others also reacted as though waking up from a dream; if this was the real Great Lei Yin Temple, this was actually a place where a god had stayed. Although it was now derelict and covered in dust it was definitely not an ordinary place.

The temple was very small and only had a single room which contained the Buddha statue. It seemed to be empty with nothing else inside besides the lamp and statue. Ye Fan came before the stone statue and grabbed the bronze lamp by the side.

The bronze lamp looked ordinary and simple however when one held it there wasn't the cold feeling of metal and it felt like holding a piece of warm jade. Although the entire temple was covered in dust the lamp was surprisingly spotlessly clean as though it could prevent any dust from landing on it.

It was evident that this temple had not been maintained for many years and there was a thick layer of dust covering it. Even so, the lamp was still able to stay dust-free and lit. This made Ye Fan feel bewildered, could it be that the bronze lamp had been lit all this time?

"Wow it's really empty in here, besides the stone Buddha and the bronze lamp there is nothing else left in here." Pang Bo looked at their surroundings and felt regret at seeing nothing else.

At this moment, Zhou Yi who was following closely behind had stepped onto the thick layer of dust on the floor and kicked an alms bowl with a “Klang!”

At the same time Liu Yun Zhi and the rest also entered the temple and nobody said a word opting to look around in silence.

Initially everyone was very careful and did not dare to explore the temple because of all that had happened to them on Earth. Upon seeing Ye Fan rush into the temple, they had a realization that they were on another planet and if this temple really was the Great Lei Yin Temple from legends there may be artifacts left behind by a god!

Within the temple, Ye Fan held the spotless bronze lamp as the soft radiance from it filled the temple.

Suddenly, Ye Fan heard a faint sound of chanting that seemed to have descended from heaven itself. Initially he thought that he was hallucinating but the Buddhist prayers kept getting louder and the whole temple was filled with sound, making one imagine Buddhist prayer wheels spinning all around; solemn, vast, sublime and mysterious.

Thereafter the whole temple became free of filth and dust, and six words sounded in a mantra: “ Om Mani Padme Hum*……”

[T/N* Sanskrit Mantra]

# Chapter 15: Bodhi

“What’s wrong with you?” Pang Bo’s voice transmitted to Ye Fan as he firmly shook his shoulders.

Ye Fan felt as though he had awoken from a dream, there were no more prayers or chanting and the ancient temple was covered in a layer of thick dust. It seemed that the others had not heard anything.

“Is this really Great Lei Yin Temple?” He silently pondered. What he had heard and seen earlier though short had seemed so real. This made him fall into a trance as he contemplated.

Ye Fan gazed at the bronze lamp in his hand but there was no longer anything extraordinary. The lamp had patterns engraved on it and was simple looking, seemingly absolutely ordinary.

“Futon!”* A male student found an old futon within a pile of ashes. It had not disintegrated with time.

[T/N* A traditional Japanese mattress usually stuffed with cotton or wool]

Not long after, a female student found a red sandalwood prayer bead under the thick layers of dust. It had not been damaged in the slightest and a faint sheen of red was revealed when the dust was blown off.

At the same time, Carter found a half broken wooden fish* under the dust in front of the stone Buddha. It was carved with three Bodhisattva; solemn, compassionate and lifelike.

[T/N* Not your actual wooden fish but an instrument used by monks during Buddhist prayers]

Ye Fan's mind was racing, if this place really was the Great Lei Yin Temple of legends, any artifacts left behind by the gods would be phenomenal!

"Dong!"

Wang Zi Wen had kicked something that let out a metallic noise sending it to the corner of the room. It was a broken bronze bell that was the size of a palm and a portion of the ancient bell's body was missing.

"Dong!....." He shook the bronze bell, the area immediately filled with the melodious sound of the bell ringing, it was as if Buddhist prayers enveloped the place , leaving people with a sensation of peace.

Ye Fan's thoughts were interrupted as he looked at that bronze bell, there were vein-like clouds covering it and gave out a sense of zen and Buddhism.

Pang Bo sighed helplessly, he was the first to enter the temple however his luck was bad and he did not manage to get anything.

Li Xiao Man also found half a piece of jade Ruyi*? and after wiping away the dust the crystal jade could be seen; it was lustrous and had a dazzling brilliance.

[T/N* The Ruyi is a kind of Chinese scepter, a talisman that symbolizes power and good fortune]

The temple seemed empty however many people were discovering different artifacts under the cover of dust and this motivated the others to search faster and more thoroughly.

Ye Fan had no interest in the other artifacts. In the temple, there was only one item that was spotlessly clean, undamaged and unscathed. This was the bronze lamp that was in his possession. The other artifacts paled in comparison.

“I don’t believe that I won’t be able to find anything……” Pang Bo muttered to himself.

“Look carefully once more and should you find any artifacts keep them by your side.” Ye Fan handed his bronze lamp over to Pang Bo allowing him to use the illumination to search. Although the broken Buddha artifacts did not seem special, if the world really had gods these artifacts would definitely be more than meets the eye!

After handing the bronze lamp over to Pang Bo, Ye Fan walked out of the temple and headed to the Bodhi tree beside. At this moment he had gotten rid of his past preconceptions and

temporarily convinced himself to believe in the existence of gods.

If the temple really was the Great Lei Yin Temple and Buddha really existed in the world how could he miss out on the Bodhi tree!

The Bodhi tree was a Buddhist sacred object and according to , Shakyamuni had told Ananda that the world had three artifacts that had to be venerated: Buddha relics, Buddha sculptures and the Bodhi tree.

As Shakyamuni had attained enlightenment under the Bodhi tree, seeing the Bodhi tree was akin to seeing Buddha.

The withered old tree was like a mighty curling dragon*, six or seven people would be unable to encompass it and the centre was hollowed. There was a branch that was dangling in the air just two metres from the ground that had six leaves on it while the rest of the tree was barren. Each leaf was translucent and was of a brilliant emerald colour like a clear green-coloured agate .

[T/N: This is Qiu Long, not Pan Long which means coiling dragon]

Even if there was no connection between the Bodhi tree and Buddha, the jade-like leaves were clearly out of the ordinary.

Ye Fan came under the Bodhi tree to examine it closely. The Bodhi tree had large branches that covered the top of the temple

and if there were still leaves on it one could imagine that it could cover the sky and blot out the sun.

While Ye Fan was staring at the tree, he noticed that the six green leaves were emitting faint green ripples, a small portion was heading towards the five coloured stone altar and a majority of it was entering into the roots of the tree.

Faint green thread-like streams continually emitted from the six green leaves giving one a feeling of life and vitality that seemed to radiate endlessly.

Ye Fan crouched down and started to sift through the dirt under the tree. He was curious as to what could attract the green streams from the Bodhi leaves.

Under the dirt, he didn't find anything unique only a Bodhi seed that was dull and gray without any special characteristics. If one did not look closely it might have been mistaken as a clump of dirt.

The only special thing about it was its size, normal Bodhi seeds were usually only as big as a fingernail but this grey seed was as big as a walnut.

Ye Fan was surprised, could it be that the green streams emitted by the Bodhi leaves were absorbed by the Bodhi seed? After observing for a while, faint streams of green could be seen flowing down and disappearing three inches from the Bodhi seed.

Although he was unable to see the Bodhi seed absorbing the essence of the Bodhi leaves, it was almost certain that the seed was doing so.

Ye Fan picked up the Bodhi seed and after carefully examining it he was amazed to see the gray and normal looking seed actually had a natural pattern that formed an image of a compassionate looking Buddha*!

[T/N thoughts: that's one intense looking seed]

The Buddha was naturally formed from the lines on the seed however it also seemed as though someone had meticulously carved it.

The grey figure of Buddha, simple yet natural and faintly exudes a sense of zen.

"A naturally occurring Buddha portrait, could it be that 2500 years ago Shakyamuni had attained enlightenment because of the Bodhi tree?"

The Bodhi tree was also known by other names like tree of knowledge, tree of enlightenment or tree of awakening. It was rumoured to be able to unlock the divine nature within humans through enlightenment.

Ye Fan raised the Bodhi seed over his head, closer to the six green leaves and the speed with which the green streams flowed out

increased rapidly. The vigorous energy became thicker and gathered towards the Bodhi seed disappearing three inches before it reached the seed.

"Poof!"

A soft sound was transmitted as a single translucent green Bodhi leaf emitted a final green stream before disintegrating into ash and gently drifted down.

At this point Ye Fan was convinced that the Bodhi seed was far from normal and hastily kept it.

Ye Fan noticed that the ground was littered with powder similar to the ash that the Bodhi leaf had become. Could it be that all the leaves of the Bodhi tree had disintegrated in this way? Ye Fan was taken aback.

This Bodhi seed that had the natural portrait of Buddha was definitely extraordinary and he could sense that it was even more important than the ancient bronze lamp found within the temple!

There were still five green leaves on the Bodhi tree but they were no longer as crystal clear as before. Ye Fan did not pick the leaves as he did not want to attract too much attention to himself. The Bodhi seed was already a bountiful harvest!

At this time everyone was still within the Great Lei Yin Temple and Ye Fan left the Bodhi tree to re-enter the temple.

By this point seven to eight people had also found Buddhist artifacts. Liu Yun Zhi found a scepter that was split in half behind the stone Buddha and although it had been hidden by dust for countless years it still looked as good as new. It still had a brilliant lustre and gave one a feeling of severity and decisiveness, if a portion of it had not broken off it could have been been said to be a perfect masterpiece.

This particular shaped scepter was known by Buddhists under a fearsome name: Vajra. It was used to ‘Destroy the enemy’ and was a symbol of invincibility, untold wisdom and the nature of Buddha. It was the weapon of choice of Buddhist deities.

If Buddha existed in this world, this Vajra would be a sacred object and would certainly have numerous uses. Even if it was said to be able to rend mountains and split rivers one would not be surprised, but for now it looks like an ordinary object.

Liu Yun Zhi forcefully wielded it, the damaged Vajra left a trail of golden light as it moved leaving a very imposing impression.

“Hey guys, if the Gods really used these artifacts and we learn how to use them, what kind of earthshaking scene would that be……”

The people who found Buddha artifacts were transfixed as they heard Liu Yun Zhi’s words.

# Chapter 16: God Descends On Earth

Besides the Vajra, several people also found incense burners , canes*, bronze bells, and fish drums**.

[T/N*戒尺 is a wooden cane like item, we can't find the English name for it]

[T/N** Chinese percussion instrument that is elongated in shape]

Amongst the students one female student had found an exceptional artifact. She was the gaunt looking female student who Ye Fan sympathized with. She had found a malas that consisted of 6 beads, pale gold and bright as a crystal, each one as large as a longan.

[T/N* Malas is a Buddhist prayer bead]

"It couldn't possibly be made from Śarīra can it?" The people by the side said with alarm.

[T/N*: Śarīra is the generic term of Buddhist relics that usually refers to pearl/crystal like bead objects]

The six pale gold crystal beads were like magnificent gems, easily leading one to connect them to the Śarīra that Buddha left behind after his death. This was after all an artifact found within the Great Lei Yin Temple and its composition could not be ordinary.

This string of beads was very special and the female student had

inadvertently found it on the head of the stone Buddha. The six beads were strung together by a transparent thin string and each bead had blurry human images in different postures on them.

This was the only other artifact besides Ye Fan's bronze lamp and Zhou Yi's alms bowl that was undamaged. Ye Fan's bronze lamp was still held in higher regard as it was the only artifact that was dust-free and lit throughout the years. Anyone could tell that it was certainly exceptional.

There were several gazes within the temple glancing over at Ye Fan's bronze lamp and although Ye Fan noticed, he was calm regardless of their intent.

The group started to leave Great Lei Yin Temple as it had been thoroughly examined and there were no other artifacts.

Pang Bo was the most depressed, he had been the first one into the temple but people all around him had gotten artifacts and he had found nothing.

Standing in front of the temple and sizing it up once again, Pang Bo's eyes lit up and he hurried forward. Lifting several big blocks and stacking them, he reached up and took the bronze engraving with 'Great Lei Yin Temple' down making many people speechless.

People then realized that the bronze plaque was certainly special as well. This bronze plaque had weathered the baptism of time and was still unscathed without any dust on it. Of all the artifacts found within the temple only the bronze lamp and plaque were

free from dust. It was clear that the bronze plaque was equally exceptional.

"Wow it's really quite heavy……" Pang Bo dragged the bronze plaque and walked back. Just as he left the temple, the temple began to shudder and the stone Buddha within started to crack with a "Crack! Crack!"

Thereafter the Buddhist six word mantra sounded again: "Om Mani Padme Hum……"

The grand sound of Buddhist chants resounded through the air, shaking the heavens and quaking the earth.

Compassionate, solemn, sublime yet profound, the Buddhist chants resounded loudly, cleansing the dirt and dust as well as enveloping the surroundings of the temple in divine light.

The sound this time was definitely not an illusion. Not only did Ye Fan and Pang Bo hear it, the rest of the group were like statues, shocked into silence.

At this moment the artifacts that everyone had gathered from the temple regardless of condition started to glow in a soft light, everyone felt astonished.

There was a loud "Boom!" and the entire temple disintegrated into dust thereafter a breeze blew by and the Great Lei Yin Temple was no more.

“Chi!”

At the same time, the Bodhi tree accompanying also collapsed but there was no wood, only dust filled the air and slowly drifted down.

Thereafter the Buddha artifacts lost their golden radiance and everything became peaceful again.

Everybody was in a daze not knowing what happened. Could the collapse be related to the taking of the Buddha artifacts and bronze plaque?

All that was left of the temple was ash, nothing else was left. Ye Fan stared for a while before saying: “Having taken all the Buddha artifacts and the bronze plaque within the temple, the already derelict Great Lei Yin Temple had lost all meaning to go on existing and thus fell apart in the wind.”

Zhou Yi was usually cultured and composed but he was very agitated now and his eyes were gleaming as he said: “I am now more determined than ever, this world definitely has gods and if we follow in their footsteps the events of today will definitely be a big opportunity for us in the future.”

Gods, Buddha, Immortals…… These absurd legends had become a reality. Nobody would feel that it would be too ridiculous to see these individuals. The facts in front of their eyes had subverted their beliefs. God definitely existed.

“Following in the footsteps of god..... that’s easy to say but I see no hope in that.” Pang Bo glanced over at Zhou Yi: “Our utmost priority is finding a way to live. This barren land does not have any shops, no source of water and food. Another seven to eight hours and our situation would be desperate.

“There have been many indications that this planet is Mars and we know that a large majority of Mars cannot sustain life.” Li Xiao Man was elegant and moving, after the series of events she had become more unassailable and continued: “If gods really exist this would explain everything that has happened thus far. This is only a small portion of Mars that is sealed by god and can sustain life.”

Li Xiao Man had just said her piece when suddenly the reddish-brown land started to transmit a loud rumbling sound. The open land was shaken up as though an army was marching through or it was a turbulent sea in the rough.

“Sand storm..... A super typhoon on Mars!” Carter said in broken Chinese as his face paled

A good quarter of the year on Mars was shrouded in endless sand. The typhoons on Earth moved at speeds of 60 metres per second whilst those on Mars travelled at 180 metres per second. The super typhoon could sweep the whole planet.

Even tanks would be swept into the air much less humans.

In a short period of time the moon and stars had disappeared as an endless reddish-brown dust completely covered the sky. A large

storm was going to sweep through Mars.

"That's not right, we aren't experiencing any typhoon here……"

A moment ago everybody was frightened of the disaster coming their way but at this instant they realised that the super typhoon may have been monstrous but their area was still peaceful.

With the five coloured stone altar and Great Lei Ying temple as the axis, an area of over 1000 metres was covered in a globe that shrouded the sky separating this area from the world.

Li Xiao Man's words had come true. This really was a place that was sealed by god and supernatural forces were blocking the typhoon. This proved the existence of god and this area was likely protected by god.

"This isn't good, that hazy shroud of light is getting dimmer and may disappear at any time!" A female student who was looking at the sky said as her face turned ghastly white.

The dim layer of light shrouding the sky was gradually dimming and it would probably disappear in no time. Seeing this scene before them everyone paled, death was so near and nobody could calm their hearts.

"What should we do? Are we really going to die in this place?" Some people trembled as they spoke.

“I don’t want to die.....” A female student uttered while tearing.

“If that shroud of light disappears we’re all going to be shredded by that super typhoon!” Even the male students were shivering with fear. The last area of land that was habitable on Mars was about to be destroyed.

“Kaboom!”

The typhoon was like a thunder storm rolling in and the entire piece of land started to totter. It was misty all around and sand shrouded the area filling people with fear and trepidation.

Ye Fan’s eyes were still clear as he looked at the sand enveloping the entire sky and collectedly said: “It seems there is only one path to survival.”

“We can live? Quickly tell us the method!”

“This haven will soon cease to exist, can there possibly be a place for us to live in?!”

When faced with death everybody was flustered and could not think straight.

“Following the path that the gods walked previously and leaving this inhabitable place.” Ye Fan said coolly.

Immediately some people understood what Ye Fan was trying to say but some people were still clueless.

“That’s right, this may be the only way to live.” Zhou Yi nodded in agreement.

Based on what Ye Fan was thinking, long ago the gods had created an ancient route among the stars and travelled from Earth to Mars however this place may not have been their final destination.

Mars also had a five coloured stone altar and it was possible that it was linked to other further planets. This was the path previously trod on by the gods and since they had no other choice they would have to follow this ancient road and leave Mars for the slightest hope of living.

It was then that everyone understood and rushed towards the five coloured stone altar.

Although it was only a thousand metres everyone felt as though it was an ocean away. This distance concerned their lives and deaths and if they failed to reach the altar before the shroud disintegrated they would all die.

The vast ruins were filled with rubble and it was a difficult route to travel. As they were rushing forward several people injured their feet but chose to ignore the pain and continue.

Even if the group safely made it to the altar, whether they could travel on the route among the stars was an unknown factor and this was a shadow in everyone's hearts. They had been forced onto this route on Mount Tai but they currently had no other alternative as this was their only lifeline and they could only rush forwards while trying to think of other ideas.

"Aaahh....." As a female student sprinted towards the ruins, suddenly a scream was heard, "fa-thud" she fell on the floor and remained motionless.

Her face was filled with terror and there was a thumb sized hole on her forehead with blood flowing out. She looked as though she had seen something horrific before she died.

"What happened?!" Everyone felt their hair stand on end and they were filled with terror, a living and breathing person that had been with them had suddenly died, this was too sudden and bizarre.

"Do not go close to her!" Ye Fan stopped two classmates who wanted to go near the corpse. He had a bad premonition as he recalled the skull earlier with a finger sized hole in its frontal lobe.

"We raided the Great Lei Yin Temple, Could it be that the gods are punishing us?" A female student said in a trembling voice, her heart was filled with panic.

"Even if god is present, Buddha is compassionate." Zhou Yi cut her off to prevent further emotions of panic and said: "We have no

way to bring her back, we can only leave her to rest in peace here. Let's hurry to the large altar."

Nobody hesitated, with their lives on the line they could not be bothered about a female classmates corpse.

"Dong……" Suddenly a bell sounded, the sound was vast and solemn, it seemed like Buddhist prayer wheels were spinning all around.

An extremely bright light shone from Wang Zi Wen, His whole body was enveloped in a gorgeous golden glow as though he was wearing a thick golden armour. It was really breathtaking and seemed like a golden divine fire was burning.

The broken bronze bell in Wang Zi Wen's palm was gently swaying, the vast and solemn sound had originated from it and the source of the golden glow was from the bell as well.

"What's happening?" Liu Yun Zhi who was close to him nervously asked.

"Previously, there was something that tried to attack me……" Wang Zi Wen usually looked gentle however being shrouded in the golden glow that seemed like a golden armour, he was awe-inspiring as if a god descended on earth.

[T/N thoughts: think Saint Seiya]

# Chapter 17: Life And Death

“Did you clearly see what it was?” Pang Bo asked as he was trying to understand where the danger was coming from. He was normally playful but when it was crucial he was always steadfast.

“I didn’t see anything, I only felt a terrifying aura covering my whole body and the bronze bell suddenly rang.” Thereafter Wang Zi Wen’s body was covered in the golden glow but he was still reeling in fear.

Hearing these words, the people who had found any Buddha artifacts from Da Lei Yin temple gripped their Buddha artifacts tightly. These objects had proven their value, it was certainly something that was once used by a god!

The broken bronze bell stopped shaking and the melodious sounds of the bell gradually faded. The golden glow shrouding Wang Zi Wen also faded away as the lights returned to the bronze bell.

“Let’s go, we have to hurry and leave this ruins!” Ye Fan held his bronze lamp which was emitting divine splendour and pressed on towards the large altar.

The group followed closely behind, this vast ruins definitely had something frightening and every second that passed was perilous.

“ Aaahh...” Screams once again rang out as a male student near the edges of the ruin fell to the ground. There was a finger sized

hole on the centre of his forehead and blood was gurgling out. This was the same cause of death! He had died with regret as his eyes were wide open, an expression of terror etched onto his face.

The group was terror-stricken as another classmate had suddenly died. They could only watch and were helpless not even knowing who are what had taken his life.

Parting forever is easier said than done especially when one personally experiences it. The group felt incredibly bitter and the deceased did not even have a chance to utter their last words before passing away. This way of dying was far too abrupt and hard to accept. Several female students were at the point of breakdown and cried bitterly, no one had ever encountered such circumstances before.

“Let’s go!”

Everyone continued forward, there was no stopping as they rushed towards the large altar. Finally escaping from the ruins, two lives had already been lost and would never return.

After running a distance from the ruins and looking back, the undulating track of jagged rocks looked blurry under the night sky and seemed like vicious demons, making their hearts palpitate.

The group did not have the time to catch a breath before three screams sounded out together. Two male students and one female student fell one by one to the ground, similarly having a finger sized hole leaking blood on their forehead. This scene was simply

shocking!

Fresh blood dyed the floor and three classmates had suddenly died as their expressions were locked in terror.

In a short period of time five people had already lost their lives and while they were feeling heavy hearted, their whole bodies felt cold and their scalps tingled as they were also frightened that they would be the next one.

“Wu, Wu…….” A female student broke down and cried loudly: “All the people who died didn’t have artifacts on them. That unknown devil is nearby and I don’t have any artifacts on me. I’m going to die sooner or later……”

It was a fact that the five people who died had not found any artifacts and Wang Zi Wen who was also attacked had a Buddhist artifact that protected him.

“Please, somebody help us……” Those who did not manage to find any artifacts were panicky as they pitifully pleaded at the ones who did have artifacts to save them. Under these life or death circumstances, who would be willing to sacrifice their own life saving Buddhist artifact for others?

Some people did not bother to stop or even respond and hurried towards the large altar. Although friendship was valuable, when faced with life and death many people chose to be cold and prioritized self preservation.

The relationships between people and the choice between self preservation and care for others, this was the first time this was tested.

“Please, somebody..... save me.....” The girl who broke down earlier ran as she cried, like a lily under the rain, anxious and very distressed, both her shoes were gone but she was oblivious as her heart was filled with fear.

Ye Fan shouted: “The Buddhist artifacts found within the temple can be shared with others.”

Pang Bo had always supported Ye Fan in his decisions and also shouted loudly: “That’s right, two to three of us can share a single Buddhist artifact found within the temple.”

Many people looked over but looked hesitant, someone then said: “What if these damaged artifacts aren’t that effective? What if they can only protect one person? Wouldn’t that put the owner of the artifact at risk of dying?”

Once these words fell everyone started to waver and there were even two people who picked up their pace and did not bother looking back.

“Ye Fan..... thank you.....” The female student who had lost her shoes came stumbling over with a face full of tears, her face held endless gratitude and combined with her tears made one feel compassionate.

Trembling she reached out her right hand towards the bronze lamp and just when she was an inch away her expression turned rigid and thereafter her eyes turned dull as she fell heavily to the ground.

The change in circumstance happened so abruptly, Ye Fan helplessly watched as her eyes dulled and that delicate and charming face streaked with tears was locked in a smile of gratitude making it especially heart wrenching.

Ye Fan really wanted to lift her up but only reached forwards a bit before pulling back. This female student had been pierced from the back of her head and not her forehead, her black hair was dyed in blood, just one more step but she had died in front of Ye Fan's eyes.

The smile that was set on her face pierced into Ye Fan as he slowly backed away, leaving the corpse that was gradually getting colder.

"What is that thing?" This was the question in everyone's minds.

Death was so close and people became even more terrified. Three to four people very quickly surrounded Ye Fan and Pang Bo wanting to hold onto the bronze lamp or plaque. Their actions were very forceful as though they wanted the artifact for themselves.

"What are you guys doing?" Pang Bo asked as his eyes widened loudly shouting: "We are here to save you by sharing the artifacts!

We are not giving away our bronze plaque or lamp and sacrificing our own lives!”

With his burly physique and giant head his stare was very imposing and the few people immediately stopped what they were doing and gingerly held onto the plaque and lamp.

There was no time to delay or pause as the group continued to run forward. People were showing emotions of greed as their eyes were burning, they wanted to steal the Buddhist artifact for themselves. The people who owned damaged Buddhist artifacts were very wary and regretted sharing the artifacts.

“We all came from the same place, and have studied together for four years. Don’t let your decisions of today become your life’s regret!” Ye Fan shouted and was more convincing than Pang Bo causing several people to finally behave.

“Boom!”

At this moment, Liu Yun Zhi who was ahead had electricity burst forth from his body, the snakes of electricity covered his body and he looked like a thunder god who descended onto this realm!

The electricity was dense and glaring as it thickly shrouded his body and illuminated the surrounding area. The electricity was being released from his damaged Vajra.

Liu Yun Zhi seemed to be wearing an armour of lightning and he

was exuding an aura of matchless strength. Electricity was covering his body making him seem like a war god of thunder.

“I was just attacked by that unknown thing.” He only said one sentence and kept quiet after. His steely eyes looked at Ye Fan but when he saw the bronze lamp he quickly looked away.

A while later the snakes of electricity of Liu Yun Zhi’s body gradually dissipated and the Vajra in his hand became dull once more.

An artifact previously used by the gods!

The power that was contained within the Vajra was visible for all to see and they were stunned.

On the route forward everyone was silently contemplating and as they finally arrived at the large altar, there were no other deaths and this allowed them to sigh in relief.

The five coloured stone altar still had the enormous giant corpses there and the bronze coffin was also lying there in silence. The scene was nonetheless awe-inspiring.

“That is……”

Coming before the altar, everyone was shocked to see the five coloured stone altar enveloped in a hazy glow. Little dots of light were gathering from the surroundings and coalesced together

before being absorbed into the stone base.

The glow that veiled the sky gradually melted away and it was clear that the large altar was absorbing the mysterious energy.

Everybody was stunned at first but their faces lit up as they recognised what was happening. The large altar was shining just as it had on Mount Tai and it was a sign that it would possibly open the ancient route among the stars. The energy supplied to fuel this opening did not come from jade or stone tablets but rather the hazy glow.

“Kaboom!”

As the hazy glow in the sky continued to diminish, the super typhoon continued to wreak havoc and the entire ground was shuddering.

As the glow continued to dim, everybody climbed onto the large altar and nervously looked on.

The frightening existence in the darkness was like a shadow in everyone’s hearts. Although it had not appeared again, as long as they remained here it would remain a threat and everyone wanted to leave Mars this instant.

For the next thirty minutes, the dim glow continued to shrink as it originally covered about one thousand metres in area and gradually reduced to two hundred metres. It seemed as though the

glow was being concentrated at the ground as the mysterious energy continued to be absorbed by the five coloured stone altar.

Pang Bo lowered his voice and whispered to Ye Fan: “Liu Yun Zhi has been glancing at us several times, he is a scheming person and we should be wary of him.” Although he was burly, he was not stupid and had felt the ill intentions.

“Don’t worry, I know!” Ye Fan turned and looked at Liu Yun Zhi with a gentle smile.

Liu Yun Zhi was very cool and gave a friendly nod, nothing seemed to be unusual. At his side were two people, one of which had been sheltered by Ye Fan as he held onto the bronze lamp to arrive safely at the altar.

This made Pang Bo feel indignant as he softly said: “That ungrateful bastard, back in university he stuck around Liu Yun Zhi and only previously did he come to us to preserve his life. He actually has the cheek to go back and stick to Liu Yun Zhi.”

Another fifteen minutes had passed and the hazy glow now barely covered the large altar. One could feel the terrifying pressure coming from the super typhoon.

“Wu……Wu……” The wind sounded like wailing ghosts as sand and rock beat upon the glow resounding in thunder-like sounds. It could be seen that some sand was getting in and the glow was clearly much weaker and could disappear at any time.

The group was worried as they continued to back away, anyone who fell from the altar would have been swept to the sky by the typhoon.

At this moment the ungrateful male student that Pang Bo mentioned slowly inched his way over and suddenly made a grab for the bronze lamp in Ye Fan's hand while his other hand forcefully pushed towards Ye Fan hoping to steal his lamp and shove him out of the five coloured stone altar.

# Chapter 18: Opposition

Ye Fan's left hand was holding the bronze lamp as he stepped back, "Bam" his right hand forcefully grabbed the male student's collar, almost lifting him off the ground.

Pang Bo who was by the side finally reacted and angrily said: "You selfish little bastard, such an ungrateful person*! . Have you forgotten who shared with you the bronze lamp and preserved your life, allowing you to reach the altar safely?"

[T/N* the text used is "白眼狼" which literally means white eyed wolf; someone ungrateful]

Pang Bo stretched out his large hands and grabbed the male classmates collar, he was incensed at the scene before him and wanted to toss the student out of the large altar.

"Cough……" The male student had struggled when Ye Fan grabbed him but was unable to break free. His face was pale as he was now grabbed by Pang Bo on the neck and could pass out at any moment.

The people by the side had different expressions. Although some people had begun to have ill intentions nobody expected that someone would really act out and the target of choice would actually be Ye Fan who had helped him.

"You are simply an ungrateful person that cannot learn, do you still have any conscience? If it wasn't for Ye Fan saving you it is

likely that you would have already died outside!”

A male student at the back persuaded: “Everyone has been through four years of school together, let’s not act like this, Pang Bo let go of him!”

Pang Bo glanced at the student saying: “Should I let go just because you tell me to? Didn’t you see that previously he tried to kill Ye Fan? If it wasn’t for Ye Fan reacting quickly he would have been thrown off the altar and swept away by the typhoon. How can this vicious bastard be let off the hook?”

“We’re all in this together and should be helping each other. Anything can be resolved, let go of him first.” Another male student persuaded.

Pang Bo could clearly see that this person was in cahoots with Liu Yun Zhi. Even though they were now standing apart from each other, the two definitely had something going on. Previously the male student currently in his grip had been together with them and although there was no evidence that they were accomplices, once Pang Bo had made his mind on something he would not shrink away from the lack of evidence.

“You are making light of the situation, if someone tried to kill you could you still be so calm? How about I throw you out of the altar too!” Pang Bo became more enraged as he spoke,“Pa! Pa!” he harshly slapped the student several times.

“Let’s not cause another death, anything can be resolved just let

go of him first. We can discuss how to deal with him after." A female student chimed in and glanced towards Liu Yun Zhi.

Throughout this process Liu Yun Zhi was composed and seemed to have no intentions to step forward and intercede. He stood by the side and pretended to be a bystander as though this matter had nothing to do with him.

Ye Fan looked at the expressions of the group and realising that he had no way to make Liu Yun Zhi who was likely the mastermind confess, he stopped Pang Bo and said: "Let him go."

"That's right, let go of him first."

"Yes, let go of him. There's nothing amongst us classmates that can't be resolved. Let's not be excessively rigid."

The people who had tried to persuade earlier continued to talk and as the others saw that Ye Fan had also voiced his opinion they also tried to persuade.

"Being excessively rigid..... Do you really feel that what happened hasn't gone past the point of reconciliation?" Pang Bo stared at the male student who was in cahoots with Liu Yun Zhi and said: "He almost killed Ye Fan and you actually have the gall to speak up for him."

As Ye Fan had already voiced his opinion Pang Bo did not continue to make a scene and finally relaxed his grip.

Nobody would have imagined that after Pang Bo had let go, Ye Fan continued to grab the student's collar and lifted him up while walking towards the edge of the altar seemingly about to toss him out.

Everyone was in a daze, no one would have imagined that Ye Fan would act like this. While they were shocked at Ye Fan's arm strength, they could not help remembering that while he was playing on the school team he was called the barbarian of the field. Ye Fan looked gentle and quiet on the outside but he was very robust and he had incredible strength. Ye Fan was lifting the male student with a single hand as though he were a little chick towards the edge of the altar.

"I had saved your life previously. Why did you want to harm me?" Ye Fan pressed the student towards the edge of the altar and could throw him out at any time. The hazy glow was only half an inch away.

This male classmate got cold feet as he loudly shouted: "Don't push me, I'm an ungrateful bastard and I don't know what possessed me earlier. I don't know what's good for me. Let me go, I won't dare to do so again……"

Ye Fan laughed as the whites of his teeth could be seen and chortled: "There is always a motive before somebody does something. You don't want to say? I really don't want to see you get swept away into the sky by this tornado….." Having said his piece, his hand continued to push the classmate towards the edge of the altar.

“Save me!” The male classmate was terrified and loudly shouted: “Let me go, I’ll talk, I’ll talk about anything!”

Being a person of modern society, he had never been through such a dire situation and had totally broken down. In the face of the approaching typhoon his face was ghastly and all the colour had drained from it.

“Let him go Ye Fan, it’s dangerous to do this and doesn’t speak well of you.”

“That’s right anything can be negotiated, we can’t be ignorant of the relationship between classmates. If someone really dies that would be terrible.”

The same students continued to voice out words of persuasion as they slowly walked over.

“Klang!”

Pang Bo firmly placed the bronze plaque which was half as tall as a normal human onto the ground and stared at them, stopping the few people in their tracks.

Ye Fan looked back and gently smiled saying: “It’s alright, he’s willing to tell me the reason why he attacked me. I really want to know where I’ve done badly. There won’t be any unhappiness between us, you guys can be at ease.”

When he looked back at the classmate who was pressed to the edge of the altar, he steeled his gaze as though if the other party did not speak he would immediately hurl him off the altar.

"I……I didn't get anything from the temple, I didn't get any items left by the gods and felt a sense of vulnerability. So…… I got greedy, I'm really ungrateful!" Having said this, the classmate began to slap his own mouth.

Ye Fan did not say anything more and pushed him further out such that his body dangled in the air. The hazy glow was right beside him.

"Don't! Save me!" The male classmate exclaimed in fear: "It was Li Chang Qing…… It was his idea!"

Ye Fan pulled him back, he did not hold this spineless coward in any regard and he certainly would not constitute as a threat. If he really threw the classmate off the altar it would definitely make the other students have a bad impression of him. They were after all classmates and doing so would cause more harm than good.

Ye Fan was very natural as he took a bottle of water from the student and patted his shoulder saying: "We've been classmates for four years and having experienced these traumatic events we are on the same boat and should work together."

"Definitely…… Definitely!" The male student was trembling as he finally regained his freedom and shuddered as he backed away.

By this time Pang Bo was enraged and carrying the bronze plaque he rushed forward to smash it onto Li Chang Qing

“Bang!”

Pang Bo was tall and robust, his strength was simply incredible, when he swung the bronze plaque at the other person, he was immediately smashed into the ground.

“No wonder you continually persuaded us to stop. You were the mastermind behind all this!” Pang Bo plunked the bronze plaque on the classmate’s body and said: “We’ve already been classmates for four years but you still scheme against us. Do you have any humanity left in you?” Pang Bo was fuming, Li Chang Qing was one of the students who had stood by Liu Yun Zhi’s side and was also one of the students who had joined in the persuasion.

Ye Fan walked over and very naturally took another bottle of water from Li Chang Qing’s body and handed it to Pang Bo.

Seeing Ye Fan obtain a second bottle of water, everyone had complex expressions on their faces. If they did not hurry to leave Mars, a few hours later water would be the most valuable resource.

Ye Fan was disappointed that he had failed to lure Liu Yun Zhi out into the open. Although he knew that Liu Yun Zhi was definitely the mastermind, he did not have any evidence and it would be detrimental to openly work against him.

Li Chang Qing was very resolute and even though Pang Bo was giving him a severe thrashing, he did not admit anything and only said that he was impulsive and had offhandedly mentioned to the student to steal from Ye Fan thus kindling the flames of desire in the student.

Pang Bo really wanted to throw Li Chang Qing off the altar however after considering the feelings of the other classmates he controlled his anger and did not do so. He felt that it would be difficult to maintain this seemingly peaceful relationship and if their lives were threatened again he would ignore any past relationships and act decisively. It was clear that some people were already harbouring ill intentions.

Ye Fan was not angry as he amicably laughed at Li Chang Qing and said: “We humans are so complicated at times. There are some things which we are forced to do however it is better to have a mind of our own and not be manipulated.”

Having said his piece he crouched down and attempted to seize the damaged fish drum which Li Chang Qing had found within the Great Lei Yin Temple.

“What are you doing? Li Chang Qing struggled violently, he did not lose his composure when Pang Bo was trouncing him but now that Ye Fan was going for his fish drum he started to become anxious. Li Chang Qing wanted to protect the fish drum by his waist but his upper body was still held down by the bronze plaque and he was defenseless.

“Thump!”

Suddenly the fish drum by Li Chang Qing's side let out a muffled thunderous sound as streams of green light shot out like snakes of lightning.

As though Raijin's* drum was beating, "Boom! Boom!" muffled thunder sounded out and purple light started to converge and enveloped Li Chang Qing.

[T/N* Japanese god of lightning and thunder, beats drums to create thunder]

The purple light surrounding Li Chang Qing was like a purple cocoon, it was dazzlingly brilliant and had the splendour of God illuminated the entire five coloured stone altar.

The people all around were shocked and felt the buzzing roar in their ears. Some people even lost their footing and fell to the ground.

At the same time the bronze plaque within Pang Bo's hand let out countless streams of light that was accompanied by endless sounds of thunder, the four words "Great Lei Yin Temple" shot into the sky with an intense light and gave off an ethereal presence.

Buddhist chants started to reverberate loudly!

The dazzling light from the Great Lei Yin Temple bronze plaque immediately suppressed the purple light and the sounds from the

fish drum slowly dissipated.

At this moment the bronze lamp in Ye Fan's hand also let out gentle drops of light that shrouded his body, a layer of sacred divine light evenly encompassed his whole body, it was as though he had put on a sacred armor of war.

The light was not glaring and was dim and gentle, it gave one the feeling of awe, as though there were a god standing there. The sacred light emanated an aura of a heavenly armor of the Gods , making Ye Fan seem otherworldly.

The purple light from the fish drum was snuffed out and the purple cocoon had disappeared. The damaged fish drum became dull and had returned to normal. Ye Fan was unflappable and his hands retrieved the fish drum. Nothing could stop him, he was like a living god, the bronze lamp continue to radiate rays of divine light making him seem transcendental.

At this instant, Liu Yun Zhi who was near the female student who had tried to persuade Ye Fan had walked over as he held a damaged bronze bell and said: "Ye Fan what you are doing is too much!"

Immediately after, a male student also walked forward and said: "We should cooperating together and not be bickering. The matters of the past have already happened, we shouldn't be too extreme."

These two people had been helping Liu Yun Zhi from the side all

this while and it was clear where their loyalties stood. At this moment they had come out together and it was clear that they did not want Ye Fan to obtain another one of Buddha's artifacts.

Liu Zhi Yun who had always been a bystander held his Vajra as he walked closer saying: "Ye Fan, let's forget about the things of the past. Even though he was wrong initially, punishing him in this way is as good as sentencing him to death!"

Contrary to Ye Fan's expectations, Zhou Yi who had always been passive and usually acted as though nothing concerned him, brought his alms bowl out and persuaded: "Ye Fan you shouldn't take his fish drum. You already have a bronze lamp, another artifact won't do you much good. If he loses the fish drum he might really be killed by that unknown thing in the darkness."

# Chapter 19: Calmness

“You have all seen the events that transpired, everyone should know what is really going on.” Ye Fan’s left hand grasped the bronze lamp, his right hand gripping the damaged fish drum. Instead of backing, Ye Fan walked forward and said:”Since I have already taken his fish drum, there’s no way i can return it back to him.”

The fluorescent bronze lamp spilled forth angelic rays of light as bright as the sun yet tranquil like the moon, this resembled a converging divine rainbow that was dazzling and resplendent, simply a breathtaking sight. The rays merged with Ye Fan completely, giving him an otherworldly feel, like an immortal donning his divine armor.

On his right hand he held a damaged fish drum which was currently dull but everyone had seen the power of the thunder god erupt from it, seeing that Ye Fan was also holding this artifact in his hand made people feel fear.

“Li Chang Qing shouldn’t have spoken nonsense resulting in someone’s heart to fill with greed thus causing such an unhappy event. However Ye Fan taking the only thing that can preserve his life is too extreme.” Liu Yun Zhi came forward with his Vajra in hand, making one feel the might within.

There was a male and female classmate beside him as well, they had initially tried to stop Pang Bo and also spoke up for Li Chang Qing.

“Ye Fan, i know that you’re furious, anyone would be angry if this happened to them but we should keep an open mind and be more tolerant.” The female student spoke very calmly as though she was on the side of reason, impartial and fair.

“Taking his life-saving artifact in this current situation can only lead to one thing, you shouldn’t take this too far.”

On her finger was a damaged old bell, it looked as though it had collected dust for many years and was dull and seemingly ordinary. As she spoke the movements of her slender fingers would cause the bell to chime softly causing people’s attention to be attracted to it.

The male student beside Liu Yun Zhi also spoke up: “We should all have a forgiving heart, we’ve all known each other for four years and have gone through such an ordeal together. We should be working together and supporting one another. All the unhappiness that occurred previously should be forgotten, let’s not harp on it. Ye Fan, return his life preserving fish drum to him, I believe that you won’t want to see him die just because he doesn’t have it.”

Hanging from the male classmates right hand was a rusty censer*, it was palm sized and a portion of it had broken off and yet it seemed ancient and natural.

[T/N* incense burner]

The three people were standing together and each of them had obtained an artifact abandoned by the gods, at this moment their

words carried a lot of weight.

"Klang!"

Pang Bo strode forward in big steps and heavily planted the Great Lei Yin Temple plaque on the ground saying: "The way you guys talk is so smooth that it's actually better than singing. The way you can obfuscate the truth and flip black to white is simply amazing. It was obviously Li Chang Qing who first provoked Ye Fan by wanting to harm him, how did it become Ye Fan's fault for not being magnanimous enough? What sort of logic is this? How can it be Ye Fan's fault in the end? Others wanted to kill him but he only took away the artifact they rely on, what's the wrong in that? Judging by your words Ye Fan is the evil person and Li Chang Qing hasn't done anything wrong. Stop being so hypocritical acting as though you guys are on the side of justice, it's making me feel disgusted!"

At this moment, the glow surrounding Pang Bo's body had not vanished. The four words on the bronze plaque 'Great Lei Yin Temple' were emitting rays of brilliance and Buddhist chants started to reverberate loudly exuding an aura of ephemeral mist. He was blazing like the sun giving him a commanding presence.

When these words were said, the male and female students who had spoken earlier grimaced.

"We didn't say that Ye Fan was in the wrong, we're merely persuading Ye Fan to give Li Chang Qing his fish drum based on their relationship as classmates to allow him to go on living."

They were being very evasive, constantly repeating that Ye Fan taking away the fish drum was akin to taking away Li Chang Qing's life while completely ignoring the fact that someone had tried to push Ye Fan off the large altar and could have been swept away by the typhoon.

After they were done speaking, Ye Fan coolly smiled and said: "You three can rest easy, I'm not gonna argue with him."

His entire body was encompassed in divine light, one would feel hazy and natural, the surroundings would be free from dust, all would feel a sense of tranquil peace.

"What I want to fuss about is that Li Chang Qing almost killed me. It isn't the picture that you guys painted of me wanting his life and I'm sure this is evident for everyone to see." Ye Fan's gaze swept over Liu Yun Zhi and the two others saying: "There are a few students here who did not manage to obtain anything from the Great Lei Yin Temple but are still living, why is that? It was because everybody shared the artifacts from god. Taking away the fish drum from Li Chang Qing is only to prevent him from committing any further evils. He could instruct others to steal my artifact and could do so for other people as well. His safety can be assured if everyone shares the artifacts in their hands to support each other. If you guys aren't willing to share your bronze bell, bronze censer or Vajra, I'd be more than happy to allow him to follow me, I won't reject him because of our relationship as classmates."

Ye Fan managed to accurately pinpoint the crux of the situation

and then brought out the idea of sharing Buddha's artifacts. This made people remember that it was Ye Fan who initially came up with the idea of sharing artifacts which allowed many people to continue living. At the same time, he also smoothly attacked Liu Yun Zhi and the two classmates with his words, making it difficult for anyone to refute.

Zhou Yi was still standing by the side, besides the initial part where Ye Fan had taken away the fish drum, he had remained there silently listening and not voicing his opinions. It was only now that he finally spoke up: "Li Chang Qing was certainly wrong and he can't complain however we deal with him. However, Ye Fan for you to be holding two of Buddha's artifacts when some classmates don't even have one is a bit wasteful."

Zhou Yi came from a family with an influential background however he never came off as arrogant but rather amicable and cultured. When he pointed this out Pang Bo who was by the side could not refute his logic.

"I was even willing to share the bronze lamp in my hand, having obtained this fish drum I would definitely pass it to someone." Ye Fan laughed as he gestured to another male student: "Zhang Zi Ling here's the fish drum, remember if there's any danger to share it with the people beside you."

Zhang Zi Ling had always been standing behind Ye Fan and Pang Bo, back in university they had been on the soccer team and the relationships forged there were stronger than the normal classmate. Although he did not take action like Pang Bo, it was clear that he stood on Ye Fan's side.

Ye Fan's decision was very sudden and Zhou Yi's mouth twitched but he remained silent.

Liu Yun Zhi's brows were furrowed and the female student beside him immediately voiced her dissent: "Many of the male students managed to obtain something from Great Lei Yin Temple however most of the female students did not. I feel that the fish drum should be given to a female student." Having said this she glanced at the female classmate by her side.

Pang Bo's face was filled with ridicule as he said: "Between classmates is there a need for such a distinction? People who have obtained the Buddhist artifacts should share with others, is there any concern regarding to whom we give it to? Could it be that you aren't willing to help some of our classmates?"

Pang Bo highlighted the issue of gender preference thus disregarding the female student's notion of the fairer sex, Pang Bo had a teasing look as he went on. the female student was incensed and her face had turned red as she said: "Do not distort what I am trying to say!"

Zhang Zi Ling walked forward very naturally and took the fish drum from Ye Fan, no words were required between them.

Ye Fan ignored Liu Yun Zhi and spoke to Zhou YI saying: "Zhou Yi how do you feel about this arrangement?"

"I don't have any objections, we are currently in dire straits and should help one another. Hopefully there are no further unhappy

situations that arise." Zhou Yi was composed as he said these words and spoke no further.

The rest of the classmates had seen the hidden opposition between Liu Yun Zhi and Ye Fan, although it had come to a seemingly peaceful conclusion a number of jabs had been thrown but Ye Fan had easily controlled the situation.

This led people to recall Ye Fan back in university, he had not changed, when he needed to be easy-going he was calm and indifferent, but when he needed to be aggressive he would not falter. He did not cause trouble for others but was never afraid if trouble came knocking at his door.

Pang Bo held onto his bronze plaque and looked at Liu Yun Zhi and his group: "Ye Fan may not fuss about other's who harm him but I have some words that must be said. What humans do, the heavens are watching and i believe we can no longer deny the existence of god. We should be more righteous in our actions and stop doing those disdainful actions, who knows whether god is watching."

Pang Bo's actions were as though the few students were standing in front of the class and he was slapping them, however no one was saying a word because he was standing on the side of reason.

Liu Yun Zhi was level headed and did not have any change in expression, he nodded saying: "Well said! We should prevent such events from happening again in the future."

Lin Jia and Wang Zi Wen were standing at the back and did not

pick sides however at this moment they spoke up.

“To prevent such an unhappy event from occurring again, I believe we should have a discussion.”

“We should now decide of the people who obtained something from Great Lei Yin Temple, how they should help and who they should help.

Li Xiao Man was silent throughout this entire process. She had watched as Ye Fan handled this debacle and her eyes were composed showing no change in emotions and favouring neither side.

Carter who was by her side had a rough shod understanding of Mandarin and only just understood what was happening. He was speechless with admiration for Ye Fan.

“Bang!”

Suddenly the sound of something breaking transmitted over and everyone was shocked, the hazy glow that was shrouding the large altar had been pierced by some unknown entity and everyone was staring in that direction.

A black light that was incredibly fast suddenly pierced a male student’s forehead with a “Chi!”, blood splattered out as the male students eyes were wide open and he fell as he looked towards the sky.

If it was not for the hazy glow, this scary thing basically had no sound or presence and the group would have been unable to detect it attacking them. When they thought back to how several people had died to the hidden attacks from the black light, everyone felt cold, that black light had merged with the darkness and was impossible to detect.

The appearance of the black light was a pronouncement that the god of death had arrived!

Cries of fear echoed out and the large altar was a mess of movement. Those without artifacts crazily jumped towards Liu Yun Zhi, Zhou Yi, Wang Zi Wen and the others, all were holding tightly to their Buddha artifacts.

“Roar!” Suddenly, a frightening sound was transmitted from within the typhoon that was bone chilling and earth shattering, even the thunderous sound of the dust storm was masked by the sound.

“It’s the Great Lei Yin Temple.....”

At this moment, many people became pale as they realised where the noise was coming from, the Great Lei Yin Temple!

“Great Lei Yin Temple has already been destroyed, could it be that it was actually suppressing something with it’s presence?”

Upon hearing these words from Pang Bo, people felt their scalps numb and felt waves of trepidation.

# Chapter 20: Ancestors Of The Crocodile

From the direction of the Great Lei Yin Temple came a bone-chilling roar, as though some ancient beast from an age old wilderness was shattering the earth, after being released from its seal it's roar shook the mountains and rivers, affected the stars and moon in the sky and let one feel shudders coming from their soul.

It was suddenly peaceful again and the terrifying roars had dissipated, all that was left were the thunderous sounds of the dust storm.

"What is that thing?"

"Are there other life forms on Mars?"

"In the legends, Shakyamuni sealed many different kinds of beasts and monsters, maybe the place where he sealed these monsters was near the Great Lei Yin Temple."

They had only briefly discussed the matter but everyone was feeling anxious. As modern people they had never believed in these legends, however with all that they had experienced thus far, the frightening possibilities held in the legends made their hearts experience a wave of emotions.

If their guesses were right, their situation was especially precarious. With the disintegration of Great Lei Yin Temple, there was no longer Buddha or God and they were left alone to face whatever mythical demon was released, the outcome would be

disastrous.

“Today many of our beliefs have been challenged making it difficult for us to comprehend fully what is going on……”

“The mythical demons mentioned in legends may be coming for us!”

When they thought of the possible scenarios that could arise, everyone felt as though their bodies were encased in ice.

Endless possibilities and an unknown future made one fearful and worried.

At this moment, there was still a corpse in front of everyone, the ground was dyed red and the smell of blood permeated the air. This was a reminder to the group that the situation was very bad, there was also an unknown entity that had taken a life right in front of their eyes.

“Chrrrick!”

The head of the corpse let out a weird noise that made many people feel anxious.

“Pajeekk!”

The sounds of eating and chewing could be heard and this made

it very difficult to bear. This was after all a human head and the unknown entity seemed to be inside having a meal, causing their goosebumps to stand on end.

“Creak Creak”

The sound of bone being grinded down could be heard as though there were several sharp teeth cutting into the bone, the atmosphere was unbearably tense and depressing.

Nobody spoke and the five coloured stone altar became silent once again. Many people were terrified and kept silent.

This was a mental torture, the sounds of eating and biting of bones could be heard and when the noises came together it was like a symphony from hell itself making it excruciating for the soul.

Many female students clutched their mouths and wanted to cry but did not dare to, the scenario that unfolded in front of them caused them to be on the verge of break down.

Not everyone was frightened, those who held Buddha artifacts had a modicum of courage in them. Pang Bo was usually ferocious and under the tense atmosphere he dragged the Great Lei Yin Temple plaque wanting to smash the skull.

Ye Fan held him back and said: “Don’t act recklessly.”

“Chi!”

At this moment the skull that was drenched in blood let out a splatter of blood and some white substance, this was nauseating as it was clearly brain matter flowing out.

Thereafter from the hole on the skull emerged an awl-like black skull that was small and sharp covered in scales.

“What is that thing?”

Everyone could not help it as they backed away, even Ye Fan and Pang Bo also stepped back.

A creature that looked like a crocodile, it had crawled out from the bloody hole in the skull and its body was covered in blood and brain matter making their scalps tingle.

It was no longer than ten centimetres and was only about as thick as a finger. It looked like a snake but had the features of a crocodile without the legs. Its body was covered in black scales and it felt as though it was a creature that had come from hell itself.

The blood and brain matter that had stained its black scales was especially disturbing and many people felt nauseated as they felt intense fear.

This unknown creature had crawled out of the bloody hole onto the top of the skull, its small eyes were cold as it silently stared at the crowd. It seemed to be highly intelligent and not a lower form

of life.

Seven classmates who had been with them for four years were now gone forever and it was caused by the bite of this ugly creature.

Its eyes were extremely cruel as it coldly glanced at the group, it seemed as though it were looking at them as though they were its food rather than similar levels of existences.

“Damn mother of a useless thing, even your hair hasn’t grown yet, you actually killed seven of my fellow classmates, your father will smash you to death!” Pango Bo lifted that bronze plaque and forcefully waved it towards the unknown creature.

The sound of thunder resounded and light came bursting out of the bronze plaque as it surged forward forming a net of light.

“Zoom!”

The unknown creature was very swift as though it understood that the bronze plaque was dangerous and became a black light, dodging the lights that had almost enveloped it.

Ye Fan held his ancient bronze lamp and blew forcefully at the flame contained within, soon a blazing divine flame shot out and surged forward.

The creature that was barely a finger in thickness and ten

centimetres in length let out a shrill cry, the sound was like the shriek of a devil and the buzzing in their ear drums caused their backs to fill with cold sweat.

It was difficult to imagine how such a small creature could let out such a loud and frightening noise.

The flame that Ye Fan had blown out only flew a distance of three metres and did not swallow the entire creature. The fire had clipped its tail and half of the tail had immediately broken off from its body.

It stared viciously at Ye Fan as it carried an expression that could be seen on humans, extremely ferocious and it's mouth was open exposing its sharp white teeth within as it shrilly screamed at Ye Fan.

"What sort of creature is this?!" Many classmates at the back were filled with terror and even those who held Buddha's artifacts did not dare to step forward.

"This useless thing, your eyes are so vicious looking, I'm going to smash you to bits!" Pang Bo was very ferocious and showed no signs of fear as he once again lifted the bronze plaque and rushed forward: "Killing seven of my fellow classmates, now we've only burnt off your tail, go and die!"

Pang Bo's body was shrouded in the dazzling light emitted from the bronze plaque, he seemed like an angry war god as he exuded a ferocious aura, the bronze plaque was trembling as Buddhist

chants filled the sky giving off rumbling noises.

Ye Fan stood at the other side to surround the creature that only had half its body remaining, the fire within the bronze lamp once again shot forth like an angry dragon and the temperature of the fire seemed to burn the air itself.

At this moment Zhou Yi, Wang Zi Wen and the others rushed forward and wielded their Buddha artifacts against the crocodile-like creature.

Although it was surrounded, the creature was too fast and like a shimmer of black light it continually darted around the large altar making it difficult for the group to target it.

The shrill scream sounded again as the ferocious and frightening creature was chased by the classmates, it seemed to be incredibly angry and filled with resentment as it continually screamed like nine angry ghosts had come together to wail.

“Zzaaah!”

Sounds of the glowing light being penetrated filled the air as several similar looking crocodile creatures pierced through the light and entered the large altar. Their lengths did not exceed ten centimetres and looked precisely like the first creature they came in contact with. Their gazes were filled with hatred and were like evil ghosts as they stared at the group.

“How can there be so many?”

“What is this creature, could it be that Mars is their home?”

Everyone felt helpless, they were not gods and did not know how to properly use their artifacts. They could only rely on the lights emitted from the artifacts to prevent themselves from getting killed and with the appearance of so many of the ferocious creatures it was impossible to kill them all.

At this point a “Zaah Zaah!” sound could be heard and outside the glow hundreds of the crocodile-like creature could be seen.

The people who had not acted and were hiding behind Ye Fan and the rest had started to tremble, with so many of the ferocious creatures even if they had Buddha’s artifact it would seem impossible to defend against the whole group of them!

“Pang Bo stop chasing, let’s group up!” Ye Fan loudly shouted at Pang Bo.

With the appearance of so many of the crocodile-like creatures, it would be impossible to kill off all of them and being on the defensive would be better. They just had to wait for the large altar to gather enough energy to open the ancient route among the stars.

“ROARRR!!!……”

Suddenly, a loud roar that made one’s soul tremble once again sounded from the direction of the Great Lei Yin Temple.

Following this soul shocking roar, the dust storm outside seemed to settle down and it was silent all around besides the rumbling roar of the beast.

The ground continued to shudder and even the five coloured stone altar was shaking, the typhoon had been thoroughly suppressed.

“Great Lei Yin Temple..... was actually a nest of ferocious monsters!” Someone said in a trembling voice.

The group looked beyond the hazy glow and saw more and more of the frightening creatures gathering, the direction they were coming from was precisely the Great Lei Yin Temple and the ground was covered in pitch black scales. It was clear that there were tens of thousands of them.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, there was a violent shaking and within a thousand metres a dreadful pressure enveloped the area, from the heavens to the yellow river in hell this simply shook the foundations of heaven and earth!

Although there was a dust storm there that separated them from the sound, everyone could see two frightening eyes that looked like lanterns, piercing through the darkness from the ruins of the Great Lei Yin Temple.

It seemed like that area was going through a volcanic eruption and stones were haphazardly flying everywhere, there were even huge boulders the size of small houses that had landed heavily in the vicinity of the five coloured stone altar.

“It’s the foundation of the Great Lei Yin Temple..... it’s finally fallen apart and some frightening thing that was sealed there has come out!”

If this were the case, even if they had a few artifacts left behind by the gods it would likely be insufficient.

“I think I know what are these crocodile-like ferocious creatures.....” A female classmate said with a shaky voice.

The Tibetans were especially reverent of the Buddhist teachings and almost everyone believed in Buddha. This female student had gone to Tibet and visited Jokhang* and Ramoche* Temple, from there she had heard a local Tibetan speak of some ancient legends.

[T/N* Buddhist monasteries in Tibet]

It was said that under the Great Lei Yin Temple that Buddha lived in, it was not a pure and virtuous piece of land but rather sealed many unequalled demons and at the first level of sealing there was a crocodile ancestor, an ancient crocodile god with matchless power but had eventually been sealed by Buddha.

“What you’re saying is, the sacred ground that Great Lei Yin Temple sits on has sealed many peerless demons?”

“The old Tibetan Buddhist who studied Buddhism told me that.”

Hearing this, everyone felt their bodies turn cold. If this were really the case, there was definitely a crocodile ancestor that would be emerging from the direction of the Great Lei Yin Temple and these ugly creatures were its descendants.

Ye Fan frowned as he said: “I have previously seen some records in an ancient text……”

In that ancient text it was recorded that there was a limbless ‘crocodile’ whose body was as hard as diamond and could easily pierce through flesh and bone, it was known as the crocodile god.

Zhou Yi nodded saying: “I’ve also seen an ancient text with a similar interpretation…..”

According to legend and recorded in Buddhist teachings the ancestor god of the ‘crocodiles’ had been sealed and its descendants had never seen the light of day again.

Everyone was feeling the surreality of the situation. A legend that had always been seen as just a story had actually become a reality and this made them feel fear and shock.

“The old Tibetan said that the crocodile ancestor was sealed at

the first level under the Great Lei Yin Temple, does that mean that there's actually the second or even the third level....." A female student said in a trembling voice.

Nobody had an answer, if the crocodile ancestor really resurfaced that would be the end of them.

The "Zaah Zaah!" sounds continued to transmit over and the tens of thousands of little 'crocodiles' were struggling to pierce through the veil of light and enter the large altar.

"Boom!"

Suddenly, the five coloured stone altar started to shake and in the sky appeared five ancient symbols in five different colours, as though there were countless flashing stars in the sky. The image of the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams was forming and this was a prelude to the opening of the ancient route among the stars.

However, about a thousand metres away at the ruins near the Great Lei Yin Temple the lantern-like eyes had risen further and it was clear that any moment it would escape from its confines and emerge on the surface.

Escape from this place, escape from Mars! These were the thoughts that filled everyone's minds. Many people were praying that the ancient route among the stars would open as soon as possible, even if they were to float endlessly in the desolate universe it would be more comforting than Mars.

[T/N note: We can’t find any sources regarding snakes/serpents/nagas/crocodiles sealed under the temple, so for now the name will be the literal translation; crocodile. Do let us know if you know anything regarding this monster. Closest thing we found is the Makara]

# Chapter 21: Blood Sacrifice

The Tai Chi Eight Trigrams has always been a part of Chinese history, its origins being very ancient. Exactly who or how it was created is unknown and the uses for it are also an enigma making it one of the mysteries of Chinese culture.

It was said that the cosmic velocity of stars as well as the binary computer had been derived from it adding to the mystification surrounding it.

Even now, the mysteries surrounding the ancient Tai Chi Eight Trigrams had not been solved and people came up with many wild theories and guesses.

It was once said that it represented unknown ‘potentials’ and you could conduct deductions based on it to calculate future possibilities. The deduction had to be perfect otherwise even the slightest error would result in a total failure in prediction.

There were others who said that it underlined the fundamentals of the universe and each symbol on it represented one of the most basic things in this universe.

There were even some who made bold hypotheses that the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams was related to time and space and the eight symbols on the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams were positions of different star systems. If arranged differently it would denote the position of a different star system.

Based on this hypothesis, the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams was like a door to other star systems, akin to a wormhole connecting to any star system.

Based on these deductions the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams was a stable formation and if it were locked on to the position of another star system through complicated calculations and supplied sufficient energy, it was theoretically possible to open the portal through the stars.

However, it was difficult to imagine the ‘complexity’ involved, it even required the understanding of mysterious ‘formations’, and these ‘formations’ had yet to receive formal recognition from the scientific world and were only in the phase of deductions and hypotheses.

‘Formations’ were related to space and even today the mysteries within had not been uncovered.

It could be said that creating a portal leading to other star systems using the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams was currently impossible and within the near future it was likely to be impossible as well.

At this instant, Ye Fan and the group were fortunate enough to witness the formation of the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams again. If someone who had studied the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams for many years saw this they would go mad with excitement because this was the proof to all their years of research.

It was a pity that Ye Fan and the classmates were not in the mood

for research, they were now caught in a life and death situation and merely wanted to get out of Mars as soon as possible. Every second on Mars was a second closer to death.

The ruins of the Great Lei Yin Temple situated over a thousand metres away was very peaceful but a fearsome aura was covering the area and the lantern-like eyes were staring at the large altar and seemed especially evil in the darkness which made one feel fear.

The Tai Chi Eight Trigrams had already formed in the sky, it seem to be metallic in nature, giving one a feeling of it being refined countless times before it was created.

The surrounding space in the area was being distorted while emitting misty light. Qian, Dui, Li, Zhen, Xun, Kan, Gen and Kun. The corresponding symbols began to emit mysterious light in a sequence, making it seem like a flickering ancient cryptic code.

The eight symbols continued to flash as they commenced a complex process of rearrangement but before they all lit up as before they actually started to dim and the entirety of the enormous Tai Chi Eight Trigrams began to tremble as though it would collapse at any time.

“How could it be like this……”

Many people were petrified, if there was no way to open the ancient route among the stars it would mean death for them.

The hazy glow that was shrouding the large altar was gradually turning dimmer and it had almost completely disappeared. Only small amounts of the faint glow continued to transfer to the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams in the sky, some people immediately understood what was happening.

“The creation of the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams or ancient route among the stars requires a lot of energy and it seems that the energy right now is insufficient!”

“What should we do..... are we really going to die in this place?”

Far away there was the crocodile ancestor and surrounding them were little crocodiles, a web of death was surrounding them.

“Bang!”

There were more than ten little crocodiles which had made it through the glow and started to attack the group. The bronze censer, Vajra, bronze bell, fish drum and other Buddha artifacts let out dazzling flashes of light that blocked the attacks of the crocodiles however the strength of the collision was great, forcing the group to involuntarily back away .

“Crack! Crack!”

In the surroundings of the five coloured stone altar were countless black scales, tens of thousands of little crocodiles were smashing themselves onto the glow and the sounds of fracturing

could be heard. It was only a short period of time before another hundred little crocodiles managed to break through.

Although they looked small, they were extremely ferocious and frightening. Every crocodile was like a sharp sword that could fly through the sky and their piercing power was immense.

“We can’t hold on much longer. If we continue to only defend like this, we will eventually be overwhelmed and killed here.” Pang Bo shouted while wielded his bronze plaque, countless streams of lights formed a screen that protected three to four people. Although they were temporarily safe, if they continued in this situation it would be difficult to say if they could continue to hold their defense.

“Stay there and don’t move, I’m going to try something.” Ye Fan instructed Pang Bo as he stopped staying on the defensive and took his bronze lamp to the front with him.

Immediately over ten crocodiles pierced towards him, ten flashing black lights like lightning, fast and cruel to the extreme, like nails being nailed onto the glow let out by the ancient bronze lamp as they forcefully attempted to pierce through.

“Ffffff!”

Ye Fan waited patiently for over ten crocodiles to be close to him before blowing intensely at the flame on the wick of the bronze lamp, immediately a blazing light was emitted as the area of five to six metres from him was drowned in divine flames.

A burning odour was transmitted and shrill cries filled the air. As the fire slowly receded, Ye Fan appeared unblemished as radiant lights seem to encompass him, making him look like a banished immortal that came from the moon. Littering the floor around him were countless black scales, nearly all the surrounding crocodiles had been burnt to death.

A few of the ferocious creatures managed to avoid death but they had been thoroughly burnt and their bodies were riddled with injuries, they stared hatefully at Ye Fan from far away giving off low shrieks that made ones goosebumps stand on end.

“Well burnt! Well burnt!” Pang Bo loudly shouted from the back. He felt the impulse to rush forward and kill as well, however he was held back by three others who were hugging him and the bronze plaque tightly. Without the bronze plaque they would be defenseless against the crocodiles and would certainly die.

“Crack! Crack!”

The sound of more shattering could be heard as five to six hundred crocodiles broke through the glow and rushed in. Their small bodies were filled with power, teeth razor sharp and eyes cruel. None of them were afraid of death as they rushed at Ye Fan as they alternated their attacks.

“Not good, Ye Fan probably won’t be able to handle so many ‘black nails*’ alone, I need to go help him.” Pang Bo wanted to go forward again.

[T/N*: Nickname for the small black crocodiles]

“But..... What about us?” The three people by his side were pale and begged as they looked at Pang Bo.

“I definitely won’t send you guys to your deaths.” Pang Bo turned around and said to Wang Zi Wen, Liu Yun Zhi and the others: “You guys help to protect the three of them, I’m going over to help Ye Fan. Some others should follow me as well, if we go on defending like this it will eventually be disastrous.”

“Okay, I’ll go forward with you.” Zhou Yi strode forward.

Pang Bo never felt good about Zhou Yi and felt that he was a scheming person, however when it came to crucial moments this refined man certainly was courageous.

At this moment, the gentle-looking Wang Zi Wen also walked forward and said to the people by his side: “One or two more people can come with us, the rest with Buddha artifacts should be able to protect everyone here. The ladies please stay back.”

When faced with these ferocious looking creatures, females were usually weak willed and going forward may cause more harm than good. Even if they did have Buddha artifacts they may not be helpful.

“Klang!”

Pang Bo went forward and immediately wielded his bronze plaque, heavily smashing it on the five colour stone altar. A wave of dazzling light was created that went forth seven to eight metres and engulfed the crocodiles that were in its path.

The dying cries made their scalps numb, as though a bunch of evil ghosts were being refined. Residual white smoke hung in the air as the ground is littered with corpses and burnt smell permeated the area.

This was a large scale attack and it was not like previously where there was only one crocodile. Although Pang Bo could not match up to the speed of the creatures, but with so many of the ferocious creatures attacking, wielding the bronze plaque and casually swinging it around could smash up to tens of crocodiles.

“Dong!……”

The melodious chimes of the bell could be heard, as though it came from a temple deep in the mountains, giving one the impression that it came from far away. Wang Zi Wen’s damaged bronze bell sent forth ripples of golden light. These ripples seemed gentle and were like waves however when they came in contact with the crocodiles they transformed into butcher knives and tore right through the crocodiles with the passing of each golden light.

“Chi!Chi!Chi!” kept sounding out as more than ten crocodiles were rend apart and fresh blood dyed the floor making the scene very gruesome.

Even with all this, the number of crocodiles continued to grow and had already reached a mass of one thousand. They were fearless and kept charging forward, seemingly like the scythes of a death god.

“Bang!”

Zhou Yi used his alms bowl to continually smash, sweeping forth a large ray of Buddhist light which crushed many, leaving black scales that littered the floor with the miserable corpses of the crocodiles, many had turned to meat pulp and it was hard to differentiate between the blood and the soil.

This was an extremely cruel scene, for survival the few people used their all and fresh blood dyed the large altar. The overwhelming smell of blood filled the air, one could see faint blood mists as if Asura had passed through.

“Aaahh...”

“Aaahh...”

At this moment, two screams sounded out from the back. Two classmates were lying in a pool of blood and their foreheads had many finger sized holes. Their body was crawling with crocodiles and black scales could be seen everywhere.

Everyone was filled with sorrow, life and death were not in their control, although they had struggled so hard two classmates had

still inadvertently died.

These two people had shared a single Buddha artifact but were attacked by three to four hundred crocodiles. The force from the attack was so enormous that they were knocked into the air and they lost their grips on their Buddha artifact. Thereafter they were overwhelmed by the crocodiles and died a horrible death.

“Don’t let go of the artifacts no matter what!” Lin Jia loudly shouted to remind the group.

Many people were being knocked around by the force of the attacks and because they were sharing the Buddha artifacts their movements were restricted making it especially dangerous.

“Aaahh…”

“Aaahh…”

Another two screams could be heard, a male and female student fell into a pool of blood, fresh blood was flowing out from the holes on their foreheads as they died in regret.

The people at the back hurriedly grouped together and while defending together they began to counterattack, using their Buddha artifacts to attack the crocodiles the situation had managed to stabilise.

“Kill!” Liu Yun Zhi’s face was void of colour, his personality was

sombre and his courage was lacking but at this moment he wielded his Vajra and rushed out.

In the legends of Buddhism there was a powerful sacred object that could exterminate foes with impunity, like killing chickens and dogs. No stronghold one cannot overcome*, a matchless tool that was once used by Buddhist saints.

[T/N* idiom: Nothing one can't do]

Streaks of white crackled with blinding incandescence as the surroundings of Liu Yun Zhi was covered with mystical and showy lights. The Vajra swept across the field and mowing down thousands, leaving behind a river of blood and countless black scales. In a large area, all the crocodiles were trampled upon.

It was evident that the Vajra was exceptionally powerful!

At this moment, Carter also dashed forward while rambling incessantly as he wielded his wooden fish and attacked haphazardly.

"God is merciful!" Although he shouted in this manner, his actions were firm. The broken wooden fish looked as though it will fall apart any moment but still contained a mystical power within.

The three Bodhisattva that were engraved on the wooden fish became images of light as they floated out and shrouded Carter, sweeping away the surrounding crocodiles

“Oh god, is this the angel you have sent from up above? Let’s hurry and kill these demons from hell!” Under this tense situation Carter was suddenly able to speak fluently in Chinese and constantly hollered out.

“You yellow skinned devil, what you’re carrying is an artifact from Buddha, don’t talk nonsense……” In this life and death struggle Pang Bo could not resist laughing at Carter’s antics.

Carter’s constant ramblings continued and he loudly shouted: “God has said that all men are made equal in his eyes. God is compassionate and Buddha must be an angel.”

“A farts ass is your god, everyone being equal. Buddha is filled with compassion, that is the teachings of Buddha……”

The bickering between the two people made the large altar that was once only filled with the aura of death suddenly fill with a strange atmosphere.

The fresh blood on the large altar coagulated and flew towards the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams, causing the once nearly collapsed portal to once again light up.

It was clear that everyone noticed this and let out looks of glee.

“Kill! The more we kill the better! These crocodiles are the descendants of a great demon and their blood is filled with

demon's blood. The altar can convert this blood into energy for the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams!"

"That's right, the five coloured stone altar was a sacrificial altar, in the distant past it must have been used for blood sacrifices as well."

The Tai Chi Eight Trigrams was slowly becoming clearer and the lights continued to flash as the eight symbols continued to rearrange themselves as they followed a complex pattern, changing multiple times before finally lighting up and opening the ancient route among the stars.

"Boom!"

At this moment a horrible presence could be felt from the Great Lei Yin Temple, the ground shattered and a monstrously large creature had risen into the sky.

Almost immediately everyone felt as though their souls had left their body and several people collapsed onto the altar.

Two large lantern-like eyes were travelling in the darkness from afar at a very high speed!

"That is actually the crocodile ancestor from legends that was sealed by Buddha under the Great Lei Yin Temple, If it really managed to escape its confinement, who in this world would be able to stop it?!"

Everybody felt frozen, their emotions were filled with hopelessness, even if there was a manifestation of Buddha it may not have been sufficient to stop such a matchless demon. Only if Buddha himself appeared was there a chance.

Could it be that at this crucial moment they would all be killed by the monster from legends?

“Klang!”

At this moment, the large bronze coffin on the five coloured stone altar let out a shuddering noise and the two lantern-like eyes hesitated and no longer moved forward.

# Chapter 22: Bronze Coffin Repels The Demon

Everyone was feeling mentally tired and their souls felt like they would leave their body at any time. The peerless crocodile ancestor's roar held unimaginable strength and seemed to shock them to their very soul.

If it were not for the weird metallic noise emitted from the bronze coffin, the situation would have already been disastrous.

The cruel aura covered the entire area making it seem like a tsunami in the rough, although the demon that had escaped from the confines of the Great Lei Yin Temple did not continue forward, the aura it was emitting was sufficient to suffocate most people and their souls trembled.

The demonic aura was suffocating and enveloped the entire area, even the dust storm had been stopped because of it. The two lantern-like eyes continued to stare at the group.

Its main body could not been seen clearly as though there were black clouds surrounding it, covering the stars and the moon, shrouding the skies.

Although the crocodile ancestor was not by their side, the imposing pressure emanating from it was not something normal humans could endure and many people on the large altar had already fallen to the ground. Even though they held Buddha artifacts in their hands, it was not enough to mitigate the pressure

from suffocating them.

This is the grand demon that Buddha personally sealed? It should have been an existence found only in legends but now they were actually seeing it in reality in front of their eyes, it simply felt like a dream.

Being a modern man living in the city, who would have seen such a frightening scene? Everybody felt as though this was too unreal, everything they saw and heard was too frightening and astonishing!

The crocodile ancestor had already escaped its confines after being sealed for untold years, the blue sea turned into mulberry fields*, temples had fallen to ruin, the Great Lei Yin Temple had turned to dust, the artifacts were here but god was not, who could possibly stop it?

[T/N – Idiom: transformations of the world]

“Roar!”

Suddenly, the crocodile ancestor let out a thunderous bellow, as though tens of thousands of lightning bolts were ringing by their ears, immediately a portion of the group fell to the ground. This was not a direct attack but rather just the vibrations from the sound waves and it was already enough to overwhelm people, a few were even bleeding from their noses and ears.

“Zaah Zaah” could be heard again and outside the five coloured stone altar it was covered in black, an unfathomable amount of crocodiles were surrounding the area and could pierce through the veil of light at any time. The crocodile ancestor could command these small crocodiles and it seemed to be frightened of the bronze coffin and thus commanded these descendants to go forth and test.

“Get up! Quick, get up!”

The few who had fallen to the ground were bleeding from their ears and noses and were too weak to move. They could barely hold on to their Buddha artifacts and it was telling how frightening the roar was.

Under the urging voices some people finally stood up but there were still two who reacted too slowly and were swallowed by wave upon wave of little crocodiles.

There were no miracles, two muted cries sounded out as their Buddha artifacts left their hands, two more had lost their lives. Blood and brain matter was flying everywhere as the crocodiles were fighting to enter their skulls first painting a very gruesome scene.

The others had no time to save the two as they found themselves surrounded by thousands of crocodiles. It would be difficult to even care for themselves.

Till now, already thirteen people had lost their lives and the remaining seventeen were in peril. Life and death was in the

balance at any time another could perish.

Lights were flashing as everyone wielded their Buddha artifacts to block the surrounding cold blooded killers. They wanted to have a chance at living and even the weaker willed females when pushed to a corner forgot to cry and pressed on.

The most dangerous thing had happened, those who were sharing their Buddha artifacts were now in a perilous situation as they were shackled down by each other and their movements hindered.

“Roar!!”

In the distance, the crocodile ancestor let out a roar. Noticing that the bronze coffin had no reaction its aura expanded powerfully, swallowing clouds and blowing out fog* , as it slowly made its way over. Two blood red eyes as big as washbasins were flashing in the darkness as though there were two blood red moons in the sky.

[T/N – Idiom: to blow out smoke]

As it got closer it became harder for everyone to continue standing, the frightening pressure that emanated from it was something that could only be forged from killing millions of lives. Causing one’s three immortal souls and seven mortal forms to tremble and even wanting to escape the physical body.

It was now no further than ten metres away however it was still impossible to see its body clearly. All that could be seen were two blood red eyes that filled the group with despair.

“Wu Wu……” suddenly a gust of evil wind swept through the heavens and the earth. It was as if there were wailing like ghosts and to howling like wolves*. This was many times stronger than the sandstorm outside giving one an illusion of a thousand lightning bolts splitting apart the earth.

[T/N* Idiom]

Within the black fog which shrouded the area, a big black hand could be seen clawing towards the five coloured stone altar. Its shape was similar to a human hand but it was enormous, the fingers alone were seven to eight metres in length and an awe-inspiring black colour, making many people shiver in fright.

This was a peerless demon that Buddha had personally sealed!

Although it had already been sealed for countless years, it had finally been released and still contained unmatched power and influence.

At this instant the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams in the sky had finally fully formed from all the energy gathered from the fresh blood of the slain crocodiles. The eight symbols were all lit up letting off a dazzling light and the portal had reappeared.

“Boom!”

There was a dull vibration and the dark portal on the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams had fully opened, exposing a large and mysterious pathway that led to some unknown place.

The hand that was reaching forward was blocked to the side by a mysterious force and the nine dragon corpses that were initially peacefully silent suddenly began to tremble.

The dragons which were similar existences to god had already become corpses but at this moment they were like boundless existences, giving off the mighty aura of dragons! The crocodiles on the five coloured stone altar began to tremble as they were forced to prostrate on the ground, they were in complete awe and eventually receded like the waves of the ocean and backed away.

What was left on the large altar was a ground littered with little crocodile corpses and few human corpses, it was suddenly silent all around.

“Go! Enter the bronze coffin!” Ye Fan was the first to get up as he helped to lift Pang Bo up.

The group were not incompetent but it was the peerless demon itself that was unprecedented. The pressure released by it was lethal to normal people. The overflowing demonic qi filled the skies that would shock any mortal to death.

Everyone was shaking as they forced themselves off the ground, they were of one mind, wanting to enter the bronze coffin. The portal had already been opened but relying on just the flesh to go through would undeniably be foolish. Although the bronze coffin was certainly disturbing in nature, under these circumstances it was the preferable option.

In the darkness, the crocodile ancestor's eyes grew colder as the crimson eyes let out two dazzling streaks of blood red light that intersected to seal the Tai Chi Eight Trigrams in the sky.

Seeing this scene made everyone's face drain of colour.

This peerless demon was unwilling to give up after coming this far and had used a divine demonic technique in an attempt to seal the ancient route among the stars to block off the only route of escape available to these people. At the same time, the large black hand was sweeping down again and easily broke through the last remaining vestiges of the veil of light and headed straight for the large altar.

Everybody was shocked as they hurried to enter the bronze coffin, "Deng Deng Deng" as they ran backwards. The large hand was falling down but its target was not the group of people but rather the bronze coffin!

"Clink!"

The large black hand was holding onto the bronze coffin and a "Ka Clink" was emitted, everyone's heart dropped as they

imagined how powerful this peerless demon that was once sealed by Buddha was, if there was no extraordinary response from the mysterious bronze coffin nobody in the group had any other ideas.

While the group was petrified, the large black and scaly hands of the crocodile ancestor suddenly pulled back like a fleeing serpent, the palm and fingers on the hand were actually dripping with blood and a river of blood spilt onto the large altar. It seemed as though the bronze coffin had injured the demon!

Even so the ancient coffin was still silent and motionless as it lay on the large altar. Not far away there was a cold and shrill laughter, the crocodile ancestor was struggling to control its anger and hatred and the sound it let out made them feel chills.

“What should we do? The ancient route among the stars has been sealed by the demon. How are are we going to escape?” Many people were terrified, there was actually a way out of this mess but suddenly it was taken away leaving them distressed and shocked.

“Energy..... What we need is more energy to open the ancient route among the stars!”

“What’s going on? The Buddha artifacts in our hands are gradually losing their divine lustre!” Someone shouted in alarm.

At this moment whether it be Ye Fan with his bronze lamp, Pang Bo with his bronze plaque or even Zhou Yi and the rest with their alms bowl and such, the divine lustre that was inherent in the artifacts were gradually dissipating outwards and gathering

together.

Suddenly, a cold cry which sounded like the hooting of an owl in the night sounded out as a two metre tall humanoid figure appeared in front of the bronze coffin. Everyone was taken by surprise as lights emitted from the various Buddha artifacts were being channeled towards that figure.

This humanoid figure had a devilish aura and its surrounding was covered in roiling black clouds, its face could not be seen clearly however everyone knew that it was definitely the crocodile ancestor! It had actually appeared on the large altar and wanted to enter the large bronze coffin, it did not care about the group of people within and its two blood red eyes were staring directly at the smaller bronze coffin within!

This was something that had once fought against Buddha, something of legends had appeared in front of everyone's eyes and this scenario would stick with them throughout the rest of their lives, it was simply a jolt to the soul.

"Boom!"

When faced with the demonic pressure from the crocodile ancestor, all the Buddha artifacts seemed to be burning as they gave off dazzling lights and gathered together to cover the crocodile ancestor.

At the same time the bronze lamp, bronze plaque, alms bowl, Vajra, fish drum and other Buddha artifacts shone brighter than ever as they flew together towards the sky and finally towards the

crocodile ancestor attempting to seal it!

A cold and cynical laughter that could chill the bone could be heard, the peerless crocodile ancestor gently shook his body and immediately black lights burst forth as demonic flames overflowed.

All the Buddha artifacts were stopped right before him, starting with the Futon then the ruler and a few other Buddha artifacts, sounds of disintegration could be heard. “Chi!” and the Futon had become dust, another sound and the ruler was next thereafter two other Buddha artifacts also turned to dust.

The four Buddha artifacts that had disintegrated let out a dazzling brilliance as they fell onto the five coloured stone altar and supplied the portal with a powerful and mysterious energy.

The nine dragon corpses started trembling and let out a rumbling noise before gradually lifting into the air!

The crocodile ancestor was shocked, after bypassing the bronze lamp and the few other Buddha artifacts, it leapt to the skies and its right hand suddenly became enormous as it covered the sky and swept towards the nine dragon corpses.

At this point, the bronze lamp, plaque and other artifacts seemed as though they had a mind of their own as they individually let off a blazing divine fire that was extremely glaring and swept towards the crocodile ancestor.

The sky was filled with endless flashing lights that were a sight to behold but nobody could directly stare at it and thus nobody saw that the nine dragon corpses had been halted by the crocodile ancestor.

“Dong!” “Dong!”

A clear sound resounded from the large altar as the Malas, bronze plaque, alms bowl and other artifacts all fell to the ground. They were dull once again and even the fire within the bronze lamp had finally been extinguished.

“The nine dragon corpses have been blocked, what should we do?!” Everybody was anxious.

The bronze coffin had yet to leave the ground and the nine dragon corpses were halted in mid air, it would be difficult to enter the portal.

Everybody ran out of the bronze coffin to retrieve their dull Buddha artifacts, Pang Bo was swift and also deftly took the water bottles from the few corpses on the ground.

Ye Fan on the other hand took off his top and gathered a big bag of the black scales that littered the floor.

At this moment, there was a violent trembling that came from the skies, everybody was shocked and hurriedly returned to the bronze coffin.

The large bronze coffin let out a metallic noise as the nine dragon corpses suddenly swung their enormous tails at the black hand and with a “Bang!” the hand was knocked away.

“Boom!”

A loud noise came from the skies as the nine dragon corpses resumed their slow progress forwards toward the portal. “Klang!” The bronze coffin started to shake and flipped a little making everyone feel as though the world had been turned upside down.

The crocodile ancestors blood red glare was incomparably cold, it had wanted to enter the large bronze coffin when the lid had not shut earlier and its target was still the smaller bronze coffin within!

At this moment, on the inner walls within the bronze coffin that were covered with rust, the bronze engravings of ancient ancestors and gods as well as those of the beasts all gave off a hazy light. This stopped the crocodile ancestor in its tracks and as though it suddenly recalled something, its two eyes shot forth two streams of cold blood red light and with a “Deng Deng Deng” it took a few step back.

“Klang!” The lid of the bronze coffin shut and the nine dragon corpses pulling the bronze coffin flew through the air breaking through the blood red seal created by the crocodile ancestor and entered into the portal.

# Chapter 23: Within The Coffin

In the darkness there were people crying and also people trembling. Once they closed their eyes images of pierced foreheads, blood and brain matter splattering would fly through their minds like an endless nightmare. It was a ghost that stuck to their hearts.

It was hard to forget the images of their classmates who had died so tragically, their blood splattered countenance and that look of despair in their open eyes. The faces of these young adults kept appearing before their eyes, they had been classmates for four years and thirteen of them had died on the same day.

Although they were temporarily safe now, many people were unable to find peace and some were even more frightened as they recalled the gruesome deaths of their classmates and the ferocious crocodiles. These images constantly played through their minds and was something they would remember for the rest of their lives.

It was pitch black within the bronze coffin, there were female students crying and male students sighing. Although they had escaped, their future was unknown and one could only imagine what lies ahead.

Nine dragons pulling a bronze coffin, what was on the other side? Where was paradise? They had yet to see the light but already seen endless suffering. Were they really on the ancient route that the gods once took? The place where all the gods resided, what kind of place could it be?

It was a long time before the chatter within the bronze coffin finally died down. Based on the timing regulations on Earth, it was already late in the evening and everyone was tired in both soul and body and had all fallen into a deep sleep.

Many people continued to be nervous and frightened in their dreams as they held their Buddha artifacts tightly. They wanted to find something to lean and rely on.

It was a torturous night, many people had difficulty sleeping peacefully and often awoke in fright from the nightmares they had. Some girls even awoke to find themselves crying, they were not weak but the events they had been through were far too terrifying. If something was only a story no matter how terrifying or gruesome it was it would still only be a story. However having personally experienced such horrors, the effects were apparent.

A group of people who had lived their peaceful lives within the city had suddenly gone through a tumultuous series of tragic events that were more and more shocking. Personally witnessing a demon from legends, their classmates corpses being eaten and the people by their side dying one by one. How could one remain unafraid?

Even Pang Bo who was such a carefree person could not fall asleep easily. His heart was not flustered but the actions of the surrounding people kept jolting him awake. Ye Fan was in a similar situation as him, finding difficulty sleeping as the people beside him were either talking or crying in their sleep.

Only five to six hours had passed and a large majority of them

had already woken up. After another two hours everyone's hearts finally settled and became peaceful. At this moment, the bronze coffin was in transit towards an unknown destination in the universe and each person was wondering on the realities of the situation they were in.

The bronze coffin was very stable and there was not even the slightest of vibrations making it seem as though it had already stopped within a star system. Was there still another stop? It was well within the realm of possibility that they were trapped in the bronze coffin to endlessly float in the deep dark reaches of space.

"What sort of place do you think we will arrive at?"

After all the crying and venting of frustrations, even the weaker willed female students could not help wondering.

"Will we reach the land where the gods reside?"

The ancient route among the stars was created by their ancestors and in that far away place there may really be gods. Who knew what kind of mysterious world they would end up in.

"Do gods really exist? We've already seen nine dragons pulling a bronze coffin, the Great Lei Yin Temple from legends and finally the crocodile ancestor that always seemed like a myth. I don't think that there is any reason left to refute the existence of gods. Even so, I find it hard to accept such a reality and based on my current hypothesis I believe that gods may just be a different race and may have even once among us on Earth."

As modern men, almost none of them believed in god but under the current circumstances they had no choice but to face it. Hearing this line of reasoning from Wang Zi Wen made it much easier for them to accept.

“It could be possible that the gods aren’t strangers to us. They could be humans that managed to progress themselves to a point. They could have been a person of renown that we know from the ancient past.”

“Whether it be through progress or being from a special race, we cannot deny that gods exist and it was clear that our ancestors had long been communicating with them.”

The five coloured altars on Jade Emperor’s Peak were constructions of their ancestors and in ages past in the era of the three monarchs, five emperor and twelve kings. They had already climbed to the Jade Emperor’s peak to perform Fengshan sacrifice and this explained many things.

“It could be possible that those gods were our ancestors……”

The three emperors, five kings were god-like ancient characters and in legend they were akin to gods. It could be imagined that performing the Fengshan sacrifice on Mount Tai was not a simple ceremony and there were many possibilities.

They could have been calling out to certain alien life forms within the universe or transmitting some message through the

desolate universe.

It was also possible that they could ascend to the heavens and leave the constraints of the Earth, ancient mother earth was far too small for them and made them feel trapped. They had climbed to the peak of Mount Tai to escape Earth and enter into the vast and limitless space.

Or could it be that Earth was just an inn, those special existences or gods could have a short rest here in their long and limitless lives.

Maybe……

What happened in the ancient past? Nobody could know for sure. There were only “Maybes” and only one thing was certain, their ancestors had opened the portal and explored the depths of space.

“Why aren’t you talking?”

The fire within the bronze lamp had extinguished and within the confines of the bronze coffin it was pitch black. Everyone was huddled closely together. There was someone beside Ye Fan who was leaning against the wall of the coffin but had yet to utter a single word and this drew his attention.

“What’s wrong? Still angry over me beating you up earlier?” Pang Bo was very displeased and coldly said: “You almost pushed Ye Fan off the large altar killing him, beating you up is already

your gain. Even throwing you into the midst of the crocodiles would not be too much."

"Hey, wake up. Talk." One person by his side nudged him.

What happened was unexpected. Not only did the person not respond, his hand fell lifelessly to the floor with a "Plonk!"

"What's the matter with you?!" The person who nudged him was shocked and started to hastily back away.

At this moment everyone started to feel that something was weird. Even if a person was in a deep sleep, having his hand fall to the ground in such a manner would likely wake the person up. However, the person was still motionless and silently laid against the wall like a wooden block.

"Wake up! Quick, wake up!" Pang Bo went forward and shook him trying to wake him up. Seeing this was not working, he started to slap his face around but suddenly he shouted in an alarmed voice: "His skin is so cold! And his body seems stiff!"

Hearing this, everyone once again had their hairs stand on end. From their head to their toes every part of their body was filled with a bad premonition.

Ye Fan also felt that the situation was dire and lifted his hand to place under the nostrils of the student. His expression changed as he said: "Dead, he is no longer breathing."

“What?!” Everybody started to shout out.

A person who was living well and good had suddenly died? Not long before he had been talking in his sleep and was in the throes of his nightmares but he was now dead without any rhyme or reason. This was certainly baffling.

The bronze coffin was once again filled with tension and fear as the group let out deep breaths and their bodies started to feel colder. This was too sudden and having no explanation everyone was tightly holding on to their Buddha artifacts.

“Light up your cell phones. Let’s see exactly how he died.” Ye Fan said while lifting the cell phone within his hand trying to use the faint illumination from the phone to discern what had happened.

It was a deathly white face with large eyes protruding outwards. His mouth was slightly ajar and a streak blood could be seen to have flowed out from his mouth.

“He’s really dead……” The group became even more flustered and scared. A sudden death made them feel their backs cover with cold sweat. There could possibly be something frightening within this bronze coffin.

A few of the more courageous students began to meticulously check his body looking for the cause of death.

“Look over here at his neck!”

There was a purple bruise on his neck, it seemed that he had been strangled by somebody and the purple bruise was a shocking sight.

“Ghost…… There is a ghost within the bronze coffin!” A female student was filled with fear and started to tremble as she said so.

Hearing these words, many people felt their scalps start to numb and the purple bruise with the hand imprints really seemed as though an evil spirit had strangled him to death.

This was especially believable when everyone considered that they were within a coffin and in the centre there was actually a coffin that seemed like the portal to the netherworld. This made many people fearful as they inadvertently started to back away.

Ye Fan frowned as he touched the throat of the corpse and found that the adam’s apple on the neck had been crushed. It was soft there and only the skin was whole and in one piece. Drops of blood stained Ye Fan’s hands as he looked like a bewitching devil, making one’s heart go cold.

“It wasn’t a ghost that did this! It was a human who killed him!” At this moment Liu Yun Zhi had a very solemn look as he coldly swept his gaze towards Ye Fan.

Pang Bo saw his gaze sweep towards Ye Fan and stared him in the eye: “What are you trying to say?”

“From the wound, it is clear that he was strangled to death. Who could possibly strangle him without any sound being emitted?” Liu Yun Zhi’s countenance was very cold and he stared at Ye Fan at Pang Bo saying: “Only those close to him and have exceptional arm strength would be able to do so!”

When these words were said, it was clear who they were directed at. Ye Fan was close to the victim and had an extraordinary physique, he also had great arm strength and this was known by everyone.

“You are talking nonsense!” Pang Bo was incensed and lifted his bronze plaque wanting to swing it.

Liu Yun Zhi coldly laughed and looked at him: “You want to help someone silence me by committing murder?”

Ye Fan restrained Pang Bo from going forward.

“That’s right! It’s Ye Fan! He killed him!” The female student who had always stood by Liu Yun Zhi’s side and helped him countless times began to scream in alarm as she said: “It must be Ye Fan! He must have been filled with hatred from almost being thrown off the altar and this is his revenge!

Hearing these words, the others began to think of the events that had transpired earlier and several people began to step away.

“That’s right! It’s Ye Fan! He killed our fellow classmate!” Li

Chang Qing displayed extreme anger as he said: “It could be that he has an accomplice by his side as well!”

Pang Bo was filled with the impulse to rush over and beat them up.

“Buzz!”

Liu Yun Zhi lifted the Vajra within his hand and immediately a metallic ringing could be heard as a dim light was emitted.

Everyone was shocked, most of the Buddha artifacts in their hands had become dull and were unable to release any splendour but the Vajra within Liu Yun Zhi’s hands actually still had divine energy. This was certainly out of anyone’s expectations.

“Ye Fan, you are too cruel. Although he was wrong initially you should not have taken revenge in such a manner!” Liu Yun Zhi held his Vajra as he slowly walked closer.

“If I said that I didn’t kill anyone, would you guys believe it?” Ye Fan’s gaze swept past the group.

“I would naturally believe!” Pang Bo was the first to stand up.

“I also believe!” Zhang Zi Ling also walked forward.

Ye Fan then looked at the rest of the group and said: “The rest of

you don’t believe me?” Thereafter his eyes rested on Li Xiao Man.

# Chapter 24: Confrontation And Choices

“Now it not the time to question whether we believe you or not…… You are indeed the biggest suspect with the largest motive.” Carter who was by Li Xiao Man’s side voiced out in broken Mandarin.

Pang Bo looked Carter in the eyes and said: “Yellow skinned devil, what is your meaning? What gives you the right to say that the victim was killed by Ye Fan.”

“No*, I’m not being subjective … instead i’m actually being objective here. I never said he was… the murderer, i’m only bringing up the facts, the suspicions… are not small.” Carter spoke with a serious and resolute tone. He thought hard and gave an analysis:”

What Liu Yun Zhi said… makes sense, the deceased and Ye Fan had conflicts, there is a motive for… murder. Moreover the distance… is very close, the conditions for acting out… is fulfilled.

[T/N: The No* is in English, the rest in broken Chinese]

Although he did not speak very fluently, everyone in the group understood his meaning and like many people in the west, they liked to base their conclusions based on facts and evidence.

“Devil, you really don’t know anything about the ways of the world. Something so obvious and yet you have to make it sound like a mathematical problem. One-track minded!”

“What is this..... devil?”* Carter was confused and said: “I’ve heard you say this many times.... however what does it mean?”

[T/N* It is a derogatory way of address that Chinese people use on westerners]

“You are a devil with a one-track mind. I’d rather not explain myself.” Pang Bo said snappily and ignored him. Thereafter he turned to look at Li Xiao Man and said: “Why don’t you say anything? You should have a good understanding of Ye Fan right?”

Li Xiao Man was slender and elegant, under the dim illumination from the cell phones she seemed like a fresh lotus giving off a delicate fragrance in the darkness. Her face was calm as she gently said: “Based on my heart I don’t believe that Ye Fan is the killer however he is the most suspicious person right now.....”

“Li Xiao Man!” Pang Bo was infuriated and loudly interrupted her: “You are really heartless! Don’t you get it? Even though you guys have already broken up, there’s no need to be so heartless! Do you really want to sprinkle salt on Ye Fan’s wounds?”

“I don’t have any other intentions, I’m just saying the facts only.” Li Xiao Man was calm as she said this. Her complexion was beautiful and her skin as white as jade as she wrinkled her brows and said: “I haven’t been acting against anyone. I only want to say that since the murderer dares to kill someone, there isn’t anything that he won’t dare to do. Under these circumstances we are all in grave danger and I wish for more objectivity and less subjectivity. The truth is Ye Fan is the most suspicious and the other people also have a small amount of suspicion on them.”

Pang Bo sardonically said: “In the end you still say that Ye Fan is the most suspicious meaning that you don’t believe in him. Why bother talking so much!” He heavily turned his head as he said: “I’ve really been mistaken in my opinion of you. In the past I thought that once you made your decision on matters your friends would never be able to convince you otherwise. Now I understand that it isn’t that your personality is firm or decisive but rather cold-hearted and emotionless.”

At this moment a nervous and weak voice sounded out: “I..... I believe in Ye Fan, I believe that..... he is not the killer.” It was the gaunt looking female classmate, her body was scrawny and delicate as she walked over with her head looking downwards. It was clear that she was very nervous.

The originally innocent and happy young lady after living years of disappointment her esteem was low and was no longer bubbly. It was difficult for her to speak properly in front of everyone and it could seen she was ill at ease.

This was also the main reason why Ye Fan felt especially compassionate towards her.

Pang Bo was similar to Ye Fan and also felt compassion towards this timid female student. She certainly was not like this in university, she used to joke around with Pang Bo and Ye Fan, talking and laughing like pearls*, the three had an exceptionally good relationship. Being with her made it easy for one to feel happiness.

[T/N: The Chinese text is 笑语如珠, not sure if it's a typo ]

"Liu Yi Yi, thank you!" Ye Fan laughingly looked at her and nodded.

"No need for thanks, I believe that you are not a killer....." Liu Yi Yi's voice was weak and made one feel pity as she stood there ill at ease.

"If it isn't him, who could it be?!" Li Chang Qing angrily continued: "Beside Ye Fan, who else would have a motive for killing?! This is his revenge!"

The female student who was by Liu Yun Zhi's side once again spoke up: "Ye Fan how could you be so heartless! That was our classmate who we all knew for four years!"

"Let me repeat, I did not kill anyone." Ye Fan spoke with firmness as well as calmness and responsibly said: "You can suspect me, but until matters have been investigated clearly please refrain from splashing dirty water at me*."

[T/N* Chinese way of saying 'don't frame me']

"The truth is in front of our eyes, you and the victim are right next to each other and the closest, no one could possibly bypass you to kill him without anyone else noticing. You are also the only one with a motive!"

Pang Bo's temper was short and could not hold it in as he angrily said: "Can you be more reasonable, before we reach a conclusion to who actually is the murderer, stop placing a feces bowl over other people's heads*. I really don't understand after graduation what happened. If i said it nicely you and Liu Yun Zhi parted ways, if i were to say it the way it was, it would be that Liu Yun Zhi ditched you! You were hateful of him! Why are you eagerly sticking to his side now, helping him beat the gongs and drums**"

[T/N* Refers to making a scapegoat or framing someone]

[T/N** Refers to making a big hoo-ha and blatantly spreading out information to the public]

"You..... This is a personal attack!" The female student's face become white with anger as her body trembled and she pointed towards Pang Bo.

"Attack? That's right, attack chicken!*" Pang Bo was someone who was unwilling to be at a disadvantage and his mouth was quite venomous at times as he said: "This is what I call using a poison to fight a poison, seeing a human we speak human language, seeing a ghost we speak ghost language and what about seeing a toad? We just need to use our spittle to drown it!"

[T/N* Author uses a play on words 攻击, 攻鸡. While the former refers to Attack the latter refers to Attack chicken. The way both words are read are similar in Chinese.]

"You!" The female student was tremble and too angry to say anything more.

Liu Yun Zhi's expression was gloomy as he said: "Enough! Pang Bo are you still a man? Is there any meaning to saying all this?" The Vajra in his hands was still releasing dim lights and it was especially striking in the darkness. It reminded the group that he held power and if there were any altercations it was unlikely that anyone could go against him.

Pang Bo also looked gloomy as he said: "It's because the killer isn't Ye Fan but you guys are pestering endlessly. This is what I call using an enemy's own methods to obtain retribution*."

[T/N* refers to get revenge by playing back at his own game]

Ye Fan's gaze swept from Li Xiao Man and looked at the others. At this moment three students stepped forward and said: "We believe that Ye Fan didn't kill anyone."

Together with Liu Yi Yi, Zhang Zi Ling and Pang Bo, there were already six people standing on Ye Fan's side. If Ye Fan was included that was seven people and there were only 16 people left in the group. It would seem that Ye Fan's side was fast reaching half the number of people in the group.

Lin Jia was beautiful and her body was slender, her double eyelids gave her a very natural flair and under the current circumstances she spoke calmly but still seemed enchanting and charming.

"I also feel that it can't be Ye Fan, we know his character and he

isn't that kind of vicious person. He has never been a calculative person……"

Li Chang Qing was displeased and interrupted her speech saying: "Besides him who else could it be! Does anyone among us seem like we are able to kill other? Who would have those kinds of thoughts!"

Pang Bo was immediately infuriated and glared over saying: "Li Chang Qing can you be any less lacking in moral sense! Can you still find any other reasons to splash some dirty water? I would really love to press this bronze plaque down on your face! Such an arbitrary argument and you actually dare to bring it out?!"

"I can't be bothered to reason with you!" Li Chang Qing was too angry and turned away. Even now his face was still swollen from the beating given by Pang Bo on the stone altar.

"I also believe in Ye Fan, he's not that kind of person. He would never do such a vicious thing." At this moment, Wang Zi Wen walked over and chose to believe in Ye Fan.

Zhou Yi had been a bystander from the start and at this point he made a choice. Seeing the divine light emitted from the Vajra within Liu Yun Zhi's hand then at the calm and composed countenance of Ye Fan, he said: "We can't easily make a conclusion who is the killer. I also believe that Ye Fan did not kill the classmate."

At this moment a large majority of the people stood on Ye Fan's side. He knew that some people were genuine while some people

had only acted after considering the flow of the situation. They believed that since he could be so calm when faced with Liu Yun Zhi's Vajra, he must have a trump card and therefore made a speculative bet.

"If it isn't Ye Fan who could it be. Is it possible that the killer could be someone else from among us?" Liu Yun Zhi coldly said as he stared at Ye Fan followed by Pang Bo.

"Please keep your attitude in check! Don't think that just because you're holding a glowing stick others will be afraid of you!." Pang Bo was indifferent and fiercely said: "Even with my dull bronze plaque I can still smack you into disability!"

The colour on Liu Yun Zhi's face drained as he gripped the Vajra tightly and walked closer!

Ye Fan held onto Pang Bo who wanted to rush over and faced the group speaking in a stern and earnest voice: "I can tell everyone that the killer isn't in our midst."

[T/N We are currently trying a slightly different format by leaving the original direct translation for the Chinese idiom then leaving the actual meaning as a note below do let us know if you like it!]

[T/N This author sure loves his idioms]

# Chapter 25: The Bell Sounds Of Heaven

“What?!”

Everybody was shocked, they believed that Ye Fan was not the sort to spout nonsense and must have discovered something. Even Li Chang Qing and the girl beside Liu Yun Zhi who purposely targeted Ye Fan earlier had their faces drained of colour as they nervously looked at their surroundings.

Ye Fan was staring at the group and scrutinising their every action. Throughout this process he saw those that could remain as still as lake water and also understood who was real and who was fake. Only now did he start to speak up for himself and started to talk on a few important ambiguities.

“You guys can personally touch his throat, the adam’s apple is crushed and regardless of how strong a human is they can’t possibly do that.”

Someone stooped down and personally placed his hand on the victim’s neck to verify Ye Fan’s words while more people backed away. When faced with a corpse that had died from unknown causes, their hearts were filled with fear. If it was not a person who caused this death, then what could have done so? Everyone started to feel the chills again.

“Ye Fan, do you know what that thing is? Will it..... find us as well?” Someone shivered as he asked.

The purple bruise scarring the corpse's neck really seemed like a vicious ghost had left its fingerprints, thinking of this many people began looking towards the coffin in the centre of the area.

"We haven't really escaped from the crocodiles……"

Hearing Ye Fan say this, everyone was terrified and held onto the Buddha artifacts tightly as they nervously looked at their surroundings.

A female student said while sobbing: "Is it that crocodile ancestor that was sealed under the Great Lei Yin temple that managed to get in?"

That was a peerless demon and it was Buddha who personally sealed it. The group had seen its demonic magnificence and would remember it for life, the sort of power that could shake the heavens and that frightening strength was incomparable.

"It can't be! It didn't follow us in! It can't be it!" Li Chang Qing was ghastly pale, he did not have any Buddha artifact on him and was nervously sticking to Liu Yun Zhi while holding tightly to the Vajra.

"I didn't say that the crocodile ancestor follow us in. What I meant was that some small crocodiles managed to sneak into the large coffin." Having said this he crouched down and used the dim light from his phone to shine on the corpse's face saying: "His face is filled with terror with eyes wide open, similar to the expressions on our thirteen deceased classmates."

“I saw a few records about it in an article from a book regarding ancient history, it mentioned about the divine crocodile. In addition to the depictions of the beast, it was known to devour humans, breaking down minds and even taking their souls.” Ye Fan still held the bronze lamp in his hand even though the fire had already extinguished as though he wanted to guard against something and said: “This isn’t a coincidence, the condition of the corpses after death is identical to the thirteen other students and same as what was recorded in the ancient text. Their expressions are stricken and locked in fear, it must be the doing of the crocodiles.”

Ye Fan was not squeamish of the corpse and pried open its mouth. Indeed there was a hole inside that entered from the roof of the mouth into the skull. The students immediately felt their hairs stand as they looked at that small hole that was identical to those found on the other dead students.

Only the frightening crocodiles could easily pierce through the human body and biting apart the adam’s apple was certainly not a problem.

A crocodile had actually managed to enter the large bronze coffin, exactly how many were there? The Buddha artifacts had lost their divine glows and it was unknown whether they could still defend against the attacks. This made the group very apprehensive.

“Does this mean that the crocodile is still within his body?”

“It’s hard to tell.” Ye Fan shook his head.

“It’s still within his body! There’s something moving within his chest!” Zhang Zi Ling suddenly shouted and pointed towards the corpse’s chest.

“Chi!”

There was a splatter of blood and a familiar ferocious creature had shown its sharp head from the corpse’s chest. It was precisely the ten centimetre long crocodile! It transformed into a black light and headed straight for Ye Fan’s forehead.

“Bang!”

Ye Fan was quick to react and attempted to use the bronze lamp to block. A few small fireballs shot forth and the crocodile let out a shrill cry as it was hit by one of the fireballs. It had been almost completely burnt through and was sent tumbling away.

“Dong!”

Pang Bo also reacted quickly as he wielded his bronze plaque and heavily smashed it on the ground. Little rays of divine light shone out as the bronze plaque smashed the crocodile into meat pulp.

“Liu Yun Zhi do you still have any words you want to say?” Pang Bo held on to his bronze plaque and questioned.

“I was overly impetuous and didn’t consider the possibility of a crocodile making it into the coffin.” Liu Yun Zhi did not say anything more, neither did he apologise. Since events had already reached this stage where they were in open opposition there was no need to retain any niceties between them.

“SMACK!”

At this moment, Pang Bo suddenly acted and a big slap viciously struck onto Liu Yun Zhi’s face.

Throughout this process, the Vajra and the bronze plaque let out dim glows at the same time that seemed to collide and envelope the two of them. This was however unable to prevent the slap and Liu Yun Zhi’s face took a solid smack as blood slowly drizzled out of his mouth.

“Pardon me, I was also too rash.” Pang Bo said sarcastically.

“You!”

The group hurriedly separated the two and prevented them from going against each other. Liu Yun Zhi’s face was especially gloomy and wanted to rush over with his Vajra in hand. As he calmed down he remembered that the bronze plaque also let out bits of divine light and he decided to control himself for now.

“Hush”

Ye Fan suddenly motioned for everyone to keep silent and looked towards the coffin in the centre of the area as though he was listening for something. Thereafter he asked the crowd: “Did you guys hear anything?”

Everyone was alarmed as they had not heard anything. Ye Fan had a perturbed expression as he finally slowly walked towards the four metre long bronze coffin.

At this moment, the Bodhi seed by his chest started to heat up and made his solar plexus feel comfortably warm. It was also at this time that he heard an even clearer sound.

He could not control himself as his hand moved forward towards the coffin in the centre. The top was covered in rust and the engravings were of ancient ancestors and gods giving off a feeling of simplicity yet having experienced great changes.

At this moment, he could feel that the Bodhi seed had forcefully opened a door for him to allow him to hear this unique music.

Initially the sound was quite small however it became louder and louder as the Bodhi seed continued to grow hotter.

Bodhi tree also known as the Tree of Knowledge, Tree of Awakening and Tree of Contemplation. In legend Shakyamuni had attained enlightenment under the Bodhi Tree. The Bodhi Seed that Ye Fan had in his possession had a naturally occurring Buddha portrait on it and this was certainly extraordinary.

The noise given off from the mysterious and ancient bronze coffin in front of him became louder and louder as though it was the great Dao of heaven resounding and also seem like the profound truth.

“It is the way of heaven to take from what is in excess in order to make good what is in deficit*…….”

[T/N* Excerpt from one of Laozi’s quotes.]

The mysterious heavenly sounds of the Great Dao. The first sentence actually originated from a famous saying in a Taoist classic, the rest however was something that had never been heard of before and was difficult to understand.

The loud and sonorous sound seemed as though it came from an ancient wilderness and had transcended time-space. Eventually it seem like the ‘yellow bell’s grand pitch*’, causing sound to reverberate in Ye Fan’s ears, imprinting it into his mind.

[T/N*: Idiom: one’s resonant voice rings out, clear as a bell]

# Chapter 26: The Ancient Star Chart

Ye Fan's hand held onto the bronze coffin, his body was still like the moon's silhouette on a lake as he stood there silently. He seemed to transcend the confines of earth and emitting a refined air around him. At this moment, he was graceful yet otherworldly, he 'did not eat the foods of the common mortals*' like an immortal who could ride with the winds at any time.

[T/N: Placing oneself above the common populace]

At this moment his body was not as calm as the inner universe within him; heavenly sounds of the Great Dao that was as deep and vast as the ocean. Each word resonated such that it was like the oceans collapsing causing far-reaching fissures that resounded across the heavens and earth.

Like the chanting from a distant past yet also like a prayer to the desolate gods. It seemed to be endless, as though it had torn through the fabric of time-space and gently flowed into Ye Fan's most inner being, making his mind and soul tremble and losing his bearing.

Like a banished immortal, delicate and 'untainted by even a speck of dust*'; emanating an aura of being free from the earth and dirt, there was a faintly discernable feeling of withdrawing from all worldly affairs.

[Idiom*: Selfless and incorruptible]

A distance away the group watched as he stood there motionless, their expressions were puzzled not entirely sure what was happening. They could only feel that Ye Fan was like an unblemished immortal, free from any impurities and giving off a feeling that he had just been born into this world.

Ye Fan stood there listening to the bell-like divine chants that seemed to be vast and coming from far away but could not understand the meaning of the words within.

The abstruse divine chants were not excessively long and ‘cherished words like gold*‘,that numbered in the hundreds, the simplicity of the Great Dao, prospering till decline, a perception that passing away* is nothing special.

[T/N:* Idiom: not wasting words]

[T/N:** Chinese text is 归真 which means ’to die’ in Buddhism.]

The heavenly sounds like the yellow bell’s grand pitch continued to resound and each word that entered into Ye Fan’s heart felt as vigorous as the shaking of mountains and rivers and thereafter as peaceful as the moon above the sea. Several hundred ancient words had already been clearly carved into Ye Fan’s heart but the divine chants continued endlessly and the sound continued to resound within his ear.

Throughout this entire process the Bodhi seed within Ye Fan’s bosom was warm and made him feel comfortable from head to toe. It was precisely the Bodhi seed that made it possible for Ye Fan to listen to such a profound sound.

It was said in legend that the Bodhi tree could release the divine within a person and help the person attain enlightenment by seizing the way contained within heaven and earth. It was very certain that the Bodhi seed found below the Bodhi tree and beside the Great Lei Yin Temple would be phenomenal.

As Ye Fan stood there silently, people began to feel perturbed and some people suggested pulling him away. He was after all leaning on the bronze coffin and nobody would have associated positive connotations with this.

Pang Bo walked around Ye Fan and carefully scrutinised, he noticed that Ye Fan did not have any expression of pain but rather was giving off an otherworldly feel, seemingly ethereal. The bronze coffin itself also seemed to be emitting a godly presence.

Finally, Pang Bo did not act rashly and decided to stand guard by the side and silently waited.

“There won’t be a demonic possession where a demon possesses him right?” Li Chang Qing stared at the bronze coffin then looked at Ye Fan while saying.

Hearing this the others held firmly onto their Buddha artifacts and some people even stepped away. The ancient and mysterious coffin was filled with unknown factors and this made it unsettling.

“Does your brain grow from your ass? Would it kill you to not throw dirty water at Ye Fan? How can there be such nonsensical

thoughts in your head?" Pang Bo did not bother to be courteous with him. Since the incident at the five coloured stone altar, Li Chang Qing had been acting against him and Ye Fan and he did not give him any face.

"Okay, that's enough. Stop bickering." Zhou Yi frowned as he looked at their surroundings and said: "Currently we don't know if there are still any crocodiles within the confines of the large bronze coffin. Let's be more prudent and carefully search through the place."

The others felt nervous as they heard this, this was the reality of their situation. Since they had found one crocodile, it was impossible to say that there would not be a second or a third one. This concerned the lives and deaths of the group and fourteen of them had already lost their lives. This ferocious and frightening creature was enough to scare the bravest of them.

The group did not disperse too much and only split into two groups to allow them to easily support each other. They lit up their phones as they held on tightly to their Buddha artifacts and started to probe in the darkness.

After carefully going from corner to corner, the two groups gathered together but did not manage to find anything. Even so the group did not lower their guard. The bronze coffin was very large and spacious and it would be easy for a few crocodiles to hide. If any crocodiles hid at the ceiling of the coffin they would also be unable to check as it was too dark.

"Let's be more vigilant, it won't harm us to be more careful." Lin

Jia reminded the group and also comforted them saying: “Even if there are crocodiles, they are also afraid of the Buddha artifacts within our possession. Otherwise they would have attacked us long ago.”

Suddenly, the group heard a weird noise. Although it was soft and could hardly be heard it was able to make one’s soul tremble! The sound of drums seemed to be transmitted from far away, heavy and filled with sorrow. Thereafter the sound of bells chiming could be heard that was filled with grief, seemingly fleeting yet so real.

“Where’s the sound coming from?”

Everybody was stupefied as they looked around but could not seem to find anything.

The dreary sounds of the drum and sorrowful sounds of the bell chimes seemed to come from outside the coffin and made their hair stand on end.

“This..... couldn’t be the burial music that accompanied ancient emperors during their burials..... right?”

Suddenly, more sounds were transmitted over and it seemed to be the sound of untold grief, as though tens of thousands of people were worshipping and praying at a funeral.

The knell of the bell echoed out and the drums let out a sorrowful

beat as though a vast funeral were unfolding before the group's eyes. It seemed as though the world was an endless sea of people that were mourning and in prayer.

At this instant nine high-pitched dragon cries could be heard that seemed to pierce the heavens, tremble the mountains and rivers and spread throughout the earth. It seemed like a real picture that carved the scenes of the history of the cosmos.

At this moment, everybody seemed to have a bizarre feeling as though they were personally witnessing the vicissitudes of the reign of an ancient imperial monarch who once swept the land under heaven and finally the scene of his vast funeral that was on an unprecedented scale.

In actuality there were no pictures and all this was just an illusion created from the cries of the dragons and the prayers of untold numbers of people.

"The Buddha artifacts in our hands are giving off divine lights again……"

The Buddha artifacts within their possession started to give off divine light, the artifacts had not recovered their divine energy but rather seemed to be drying up as the light continued to leak. Tens of thousands of divine lustre began to rush towards the walls of the large coffin and were absorbed by the ancient engravings on the bronze coffin.

The rust covered walls of the bronze coffin did not fully bury the

engravings of the ancient ancestors and gods and at this moment they were dazzling intensely making them seem to come alive. The engravings of desolate beasts and divine birds also became unbearably life-like as these ancient bronze engravings filled with the mysterious energy.

“Quick, look! The engraving of the star chart is currently shining!”

Everyone felt the peculiarity of that area, that was the largest piece of bronze engraving on the wall and it depicted the vast ocean of stars. At this moment all the stars were lit up. Against the black background within the confines of the coffin, it was pitch black like the night sky, making it seem as though there really were endless stars glittering in the night sky.

“This star chart has a line that seems to be glowing, could it be the path through the ancient route among the stars that we have already traversed?”

Everybody gathered over to look and openly discussed, each showing expressions of shock.

This star chart was vast and boundless like the ocean with many stars littering the map. There was a region on the map that was especially bright and more eye-catching than the other stars, drawing a majority of the groups concentration.

“These seven stars that are glowing seem to be the Big Dipper!”

Hearing Wang Zi Wen say this, the group glanced over and saw that in front of the route that seemed to denote the ancient route among the stars was the Big Dipper that was giving off a dazzling light, very apparent.

There were many other star clusters that were giving off similarly brilliant glows like the Big Dipper and after carefully going through them a few of them had shocked expressions. Zhou Yi did not only look cultured but had indeed read many books and was able to immediately recognise the more obvious star clusters saying: “Those are the constellations found in ancient China.”

Ancient china had divided the starry sky into several regions and the star clusters found within each region would have a different names. It could be divided into the Three Enclosures, Four Symbols and Twenty Eight Mansions to summarise the star chart in the sky.

The ancient engraving before their eyes seemed to have been carved based on this and paid special attention to the more famous star clusters.

“Having looked through this star chart and carefully following the ancient route among the stars, it certainly leaves one speechless. When our ancestors divided up the star chart it was unlikely to be based on superstitions but rather followed a strict pattern. Different constellations represented a different star system and this seemed to have a special and great significance……”

“That’s right, it seems to have something to do with the ancient

route among the stars. It could even possibly be related to the place where all life had originated from……”

Everybody was shocked and were speechless for a long time.

“Quick, look! There is a line of glowing stars within the star chart that seems to be extending outwards! Could it possibly be indicating where we are currently headed to? Could it be that it actually indicates the progress and direction of the ancient route among the stars?”

“This line of glowing stars seems to be extending towards the Big Dipper!”

Everybody was stupefied, they had initially been on Mount Tai on Earth. Such a short period of time had gone by and it was possible that they were fast approaching the Big Dipper! This simply felt like a dream and seemed surreal.

Based on the current advancements of modern man, even flying for millions of years it would not be possible to reach the Big Dipper. This was simply an impossibility! The distance was just too far!

Everyone was dumbstruck, their hearts were filled with shock.

“In front of the Big Dipper, there’s an even brighter star…. the Emperor Star*. Could our destination be a planet within that cluster of stars? You guys should know that the Emperor Star had a

special significance in the ancient times." Someone within the group voiced his conjecture as the Emperor star was shining very brightly on the star chart, it was the most dazzling star out of all the others.

[T/N: in the west it is known as Polaris]

"It is difficult to confirm, it could possibly continue extending into different star clusters."

At this moment someone shouted: "That glowing line has stopped extending and has stopped there! That's the cluster of stars where the Big Dipper is located!"

At the same time, the group began to feel the bronze coffin violently tremble as though heaven and earth were trembling.

"It seems that we have reached a destination……"

"Could we really have reached the dwelling of all the gods?"

"Could it be the immortal world of legends?"

"It could also be a highly advanced scientific society as well."

"If there are really immortals and Buddhas, we may possibly see some people from legends."

“Following the ancient route among the stars created by the gods and reaching our final destination. What kind of world would this be?!”

Everyone was feeling nervous but also filled with expectation, they could not wait to get out of the bronze coffin.

# Chapter 27: The Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land

In the boundless cosmos and vast universe, many scientists postulated that Earth was the only place with life.

After several decades, people began to become curious and started to fire space probes in search of other lifeforms. It was with great pity that within deep space, in the unfathomable cosmos, it seemed like a deserted cemetery in quiet isolation. An eternal coldness and darkness that simply had no signs of life.

The universe was simply too vast and had no end. With the currently technology of modern man, the spaces probes that were released could escape our galaxy but even if it continued travelling for millions of years it would be difficult to reach the other side of the stars.

It was possible that today would be the day where the history of star exploration would be rewritten. There were humans who had travelled to the other side of the stars, travelling past past tens to hundreds of light years experiencing the limits of human travel.

If this piece of information was transmitted to the people on earth, no one would believe and nobody would be cheering and celebrating.

Nine dragon corpses pulling a bronze coffin had reached the other side of the stars and entered into the star cluster where the Big Dipper was located!

It was at this moment that Ye Fan finally awoke, his palm had finally left the small coffin that was covered in rust and several hundred ancient words had been engraved within his heart. Abstruse and difficult to comprehend, as though they could never be erased, the divine chants had finally stopped.

The simplicity of the Great Dao; to cherish words like gold and everything will come to an end. Prospering till decline, a perception that passing away is nothing out of the ordinary.

Ye Fan was in a daze as he muttered to himself: “ It is the way of heaven to take from what is in excess in order to make good what is in deficit.....”

“Ye Fan are you alright?” Pang Bo asked in concern.

“I’m fine.”

During this period the bronze coffin was violently trembling and everyone felt as though the sky and ground had inverted, this had happened before and they knew that the nine dragons and coffin were finally reaching its final destination.

At this moment, the engravings on the wall of the bronze coffin gave off a hazy light that seemed to remove all force of impact and the large coffin finally stabilized.

Finally there was a loud trembling noise as the cover of the bronze coffin shifted and landed heavily by the side. The bronze

coffin then toppled onto the ground.

“Light!”

“I can see the light!”

“It’s a familiar world filled with light!”

Many people within the bronze coffin could no longer keep it in and began to loudly shout, what was before them was no longer the twilight of Mars and the floor covered in blood. Fresh air wafted over with the smell of mud, grass and flowers. The natural fragrance permeated the air and it was a world filled with light and life outside.

Everybody stood up and ran out of the bronze coffin, what laid in front of their eyes was a scene of magnificence and beauty.

At this moment they were standing on the peak of a mountain that could be considered to be of average height while looking at the scenery ahead.

Far into the distance the undulating peaks of mountains could be seen that were filled with verdant and lush greenery. Near the mountain top there were rocks and various strong and upright ancient trees together, there were fantastic oddities of every description*. Old vines that had the thickness of a bucket that were coiling around like a curling dragon. A field of green grass that was sparse with fragrant wild flowers, brimming with vitality and

vigor.

[Idiom: grotesquely shaped*]

Compared to the deathly loneliness and darkness on Mars, this place was simply paradise.

“This feels amazing, we’ve finally managed to get out of all that darkness and desolation and arrived at a beautiful piece of sacred land.”

“Finally we don’t have to be nervous or worried anymore!”

Many people were cheering and some people even shed tears of joy. After experiencing the struggles of life and death they had finally reached a natural world filled with life and vigor.

“Kissing the sunlight and telling oneself to go on living a good life……” Even the enchanting and charming Lin Jia was moved to this extent.

Pang Bo stood at the peak of the mountain and loudly shouted: “We’ve finally seen the sun again! Although it wasn’t the one we previously had, I still want to declare that I’ve received a new lease on life!”

“Klang!”

Suddenly, the bronze coffin behind the group gave off a metallic sound, affecting their nerves causing them to nervously look back.

A large portion of the nine dragon corpse's bodies were hanging off the cliff and the bronze coffin was similarly not far away. At this moment the nine dragon bodies were sliding off the cliff and the bronze coffin was being pulled along.

"Rumble Rumble Rumble"

The nine dragon corpses and the bronze coffin were causing rumbling noises as they slid off the mountain peak and finally speedily fell off the cliff.

Everyone had their bodies covered in cold sweat. The other side of the mountain top was actually a sheer cliff and if they had not rushed out when the lid fell off earlier, the outcome would have been disastrous.

The nine large dragon corpses and the bronze coffin had fallen off the sheer cliff and after a long time there was no sound of any object hitting the ground. This made the group feel bewildered as they looked at each other.

At this point the bronze coffin was no longer blocking their line of view and they could clearly see the scenery on the other side.

"Are we standing on top of a super huge volcano's crater?" Many people had expressions of confusion.

Looking down from the sheer cliff there seemed to be a bottomless pit.

“It isn’t a volcano, there can’t possibly be such a thick volcano.”

After careful inspection one could see that there were nine mountains that were joined together which formed a huge ravine in the centre. Based on logic this should have been a vast valley whose bottom could be seen because the nine mountains were only average in height.

However, looking down it was a dark bottomless pit as though it were linked to the Yellow Springs route in hell, unfathomably deep.

The ravine formed by the nine mountains seemed to be endless, the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin had fallen but there was no sound of falling, as though they were trapped to fall forever.

“How deep is this? This is simply unimaginable!”

“What place is this? How could there possibly be such a deep abyss……”

Everybody was befuddled and felt that this world was not as simple and tranquil as it seemed.

Ye Fan looked closely at their surroundings and said: “Have you guys discovered that there aren’t any five coloured stone altars here. It seems as though we had just fallen from the sky to land here and not entered through a portal.”

Listening to him, everyone felt surprise as they noticed that there really was no five coloured stone altar. The wide mountain top did not collapse because of the bronze coffin nor was there a huge crater, only a few large fissures emanated outwards.

If they had really fallen from the sky to smash onto the ground, the impact could only be imagined but the mountain seemed to have barely any scars from the impact. The situation was definitely abnormal.

“There aren’t any five coloured altars? Then why did we appear here? Could it be that we actually fell out of the universe and got stranded here?” This joke was not funny and nobody was laughing. They all looked at their surroundings as they fell into deep thought.

“There is half a stone tablet there!” at this moment Zhang Zi Ling suddenly shouted.

There was a pile of rubble on the mountain top with a few sparse ancient trees which had several thick vines that seemed to be covering a half broken stone tablet. It could be clearly seen that the stone tablet had been polished by humans.

The group hastily walked over as they pulled away the thick

vines and brushed away the fallen leaves and branches and felt a sense of ancientness. The stone tablet had three ancient words carved onto it and the strokes were heavy and firm, forceful like dragons, giving off a feeling of agelessness. No one knew how long this tablet had been here.

"What's written on it?" Many people did not recognise the words.

Ye Fan studied closely but was unable to give a definite answer saying: "It seems to say "Ancient Forbidden Desolate""

"Ancient Forbidden Desolate, what's the meaning of that? It doesn't seem coherent." No one could understand what the words meant.

"This is a broken stone tablet, the lower portion should also contain some words. With part of it broken off there's no way for us to know what was carved." Pango Bo pulled away the vines and looked through the wild grass seeing many stone pieces that seemed to have been disintegrated by lightning.

"Those three ancient words should be the name of this abyss or mountain." Zhou Yi had a face full of contemplation as he said: "The words and phrases that can be linked with "Forbidden" aren't that many, it's likely that the last word at the back is "Land"."

"If we connect those words together doesn't that spell out " Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land"?" A student connected the four words and after reading it out immediately his face drained of

colour and the others frowned.

This name made it difficult for anyone to think of any good connotations, many people began to feel worried again.

“The surrounding area of the abyss likely isn’t any sacred or pure ground……” Somebody voiced out.

It was not just a place that was not a sacred or pure ground, if it was as what was described on the stone tablet, this area was unlikely to be a kind and merciful land.

“Have you guys noticed, there aren’t any birds or animals here. It’s way too quiet!” Wang Zi Wen was more attentive and noticed that something was amiss.

“It really seems that way!” Everybody started to nod.

This place had flowers, grass, vines and trees. It looked to be full of life on the surface but upon closer inspection it seemed that the surrounding area seemed to be void of any animals! This was very weird! Such a big mountain range and there were no sounds of birds or animals and not a bug to be seen. There was just deathly silence!

There were no cicadas on the ancient trees, no grasshoppers in the grass or birds in the sky. There was only silence.

Pang Bo was optimistic as he said: “Whatever the case, this place

has verdant and lush vegetation. This kind of environment is suitable enough for us to go on living. This place also has inscriptions, I believe that there must be people. I don't believe that such a beautiful world could be one filled only with death and desolation."

"Who says there aren't any animals. Who says that there aren't any birds in the sky. You guys look……" Ye Fan made a new discovery at this point and pointed his fingers at the sky far away.

In the sky far away, there seemed to be an eagle circling the sky. It seemed exceptional as its body was actually covered in gold and although it was far away it gave off the feeling of magnificence as though it were cast from gold and its entire body was giving off a golden glint.

At this moment, the golden eagle flew slightly closer towards the area they were in and became more apparent before suddenly diving into a piece of forest. Thereafter it reappeared with its catch firmly secured within its claws as it flew away to the distant peak of another mountain.

"I…… I didn't see wrongly, did I?!" Seeing this image even Pang Bo who was usually rowdy stuttered.

The rest also seemed petrified like statues as they could not believe what they saw.

"Why do I feel that…… what that golden coloured eagle caught within its claws…… seemed to be an enormous elephant?!" Li

Chang Qing also stuttered and felt that his mouth was dry.

"It isn't just a feeling, it's reality!" Wang Zi Wen immediately continued where he left off and said: "Able to actually catch such an enormous elephant, this is simply unbelievable!" One can only imagine how big that golden eagle really is……" Having said this he became tongue tied as well.

It was clear that the group had mistaken the size of the eagle because of the distance. That eagle was clearly an enormously large exotic bird of prey!

Ye Fan looked into the distance and said: "There can't possibly be such a huge eagle. It's enormous body was covered in gold and gave off a golden glow, just like the golden winged Roc of legends!"

Hearing this, the people became petrified.

# Chapter 28: The Mysterious Fruit

The Roc from legends was mentioned in many ancients texts such as the <Classic of Divine Wonders> and <Commentary on the Water Classic> that has scriptures as well as articles of the ancient wilderness. Among the classics, the most well-known was Zhuang Zhou's*

[T/N: also known as Zhuang Zi]

"There was a fish in the north unknown. The name of the fish was Kun, Kun was very big, with a length of thousands of miles. Kun had turned into a bird. The name of the bird was Peng. Peng was very long, with a body length of thousands of miles. When the bird had gained enough momentum, it flew like clouds spreading across the skies*."

[T/N: Excerpt from Zhuang Zhou's A Happy Excursion, take note Peng is a chinese Roc]

Zhuang Zi was like a vast body of water, free as well as unrestrained, his strokes were majestic and he sketched out the image of a divine bird that spanned ninety thousand li. People who read this were astonished.

This clearly did not fit with the common sense of living things. With the divine bird having such an enormous body it was clearly an exaggerated portrayal of the divine bird by their ancestors. What people did not understand was that many other ancient texts also had records of the Roc and there were some that wrote in a conclusive tone that the Roc actually did exist, just not as large as those written in the legends.

This made the people start to think of various things, in the distant past was there really a ‘Roc’ or divine bird that existed?

Zhou Yi and the group watched as the golden silhouette that seemed to be cast from gold disappear into a mountain. Their expressions were shocked.

“The divine bird from legends!” Many people came to their senses and exclaimed. This was an exclamation that came from the soul, easily rending a huge elephant apart and grabbing it as though it were a little critter. Its enormity was stupefying and its strength made them feel dumbstruck.

Carter looked on earnestly as he stammered: “That giant bird…… belongs to the falcon species….. This is a new species…… it’s a new discovery!”

“Go off to one side and stay there!” Pang Bo was feeling speechless at this one-track minded foreigner. They were already so far gone from civilization but he was still measuring things through scientific knowledge. Why did he not think about how they got here in the first place.

“Pang Bo please watch your attitude.” Li Xiao Man looked displeased as her eyelashes fluttered and her beautiful eyes glared at him.

“I didn’t even talk about you……” Pang Bo softly muttered.

“What sort of world are we currently in?” After calming down everyone was absorbed with this thought.

Travelling through the cold and barren universe they had arrived at the cluster of stars where the Big Dipper was located and found their way to this mysterious world. Could this really be the place where the gods resided?

How would they be able to continue living, this was the main problem that the group faced. With their future unknown everything had to be carefully thought through.

Many people held firmly onto their Buddha artifacts even though all of them had already lost their splendour. Some of the artifacts had already fractured showing multiple fracture lines and were clearly ruined.

The last vestiges of divine energy in the Buddha artifacts had been absorbed by the bronze coffin and they no longer had any divine glow. Holding it in their hands was akin to holding useless bronze. The group did not throw their artifacts away as a result and held the hope that the Buddha artifacts would regain their lost splendour to be used in the future. They even hoped that the Buddha artifacts could be restored and become their greatest reliance in the future.

“Rumbling”

It was unknown whose tummy had growled and several people felt embarrassed. People had to eat,drink and do their business.

Many people moved away to find a convenient area to clear their bowels.

"Those who want to keep their face even until their death have to live and face the punishment*……" Pang Bo curled his lips in disdain and said: "I had the foresight and had left traces of my great self** on Mars within the ruins of the palace. I think that several hundred years in the future when humans explore Mars it will be a huge piece of evidence that man had once explored the area!"

[T/N* Pang Bo is being sarcastic to those who care about their face and didn't take a shit when the feeling came; their punishment being the constipated feeling]

[T/N** Pang Bo took a dump on Mars]

"Chi!"

Ye Fan had just drank a mouthful of water and spat it all out, even the bottle of water in his hand had nearly been thrown away.

"Brother, when I'm drinking can you not say such things, you could kill someone!"

The people by the side could not stand the two of them and moved away to settle their own intimate businesses.

Pang Bo looked at the actions of the group and laughed loudly while purposefully pretending to cough in a certain direction and

making a motion as though he wanted to walk in that direction. This made the people behind the big tree in that area tremble making it difficult for them to clear their business.

Pang Bo laughed loudly and crouched down before picking up two stones and throwing them towards the vines at the back. Li Chang Qing's angry voice could be heard as he said: "Who! Who is so inconsiderate?!" This was accompanied by the cold snort of Liu Yun Zhi.

Seeing Pang Bo picking up a stone and wanting to throw it in the direction of Li Xiao Man, Ye Fan hurriedly laughed as he held him back.

Seeing the crowd begin to gather back, Pang Bo immediately put on a facade of decency and pulled Ye Fan to explore the mountain top, seeing if there were any wild fruits to be eaten.

Although Ye Fan had kept a large number of crocodile corpses from the five coloured stone altar on Mars, if it was not absolutely critical the two of them did not want to force themselves to eat it.

"There's a spring over there." Pang Bo suddenly noticed.

A few tens of metres in front of them there were several vines that were as thick as a water bucket that covered the area. In that area there was a spring that was one metre in diameter, there was gurgling water that had some semblance of a sweet dew spring of the gods.

Beside the spring were several small trees that were half a metre in height with large leaves that were green and glistening. The leaves were palm shaped and it seemed as though there were many little dwarves standing there. Every little tree had a red fruit on top of it, the fruit looked like a cherry but was as big a chicken's egg.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo brushed past the vines and swiftly walked there. Even from a distance the sweet smell of the fruits permeated the air and made their mouth water. It had already been a day and a night since any of them had eaten anything and their stomachs had been hungry long ago. If they had not found anything to eat they were already prepared to force themselves to eat the crocodile meat.

"It's really fragrant, I've never smelt such a thick fragrance from a fruit before."

Getting closer the fragrance from the fruit was even thicker and even the fragrance of wine that had been kept in a wine cellar for a millennium would have been masked over.

"The sweet smell of the fruit simply attacks a man's senses, would it have any poison?" The two people were very uncertain. It was often the case that the more extravagant and captivating the thing was, the more poisonous it usually was.

"I don't care anymore, such a thick fragrance being emitted from the fruit. Even if there is any poison I'd still want to try it. I don't want to eat that disgusting thing that's actually been in and out of people's skulls."

“How about you have a bite first, your body is so fit, even if there’s any poison I’m sure you’ll be able to live through it.”

“I feel that your skin is rough while your flesh is thick, a hundred poisons would not be able to enter. You would be more suited to testing for any poisons.”

The two people were very carefree and even though they were in an unknown world they did not look miserable but rather faced forwards with a positive attitude.

Ye Fan took a red fruit and held it in his hand. It was especially mesmerizing, sparkling and translucent as though it were carved from red jade.

Pang Bo also grabbed a piece of the red fruit and said: “I can’t control myself anymore, this fruit fragrance is simply too mesmerizing. I can’t control my urges anymore, I’ll go ahead and have a taste.”

“I think it’d be better for me to go first.”

The two of them gently bit into the fruit at the same time. When the translucent and sparkling red fruit was bitten into, it immediately transmitted a strong fragrance that entered into the five viscera and six bowels*, filling the entire body.

[T/N* refers to the five yin organs and six yang organs according

to chinese medicine;

Five Yin organs(Viscera): Heart, Liver, Spleen, Lungs and Kidney

Six Yang organs(Bowels): Stomach, Small Intestine, Large Intestine, Gall bladder, Urinary bladder and Pericardium with blood vessels (Triple Energiser)]

"Simply delicious!" Pang Bo wanted to swallow his fingers whole, the bright red juices of the fruit were flowing out and the aroma filled the entire area.

"I've never eaten such a delicious fruit before, could it be that we're really just too hungry?" The two people had finished eating one fruit and after a while they felt their bodies became more vigorous and there were no ill side effects.

"There's no poison."

"Then what are we waiting for! Let's eat!"

The two people sat by the one metre spring and began to devour the fruits, juices flying everywhere. They were ravenous from hunger and even felt like eating their own tongues, not to mention this wonderful delicacy of a fruit they had found.

They each had four fruits before they finally stopped and Ye Fan said: "Let's give a few to Yi Yi and Zhang Zi Ling."

"We should definitely do so, they should be starving already."

This little tree that was half a metre in height was lushly vegetated and definitely uncommon. Each tree only bore one fruit at its top and surrounding the spring there were only thirteen of these jade like small trees. At this moment there were only five of the sparkly red fruits.

Pang Bo took a deep breath and leaned closer to the gurgling spring to take a sniff and said: “Weird, the spring water seems to have a faint fragrance as well.”

Ye Fan cupped a bit of the spring water and took a whiff and although it was very light there was indeed a fragrance: “The reason why these small trees can bear such a unique fruit is likely due to this spring.”

Pang Bo drank a few mouthfuls of the spring water and said: “It was a sweet fragrance, it’s too bad that it’s just the flavour that’s special. After drinking it I don’t feel anything.” He emptied the bottles of normal water and started to fill the bottles with the lightly scented spring water.

The two people rested for a while after eating the fruits and drinking the spring water and took the five remaining fruits. Thereafter they headed back and Pang Bo whispered: “Don’t you feel that after eating the fruits all the fatigue that was previously accumulated in the body is totally gone and I’m actually feeling full of vigor and energy now.”

Ye Fan was also marveling at the effect of the fruit and nodded his head as he said: “This red fruit seems to be quite special.”

At this moment everyone had finished their own personal business. People were either looking off into the distance checking the topography of the land or gathering to discuss what they were going to do next.

When Ye Fan and Pang Bo walked over, the smell of the fragrant fruit wafted through the air and everybody immediately looked over. Several people's mouths started to water as many people had been starving.

"Yi Yi, this is for you. Eat it." Pang Bo handed two red fruits over to Yi Yi which glittered under the sunlight.

Li Chang Qing stood nearby and took a whiff of the mesmerizing scent of the fruit. He could not control himself as he asked: "Pang Bo, where did you guys find the fruit, hurry and split some to the rest of us. We're really hungry and can't hold on much longer."

Having said this he walked forward as though he was no stranger, completely ignoring the fact that he had been acting against Ye Fan the whole time and almost caused his death. He reached his hand towards the other three fruits within Pang Bo's hands and attempted to grab some.

# Chapter 29: Fury

“You really are a horse that doesn’t know it’s face is long, bull that doesn’t know it’s horns are bent.* I’ve never seen such a thick skinned person like you before.” Pang Bo forcefully knocked away his hand as he glanced at him and kept the three fragrant fruits.

[T/N* Men are blind to their own cause]

“How can you say it like that?” Li Chang Qing could not maintain his facade as the expression on his face sank: “We are all classmates and have come together to an unknown world. We should be helping one another. We are all going through the throes of starvation and if there’s any food found, it should be shared with everyone. Could it be that you plan to keep all the food to yourself?”

“Pah! You still have the gall to say those kinds of words? Pang Bo laughed and said: “Who was the one who secretly ate chocolates within the bronze coffin, at that moment why didn’t you think of ‘everyone’? Now you’re acting so full of righteousness, please don’t be disgusting. Seeing you is worse than seeing those crocodiles crawling around. Go off to the side! I can’t be bothered with you!”

Li Chang Qing seemed to be choking as his face turned a pasty white, he did not want to admit but could not think of anyway to refute and just came off as pale and feeble.

Although the words Pang Bo said came out in a rushed and

violent manner, he was not dumb and knew the intentions of Li Chang Qing. If Li Chang Qing was able to get some of the fruit it would be good, otherwise the words he just said would still isolate Pang Bo and Ye Fan. There were several people in the group and the few who did not receive any fruit would certainly have some resentment in their hearts.

“I’m sorry everyone, there’s more people than food available. We’ve only managed to pick five fruits and there really isn’t enough for us to split it up. Yi Yi is too gaunt and skinny, I believe that no one will complain if we give her two right?” Pang Bo looked at the group and continued: “Zhang Zi Ling take one.” Saying so, he threw a fruit over and then said: “These five fruits were picked by myself and Ye Fan, certainly we have to look after ourselves as well right?”

Pang Bo placed the fourth fruit directly into Ye Fan’s mouth and for the fifth fruit he personally took a big bite out of.

The five fruits had been divided out but Lin Yi Yi felt ill at ease as she said: “I..... I can eat half and that would be sufficient for me. Let’s share the remainder with everyone.” She wanted to return the red fruit but Ye Fan pushed it back and said: “Just relax, this area is well vegetated, we’ll definitely be able to find other wild fruits.”

Pang Bo also stared at her and urged her to eat the fruits, not letting her reject him. He knew that this fruit was not ordinary and after eating it one’s energy would be restored. All fatigue would be swept away and there were likely some unknown benefits as well.

“But……” Lin Yi Yi still felt rather embarrassed as she looked at the people all around.

“Yi Yi you’re too kind, this shouldn’t be the way.” Pang Bo softly whispered: “Among them are several people with chocolates but they didn’t share it with everyone.”

Seeing Ye Fan also nod in her direction, Lin Yi Yi did not refuse any further.

“We still have some chocolates here, everyone let’s share the food.” At this moment Liu Yun Zhi suddenly walked forward and handed a few bars of chocolate for the group to share.

“What the f***!” Pang Bo blew his top, this was akin to a slap on the face. He was filled with anger such that even his tooth ached, but he could only bear this invisible slap as he had nothing to say to refute.

“We can count on Liu Yun Zhi to be loyal!” Li Chang Qing broke off a piece of chocolate and ate while saying, at the same time making sure to look over at Ye Fan and Pang Bo as well.

“Only when going through difficult times together can you really see a person’s true nature……” The girl who always stayed by Liu Yun Zhi’s side also voiced her opinion clearly needling Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

This made Pang Bo’s expression sink even lower as he softly

scolded: “He’s been circling in and out of this, why didn’t he take out those chocolates earlier. Now that the area is filled with vegetation, we’ll definitely be able to find other wild fruit. The usage of chocolates would become limited and using it at this point to make a stance, i’d say he’s an ‘immortal for sure’*”

[Sichuan catch phrase: F*** his ancestors 我日他个仙人板板]

“You will know the horse’s stamina by the distance it is able to travel and as time passes you will gradually see a person for his true self. In the future when we’re out in the world I’ll be following you Yun Zhi.” Li Chang Qing purposely put on a thoughtful posture as he sighed and said: “Hai!” without forgetting to look towards Pang Bo and Ye Fan.

Being slapped like this by Liu Yun Zhi and the male and female classmate by his side was unbearable for Pang Bo and he wanted to rush over to beat them up. The group was however looking at their actions and he could only bear with it.

Everyone looked into the distance as they studied the topography of the land and decided on a direction to walk in. They mainly wanted to get out of this mountainous region and into a region populated by humans.

Without wasting too much time the group followed the contours of the mountain and headed down into the forested mountain region. Everyone was especially careful and held a stick in their hands to ward off any wild beasts from attacking. Their Buddha artifacts had after all lost their splendour and they did not want to be defenseless.

They had walked for more than half a day however there was nary a bird or animal in sight and even a rat could not be seen.

“It really seems to be a forbidden ground, even birds don’t come here to take a dump.....” Li Chang Qing muttered.

Pang Bo jested: “You should be grateful, if we really do meet with a ferocious beast I’m sure that you would pray to be at a place that doesn’t even have bird feathers.”

The mountain was filled with lush vegetation and the group managed to pick many wild fruits and berries, temporarily solving their food problem.

“Could we have gone in the wrong direction? Are we currently walking deeper into the mountainous region?” A few people were suspicious but the group decided to continue moving forwards.

The sky had turned dark and everybody had to stop within the forest and continue advancing on the second day.

This was an unsettling night, people heard roars in the middle of the night and the sound was forceful and vast, it was accompanied by the sounds of metal chains being dragged.

Within this eerie forest the sounds felt like an angry ghost was struggling against its chains making it especially frightening.

“It seems like..... the sound is coming from the abyss within the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land.” Many people were trembling with fear as they looked in the direction of the abyss that was formed from the nine mountains.

It was late into the night, the shadows of the trees were dancing the breeze and ancient wolf trees swayed in the wind, like many ghost shapes appearing indistinctly in the shadows.

The sound of roaring grew louder and the entire mountain gently shuddered with each roar. The trees nearby were constantly shaken up and many leaves constantly fell towards the ground.

A sinister chill could be felt from the abyss and made the group fill with shock, the abyss was so far away and yet that frightening aura could still be felt. One could only imagine what frightful thing could emit such a baleful aura.

“Klang!” “Klang!”.....

The loud sounds continued to pierce the night as though a large creature was pounding metal and the entire mountain was shuddering as a result.

Everybody’s faces drained of colour as they thought of a possibility.

“The nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin fell into the abyss.....”

“Could it be……”

The sounds of those dull yet forceful strikes sounded like someone was striking the large coffin and this made them feel shivers as cold sweat started to cover their backs.

“What… is that thing!”

Many people were deeply shocked in their hearts and frightened at the same time. The bronze coffin was a total mystery and till now the group had no understanding of it. Exactly what was striking it? One must know that the large coffin could easily absorb the divine energies from all their Buddha artifacts.

“Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land, could it mean that since ancient times this has always been a forbidden ground?”

“Since ancient times no one has dared to step in this area…..”

“Klang!” “Klang!”……

The loud sounds were shocking to the ear and the forceful sounds of striking could be heard. The sound of metal being struck coming from the bronze coffin could be heard all around and the ground trembled. The surrounding trees also continued to shake as the leaves continued to fall and cover the ground.

It was clear that the creature roaring was furious and its roars became anguished and scary, it was difficult to imagine what exactly was within the abyss.

“We should be happy that the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin fell into the abyss and absorbed that creature’s attention. If it came out in the middle of the night and attacked us, I doubt we would be able to survive……”

This was extremely plausible as this place was after all named Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land. Even birds and animals did not dare to come close making it extremely clear how frightening this place was. It was clearly a dangerous area which held some frightening creature here.

“Something that has existed since ancient times, this truly…… makes one’s hair stand on end! I don’t even dare to imagine what it could be!”

“It seems like it has no way to deal with that mysterious bronze coffin for now, it’s fortunate that it’s currently like that.”

This was a sleepless night and many people had trouble catching any sleep.

“Boom!”

Suddenly a forceful sound resounded from the far off mountain region and there was a violent earthquake that seemed to originate

from the abyss. Black fog was spewing forth from the abyss and it covered the entire sky in that area, the stars and moon had been completed shrouded making it especially daunting.

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, all the black fog was sucked back into the abyss and the sky became clear as the stars could once again be seen. This scene was simply bewildering.

There was a blurry shadow that could not be clearly seen, it's blurry silhouette made it hard to differentiate between man or animal and it continued to wield thick metal chains of several hundred zhang* long and was roaring at the sky, especially forceful and ferocious. The distance was so far yet it could be clearly seen, one can imagine how thick and large the metal chains were, the roars were ear-splitting. Causing the people within the forested mountain area to faint. The continuous sound waves were extremely painful to one's eardrums.

[Zhang*: 10 Chinese feet (3.3m)]

That creature was bounded by large metal chains and shackles, although in fetters it continued to move about in the mountains as metal chains were flying about in the sky! Ferocious and it's power unrivalled, the beast was simply flaunting its power. After giving one loud and anguished roar, it charged violently back into the depths of the abyss.

"Klang!" "Klang!"……

The sound of the bronze coffin being struck continued to resound.

“Do you guys think that it’s actually trying to open the small bronze coffin within?”

“It should be the case. The large bronze coffin is already open and it doesn’t need to purposefully destroy it.”

Everybody was filled with shock and fright and it was only late into the wee hours of the night before the sounds from the abyss finally stopped and the group fell into a deep deep slumber.

On the second day, the sun had risen high into the sky and everyone gradually woke up one by one. By the side there was a stream that they used to wash up and thereafter they picked some wild fruits to eat before continuing on their route.

Even after walking for two to three hours the group did not stop to rest as they really wanted to get out of this place. They could not feel at peace within this Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land and wanted to get out of this area before night fell again.

In the afternoon the burning sun was high in the sky and it was thankful that the foliage was thick and provided shelter. When they had reached the peak of a mountain someone heard the roaring of a beast from far away.

“It should be soon, we should be able to get out of this forbidden ground before night falls.”

“Hey, doesn’t that look like some sort of construction over on that mountain?” Wang Zi Wen suddenly pointed in front towards a very tall mountain. It was still very far from where they were and even though it was separated from them by several mountain tops it could still be clearly seen as it was tall enough.

“It really seems to be some form of construction in the distance! ”

Looks of glee appeared on the faces of everyone and they wanted to get there before the sky turned dark.

“Hey, it seems like there are still cranes flying in that area. It wouldn’t be an immortal area with actual immortals living there would it?” The people were filled with different thoughts as they linked what they were seeing to the immortals of legends.

Everybody picked up their pace as they hastily moved forward and they moved in groups of two to three people and softly discussed. Upon entering an area with signs of human life, they wanted to split up and progress on their own.

At this moment Ye Fan noticed that Liu Yi YI looked wronged and was unhappy as he asked: “Yi Yi, what’s the matter?”

“Wang Yan wanted to take a look at my Malas but hasn’t returned it to me…….” Liu Yi Yi was aggrieved and slightly angry.

“Her again! It’s definitely Liu Yun Zhi who instigated this!” Pang Bo was infuriated, Wang Yan was precisely the female student who always followed by Liu Yun Zhi’s side and openly acted against Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

Upon hearing this Ye Fan did not say anything and took big steps forward before stopping Liu Yun Zhi, Wang Yan and Li Chang Qing as he reached his hand out saying: “Give it back!”

“What are you talking about?” Li Chang Qing did not back away as he questioned.

“Enough of your nonsense, give back the Malas!” Ye Fan was not a docile person and had been controlling his temper, when he blew his top he was a frightening person.

“Oh, you’re talking about that matter.” Wang Yan explained: “I only wanted to play with it for a while but later found it interesting so I decided to exchange my bronze bell for it with Yi Yi.”

Ye Fan looked back at Liu Yi Yi, at this moment the others had stopped and were looking over.

“I..... I didn’t do any exchange with her. She took away my Malas and forcefully placed the bronze bell into my hands.” Liu Yi Yi still looked aggrieved and under the gazes of the group she looked ill at ease and very pitiful.

“Yi Yi you shouldn’t say it like that, you previously agreed to the exchange already.” Wang Yan said.

“Give it here! I don’t want to speak anymore rubbish!” At this moment, Ye Fan swept his gaze at Liu Yun Zhi, Wang Yan and Li Chang Qing as he said: “I’ve already lost all my patience with you guys! We are already going to be out of danger soon, you guys better not ??”

# Chapter 30: Tom, Dick And Harry

Li Chang Qing walked forward with a contemplative look as he laughed: “This is between Liu Yi Yi and Wang Yan, if people are willing to exchange their goods you should let them exchange. Ye Fan don’t you think you’re interfering with other people’s business?”

“SMACK!”

Ye Fan did not respond as he immediately used his right hand to give Li Chang Qing a solid slap on his face and the sound startled many people. Li Chang Qing flew two to three metres like a straw man, one could imagine the strength behind the slap.

As he fell to the ground, the left side of his face began to swell and blood drizzled out of his mouth. His brain was scrambled and after a while he gathered his senses and angrily shouted: “You!”

Ye Fan did not even bother to look at him and with his heartfelt contempt for Li Chang Qing he ignored him and treated him like air.

“Give it!” Ye Fan used the same two words and calmly looked towards Liu Yun Zhi and Wang Yan.

Li Chang Qing was furious as he struggled to stand up before rushing towards Ye Fan wanting to tear at Ye Fan’s collar. It was unfortunate that even before he got a chance to make a grab at his clothes, Ye Fan followed up with a backhand slap on the other side

of his face. He then continued to ignore Li Chang Qing and did not even bother to look at him, as though he were swatting a fly.

A firm and solid slap that was filled with strength once again caused Li Chang Qing to fly back and knock into a tree, knocking him senseless.

“Give it!” Ye Fan said the same two words again as he calmly stared at Wang Yan and Liu Yun Zhi.

This time Wang Yan started to feel fear as her eyes darted around and tried to avoid Ye Fan’s gaze. Looking towards the side she said: “I didn’t even say that I wouldn’t give it to her, it’s just that I’ve been trying to negotiate……”

It was a pity that she lacked the confidence to continue as she changed her tone and said: “Since Yi Yi regrets our previous arrangement, I can always return her the Malas right?”

Having said her piece, she prepared to return the Malas within her hand to Ye Fan. At this moment Liu Yun Zhi who had always remained silent finally spoke: “Ye Fan don’t you think you’re being too bossy? What do you treat Li Chang Qing as?”

It was only at this point that Li Chang Qing gathered his senses and started to kick up a racket, seemingly wanting to rush over at any time. Pang Bo stood by the side as he curled his lips and indifferently said: “You can only blame yourself, why don’t you rush over here and try it again?”

Hearing this, Li Chang Qing lost all courage and continued to make a din from afar but did not dare to get any closer.

“Why do you treat Li Chang Qing in this manner?” Liu Yun Zhi questioned Ye Fan.

“What right do you have to beat me up?!” Li Chang Qing angrily shouted.

“Do I need to explain or reason myself with a fly? Just swatting it will suffice.” Ye Fan’s words were directed at Liu Yun Zhi as he continued to ignore Li Chang Qing.

“What..... What did you say?!” At this moment Li Chang Qing’s face was alternating between shades of green and white as he nearly spat out a mouthful of blood. He could see the contempt that Ye Fan held for Liu Yun Zhi and the indifference with which he treated himself. This was simply an affront to his self-esteem.

Ye Fan extended his right hand out and Wang Yan hurriedly placed the Malas there before backing away. All this time she did not look up at him and was looking at the ground.

“We all know that Yi Yi has been living a tough life these past few years and suffered many setbacks. As such her personality and attitude have changed and she is very weak willed and has low self-esteem. I hope that you can control yourselves and watch what you say to her. Do not bully her under such circumstances, don’t be shameless!” Ye Fan softly but firmly said to Wang Yan as a warning.

Hearing his heavy words, Wang Yan's face visibly paled as she felt both embarrassed and angry but even more so fear. She backed away and did not say anything to refute.

"Ye Fan you are going too far!" Liu Yun Zhi had a gloomy expression.

The others had watched the proceedings without any comment and just when the group thought that Ye Fan would turn to leave he suddenly threw a punch that landed heavily onto Liu Yun Zhi's face.

In an instant Liu Yun Zhi's nose and mouth were bloody as he stumbled to the ground.

"You!" He never expected that Ye Fan would actually attack him.

"I haven't been calculative with you but you keep provoking me. Do you really think I'm that much of a pushover?" Ye Fan coolly looked at him with indifference before turning to leave.

"Ye Fan!" Liu Yun Zhi gnashed his teeth as he laid on the ground and wiped the blood from his face shouting: "Just you wait!"

Pang Bo immediately rushed forwards upon hearing these words and lifted his leg and started to kick while saying: "Who do you want to wait for you? What do you want to do? Tell me!"

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

He kicked Liu Yun Zhi several times before Liu Yun Zhi finally passed out.

The others by the side who saw all this did not say anything to stop them because several people also felt the same way about Liu Yun Zhi. They were now in a new world and did not need to bother about the status of people.

The two to three people who actually wanted to speak up for Liu Yun Zhi kept their silence as they knew that once Ye Fan revealed his fangs it was best not to provoke him.

“Everyone you’ve seen what has happened……” Li Chang Qing did not clearly understand the current situation and continued to make a fuss by the side.

Besides Pang Bo no one else bothered with him and having finished with Liu Yun Zhi, Pang Bo walked over and replied: “I’ve seen it, I’ve seen it all!”

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Pang Bo’s legs seemed like they were kicking sand bags as he continued to kick Li Chang Qing like a dead pig as he rolled about on the ground and squealed in pain.

The group did not tarry here and continued moving forward.

Wang Yan supported Liu Yun Zhi and Li Chang Qing as the three of them trailed at the back of the group.

At this moment Liu Yun Zhi and Li Chang Qing were gnashing their teeth, they had lost all their face earlier and currently they really felt like puking blood. It seemed like the previous actions they did, Ye Fan did not care nor did he put them in his eyes as he treated their actions with indifference.

The neutral and indifferent method of loathing made them feel that their egos had been bruised and they were but clowns that he could not be bothered with. Only when he was annoyed would he swat at them like flies and never once did he treat them as equals.

This was the biggest psychological blow, being treated like a random cat or dog* and not an actual opponent.

[Idiom: tom, dick and harry]

An hour later the group had climbed past another mountain and could clearly see the construction on the tall mountain. The animal roars in the surrounding area were getting clearer but it was evident that they were almost out of this Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land.

“We just need to press forwards for a short distance more before we stop to rest.” They had already been trekking through the mountain for more than half a day and everyone was feeling fatigued.

After scaling another mountain, the ground finally saw birds in the area, it suddenly became a world filled with life! Birds were chirping and beasts were roaring, the vegetation was lush and life seemed to be abundant. There was no longer the deathly heavy silence of the earlier area.

“There’s a rabbit there!”

“There’s also a badger!”

Upon seeing the wild animals, many people started to salivate as a diet of only wild fruits was simply too plain.

“Oh, look at that stone wall! There are words on it!” At this moment someone noticed that there were some large ancient words carved into a stone wall in front of them.

The three ancient words everyone had seen before “Ancient Forbidden Desolate” and the last word on the wall “Land” affirmed their suspicions.

“Why do we see those four words again? Could it be that we haven’t left the forbidden land?”

“Wrong, this is precisely proof that we’ve finally left the forbidden ground. This is the entrance into the forbidden ancient desolate land and we’ve finally escaped danger!”

“Let’s rest here for a while. I believe that we’ll soon be able to see

signs of human life."

Within the group, two to three people gathered together to form small groups and sat down to discuss what they would do hereafter. It was clear that they were planning to break off.

"I'll go over to look at what Liu Yun Zhi and his cronies are up to. Somehow I have a feeling that they are being very secretive." Pang Bo then stood up and headed into the nearby forest.

Not long after Pang Bo returned and whispered a few words to Ye Fan.

"Since we're leaving this mountain region, we will definitely go our separate ways. This mysterious world likely has gods and immortals in it. Leaving those three together, they would likely create a mess sooner or later and it would bring peril to us all. It would be better to avoid such things from happening" Ye Fan stood up as he said these words with a free and easy attitude, but he had already decided on the fates of the three people.

# Chapter 31: Thrown Into The Tiger's Den

Wang Zi Wen was sitting not far away and heard most of what was said. He could not contain his curiosity as he asked Ye Fan: "What happened?"

Ye Fan turned to Pang Bo and instructed: "Didn't you use your handphone to record whatever they said? Play it for everyone to listen."

At this moment the others also noticed that something was going on and gathered around Ye Fan to watch.

Pang Bo was very clear and understood that if they wanted to act against the other group they had to be standing on the side of reason and it would be best to explain the situation in front of everyone. His face was very ugly as he said: "Liu Yun Zhi, Li Chang Qing and Wang Yan want to harm me and Ye Fan!"

Having said this he became infuriated as he said: "These three ungrateful bastards! Every time they provoke us but we were never fussy nor calculative with them. They don't seem to know what's good or bad and actually were actually scheming to have us killed!"

When these words were said everyone was startled as their attention was drawn to him. They were puzzled as they asked: "What happened? Exactly why have you come to this conclusion?"

Pang Bo pressed a few buttons on his phone and thereafter a recording could be heard.

“F***, I can’t bear this crap anymore! We can’t let it go like this!” Li Chang Qing’s voice could be heard.

Liu Yun Zhi’s sombre voice could then be heard: “We’ll let him live for another two days, I’ll definitely make sure he dies!”

“What? You……. You want to kill the two of them?” Li Chang Qing and Wang Yan seemed flustered.

“That’s right! If they exist I cannot exist, If I exist they cannot exist!” Although this was only a recording, it could be heard that Liu Yun Zhi was gnashing his teeth.

“We can’t deal with the seemingly quiet yet barbaric Ye Fan, not to mention the tall and sturdy eye-sore Pang Bo, we simply don’t have any way to deal with them.” Li Chang Qing’s voice was filled with anger and powerlessness.

Liu Yun Zhi coldly laughed: “It’s not a problem, my Vajra still contains some divine energy within in. I’m sure that after a night the energy will increase and if all goes according to plan, I’ll definitely be able to kill the both of them.”

Li Chang Qing’s voice was transmitted from the phone and was filled with hatred: “Good, since that’s the case what else do we have to be afraid of. We must kill them!”

“Wang Yan, at that time you will apologise to Liu Yi Yi and lure

her off to the side. I feel that her Malas isn't simple and possibly still contains some divine energy. It's a pity that the our previous attempt to obtain the Malas was foiled and resulted in the current situation." Liu Yun Zhi's voice was filled with discontent.

"Alright!" Wang Yan's voice had grown colder as she agreed to Liu Yun Zhi's request.

Liu Yun Zhi muttered to himself in a soft raspy voice: "We can't act in front of the others, this could be slightly troublesome. We have to carefully plan."

"Pah!"

Pang Bo closed the cover of his phone and loudly said:" Everyone has heard what was discussed, these three ungrateful people actually want to kill me and Ye Fan. This time please don't blame us for not showing any care for relationship between classmates."

At this point Ye Fan walked forward with big strides and did not say anything more. Pang Bo hastily followed behind and Zhang Zi Ling also kept up with them. The others stood up as they followed them into the forest.

When they saw Ye Fan and Pang Bo walking over with big strides, Li Chang Qing and Wang Yan had butterflies in their stomach as they had a guilty conscience. Liu Yun Zhi's face was especially downcast.

“We’ve let you go again and again and did not fuss with you about all that you did to us. You guys actually schemed to kill the two of us, this time if we let you off the hook I’ll write my name Pang Bo backwards!”

“You…… You’re talking nonsense!” Li Chang Qing immediately started to break out in cold sweat.

Wang Yan’s face was pale as she frantically denied: “You……. What are you saying? I don’t understand.”

Pang Bo did not say anything else as he played the recording on his phone again.

At this moment Wang Yan and Li Chang Qing were panicky and Liu Yun Zhi’s face finally started to drain of colour. The facts were in front of their faces and they had no way to defend themselves.

“Those were words spoken in our moments of anger, how could it be regarded as real!” Li Chang Qing loudly shouted, it could be seen that he was terrified.

“Words said in anger? Do you believe that the classmates are only three year olds? Everyone has understood the situation.” The usually silent Zhang Zi Ling coldly spoke up.

“Liu Yun Zhi, you people shouldn’t have! How could you guys hatch such diabolical plans, such silliness!” Wang Zi Wen’s face was very stern.

Lin Jia shook her head as she sighed: “We’re all classmates in the end, why did you guys have to be so vicious?”

“This is too much! We’re classmates who’ve been through thick and thin to arrive at this strange world. Do you guys have any humanity left in you?!” The others also voiced their opinions and began to criticize and condemn the three people.

Finally Zhou Yi frowned as he said: “Do we really need to place our lives on the line, we are classmates after all, hurry and apologise to Ye Fan and Pang Bo……”

Liu Yun Zhi and his cronies were pale and at this moment they wanted to find a hole to hide in.

“We have no need for apologies, with all the duplicity they’ve demonstrated what sincerity could there possibly be in their apologies.” Ye Fan looked at Zhou Yi before turning to face the group: “They’ve already shown that they could come up with such ideas, if I could still calmly face this that would be deceiving myself and all of you. At this moment someone actually wants to find an opportunity to kill us, I can’t possibly be wary every single moment of the day right?”

Having said his piece Ye Fan strode forward.

Liu Yun Zhi’s face was a ghastly white and had drained of any colour, he tightly held onto his Vajra as his eyes reflected his franticness.

Wang Yan was terrified as she shouted: “ You..... What do you want to do?!”

Li Chang Qing also had an expression of terror and he was frantic as he rushed Liu Yun Zhi: “Hurry! Use the Vajra!”

The three of them knew that this time Ye Fan would certainly act, and he would not be kind in his actions.

Pang Bo followed but Ye Fan stopped him saying: “I’ll be the evil person this time, if one wants to be evil he has to be evil to the end*!” He then proceeded to take the bronze plaque from within Pang Bo’s grasp.

[T/N* Idiom: When one decides on a line of action he should follow it to the end]

Ye Fan held the plaque in one hand as he moved closer.

“You..... Don’t come over!” Wang Yan screamed.

Ye Fan did not look at her as he moved towards Liu Yun Zhi and Li Chang Qing.

At this moment Liu Yun Zhi suddenly pushed Li Chang Qing towards Ye Fan to protect his body as he wielded the Vajra and loudly shouted: “Go to hell!”

“Bang!”

Ye Fan wielded the bronze plaque with a single hand and seemed to be hacking at a straw man as Li Chang Qing was flung into the air and flew four to five metres away. One could imagine only the amount force that was used.

In the back the group was silently alarmed as they felt that Ye Fan really deserved his title of “Barbarian”. His strength was so tremendous that it was certainly unusual.

Pang Bo looked at Li Chang Qing who had fallen to the ground and ridiculed: “This is the Yun Zhi who you claimed was full of ‘justice’? In a critical situation using you to block a blow, such wonderful justice!”

Li Chang Qing felt as though one side of his body was going through acute pain and several bones had likely been broken. He struggled to get up but Pang Bo stepped on top of him and prevented him from moving.

“Dong!”

At this point Ye Fan wielded the bronze plaque and smashed it onto the Vajra, Liu Yun Zhi’s hand was covered in a dim divine glow however this was simply insufficient in the face of such monstrous strength!

The bronze plaque within Ye Fan's hand did not emit any divine light however his strength was unparalleled as he continually wielded the bronze plaque seemingly like a quaking bronze mountain.

"Dong! Dong! Dong!"

Three successive metallic rings could be heard as Liu Yun Zhi was smashed to his knees. He knelt there and his upper limbs seemed to have been completely shattered as they spasmed, the Vajra had fallen to the side and was retrieved by Ye Fan.

Shortly, Zhang Zi Ling followed up and brought Wang Yan over.

"You..... What do you want to do?" Liu Yun Zhi's face was a pasty white as the bronze plaque was pressing down on him keeping him knelt in front of Ye Fan.

Ye Fan laughed in a flat tone as heard this and said: "What do I want do to do? I just want to feel secure in future, no longer needing to be concerned about other people."

"You..... What exactly do you want to do?" Liu Yun Zhi was thoroughly frantic at this point as he ran to the group nearby and shouted: "We're all classmates, don't let him have his way....."

"Have you heard of how they used to execute people in the past, especially those criminals who were especially vicious. They made them fall to their deaths from cliffs or onto large boulders.

“Don’t! Don’t!” Liu Yun Zhi shouted in panic, he was powerless to resist and was lifted by Ye Fan with a single hand like a little chick as he was brought out of the forest towards the stone wall that had “Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land” carved on it.

Pang Bo and Zhang Zi Ling seized Li Chang Qing and Wang Yan respectively as they followed.

“Don’t! Somebody save me!” The three people were terrified as they started to loudly shout.

“Ye Fan, doing this isn’t so good. No matter how wrong they are, we are after all classmates. You can’t be so reckless in deciding their lives and deaths.” Zhou Yi’s expression was unhappy as he tried to stop them.

“That’s right, don’t behave like this. This is after all three human lives and no matter how wrong they were, they don’t deserve to be sentenced to death. Let’s give them another chance to change for the better.” Three to four other people also tried to persuade.

Ye Fan turned around as he faced the group and said: “Actually, I also don’t want to do this. However, if I give them a way to live, it would be the same as opening a road to death for myself.”

Suddenly, the expression on Ye Fan’s face changed as he saw a cave within the cliff wall. There were two tiger cubs that were completed covered in stripes and were baring their fangs at him. Although they were currently only one Chi long, they were giving

off the presence of a vicious animal.

Saber-toothed tiger!

Ye Fan was shocked, this animal had long been extinct on earth however he did not expect that he would actually encounter one today. Although the cubs were small, their teeth were long and sharp, glinting with a cold light.

This was the den of a Saber-toothed tiger! The adult tiger was out hunting for food and was not around, otherwise the group would currently be in danger.

At this moment besides Zhou Yi's attempted persuasion the others also voiced out: "Ye Fan don't be reckless, give them a chance. It's easier said than done to kill our classmates……"

After closely examining the cave within the wall, Ye Fan turned to face the group and said: "I have never been calculative with them, but they were constantly malicious towards me and Pang Bo. I'm only acting in the interests of self preservation. Since everyone does not want to see killing among classmates, I'll listen to everybody and give them a chance."

Upon hearing these words Pang Bo was agitated as he shouted: "We're still giving them another chance? Could it be that we're gonna wait until they really kill us!"

Ye Fan shook his head as he looked deeply towards Pang Bo: "We

will tie the three of them up and leave them here for a period of time. We cannot let these three dangerous people follow us any longer.”

Although Pang Bo was very unwilling, he understood Ye Fan very well and seeing those eyes filled with deep thoughts he knew that Ye Fan must have something planned and did not say anything further.

Liu Yun Zhi was lifted by Ye Fan this entire time and did not see the cave behind with two tiger cubs inside. He did not know what Ye Fan was planning nor did he know why Ye Fan had a change of heart but his heart was celebrating that he had at least managed to live.

It was only a short while before Liu Yun Zhi, Li Chang Qing and Wang Yan were bound tightly and the rope was made from the belts on their body as well as portions of torn fabric from their clothes. As a final request from Ye Fan, the three people’s mouths were also gagged.

Ye Fan lifted Liu Yun Zhi to the cave and threw him in. When Pang Bo and Zhang Zi Ling got close, they stared with their mouths wide open as they saw the two Saber-tooth tiger cubs. This was actually a tiger’s den!

The expression of unwillingness on Pang Bo’s face immediately disappeared and he almost let out a shout. He now understood why Ye Fan had changed his initial plan. Throwing the three people into the tiger’s den was a fitting punishment, there would certainly be an adult saber-tooth tiger nearby and would likely

return within a short period of time.

"Wu....Wu....." Liu Yun Zhi's face was green as he tried to shout but all that came out was a muffled "Wu", the gag simply prevented him from shouting.

Pang Bo and Zhang Zi Ling followed suit and threw both Li Chang Qing and Wang Yan into the tiger's den.

Under the suggestions from Ye Fan, Pang Bo and Zhang Zi Ling, the group hurried on their way. This place was certainly a dangerous place to stay for too long. Having walked for two to three Li, a horrific roar coming from a tiger could be heard coming from where they had previously been.

# Chapter 32: The Aging Of Youths In A Flash

The tiger's roar shook the heavens and leaves started to fly all around. The loud roar resonated between heaven and earth like thunder or the crashing of waves making their faces drain of colour as they realised it came from where they were previously resting.

Pang Bo and Zhang Zi Ling exchanged glances, they knew that Liu Yun Zhi and his cronies were done for. After being found by the adult tiger within its den they had no way to continue living. The Sabre-toothed tiger was naturally vicious and it was looking after its cubs making it especially ferocious.

The faces of the others were pale, they had just left the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land and almost ran into a vicious beast, continuing forward it would be impossible to imagine what they could possibly encounter. Thinking of this, even though the nights in the forbidden land were filled with a deathly aura, the days were much safer.

"After getting away from the crocodile ancestor and experiencing all kinds of hardships, we travelled through the desolation of space and finally arrived at a planet filled with life. Losing our lives here would really be such a pity." Zhou Yi gazed at the forest two to three Li away.

The tiger's roars were definitely a result of Liu Yun Zhi and his cronies, thinking of this made them feel shivers go down their spines. Images of blood and gore filled their heads, the ferocious tiger rending apart three bodies, its sharp claws and white teeth

covered in fresh blood and gnawing on flesh. That frightening image made their backs cover in cold sweat.

“Let’s get out of here!”

They definitely could not tarry in this area any longer, within the vicinity of the den was the ferocious tiger’s territory. Only after rushing another four to five Li* did everyone stop to catch their breath.

[ Li = 500 meters]

“Why is this forest so quiet, could it be that we’ve gone into another ancient forbidden ground?”

Ancient trees were all around that were tall and seemed to cover the sky. The forest was silent and there were no birds chirping or the sounds of beasts, no butterflies were flying around and it seemed that all the animals had vanished without a trace.

The direction they were headed in was certainly correct however the group felt that something was off and were very wary of their surroundings.

After advancing for another two thousand metres or so, different kinds of ancient trees could be seen. A vast expanse of space appeared before their eyes, it was a flatten hilly area that appeared rather firm and arid. Stepping on the ground felt like it was made of marble. Not even a blade of grass was growing* except for a few

huge rocks lying around.

[Idiom*: Barren]

“It’s so dark up ahead, what is that?”

“It seems like an……. extremely large lake that was completely black!”

This area was covered in huge boulders and they had blocked the group’s line of sight. After bypassing those rocks they could clearly see the scenery in front of them and it was startling.

An enormous lake was situated in front, it was silent like a slab of iron, there were no waves and what made people alarmed was that it was pitch black in colour like ink, alarmingly black.

“Now I truly understand that there is dirty water in this world. No matter who sees this lake would be filled with a sense of unease. I’ve never seen such pitch black lake water before.

The black lake emitted a deathly aura, there were no signs of life and the surroundings of the lake were barren, even grass was absent. This area seemed to be void of any form of life.

“It seems….. It seems that there’s some sort of sound.” A female classmate said while trembling, her skin pale.

At this moment, the others heard a faint noise that was very weird, it was low pitched and sounded like whimpers of pain.

“Crack!”

Suddenly, a sound of breaking could be heard and it seemed that something solid had been broken apart.

“There..... It’s there!” Liu Yi Yi was pale as she pointed to the shore of the black lake. There was a large boulder that was several tens of metres in length.

It seemed like something was leaning against the back of the huge boulder, only a small portion of it’s body could be seen. It’s leather skin was raven black and seemed cold and metallic, giving off the lustre of black platinum*.

[The word used is 乌金]

“What is that thing?!” Everyone was alarmed.

“Don’t care about it! Let’s hurry and leave this place!”

A large black lake surrounded by a barren hilly area, any creature or beast that resided here will not be too friendly.

“Crack!”

The sound of breaking transmitted over again and a low pitched

roar that seemed to be filled with pain could be heard. It seemed to be struggling as it flipped its body over and knocked into the large boulder.

The huge boulder which was seven to eight metres in height and tens of metres across but it had been knocked down and rolled into the ink-like depths of the lake as a black wave rippled across the lake.

It was at this moment that the group could finally see clearly what the vicious beast looked like. It was three metres long and about one and a half metres tall, it was not as big as they had imagined but this was shocking as well. The three metre long body had actually managed to easily knock the large boulder into the lake, it could be imagined the strength contained within that body.

“What is that thing?!”

Nobody had seen such an animal before, it did not have fur nor did it have scales covering it. It seemed to have been cast from black iron, its body was jet-black and had a metallic sheen to it.

It was no longer than three metres and looked like a jet-black piece of iron, seemingly very firm and filled with untold strength. At a glance it looked like a strong bull but on closer inspection it was vastly different. There were nine sharp horns on its head that seemed to radiate an eerie black glow. It actually had five eyes which emitted a blood red light. From its mouth that was slightly ajar, rows of half a Chi long sinister sharp teeth could be seen making it seem cruel and giving off a fiendish aura.

This was a frightening wild beast that had never been seen before, one glance and it was clear that it was vicious. Standing far away and looking at it made their hearts palpitate.

“It seems to be shedding its skin……” Someone softly said in alarm.

On the back of the black beast was a hole that was slowly ripping apart showing the new body within. It was darker and glossier inside and seemed to have been made from black platinum.

“Hurry, let’s leave! We should escape from this place while it is still shedding its skin!”

It seemed to be like a cicada as it shed its skin. This shedding of skin occurring on a beast was very unusual and made it seem like an evil monster. It was fortunate that it was clearing shedding its skin otherwise who knew what the monster would do.

If they could lure that sabre-toothed tiger that had roared like thunder here, it would most likely be like a small meek cat in front of this vicious monster. It could easily knock such a large boulder into the lake, it was simply impossible to guess how frightening such a beast would be.

Everyone was more scared than being hurt*as they skirted past the black lake, the low and painful roars were slowly becoming further away before finally disappearing.

[idiom*: to get through a daunting experience without mishap

After scaling another small mountain, they saw the peak of the tall mountain. The buildings was now even more visible and it was clear that was a construction of a massive scale, the halls(of a palace) seem to extend forever into the distance. This resembled a celestial palace that descended upon the mortal world.

“Why do I feel feverish?” A female student said with embarrassment to a female classmate by her side.

“I have a similar feeling.”

At this moment everyone realised that something weird was going on with their bodies. Their skin was a frightening red and it looked like blood would burst out at any time. Everyone was feeling a searing heat and the insides of the bodies felt as though a raging fire was burning.

This was clearly not a result of the weather, rather, it was their bodies that were in a peculiar condition. Everyone gradually felt pain from their skin and flesh as though they were being roasted alive in an oven

“I …… can’t bear this anymore! It’s so torturous!”A female student crouched on the floor in pain and shouted: “It’s so painful! It feels like my blood and flesh are about to dry up!” She could not control herself as her tears streamed down her face as she rolled on the ground.

Soon after, the second and third student also could not bear it anymore as streaks of blood could be seen rupturing from their skin. They too fell to the ground and started to roll about.

“What is happening! What has happened to us?!”

Everybody recognised that the situation looked grim. At this point nobody could stand and they had mostly fallen to the ground. Cries of pain could be heard as their skin seemed to be peeling off, as though a knife was slicing through their skin, the pain was simply unbearable.

“Aaahh…” Someone could not bear it no longer as he screamed and rolled around leaving traces of blood all over the ground.

“I don’t want to die!” Someone screamed in fright.

A disaster had suddenly befallen them and nobody knew how or why this was happened. They were unsure of what was happening to their bodies and only felt as though their bodies were being sliced apart as though they were slowly being dismembered.

“Let me die, it’s too painful!”

Struggling, crying, tumbling, shouting, people were filled with despair as they loudly screamed. The intense pain made them lose their clarity as they everything became blurry.

Finally, everybody’s bodies were covered with a layer of blood mist that seemed like a blazing blood red fire. The painful cries

filled the area and all the birds and animals had vacated.

This was an inhumane torture, it was as though the body was in purgatory and going through the most miserable tortures in the world. Eventually the intense pain caused everyone to faint and nobody could maintain their consciousness.

It was unknown how long had passed as the mountain finally became silent again and the cries of anguish dissipated.

Two hours later, Ye Fan who was lying down on the wild grass was the first to recover. The sky was blue and there were the sounds of birds and bugs in the area. He hastily sat up and realised that his body was no longer in pain, it felt as though it was filled with energy and he felt very relaxed. It seemed that his body was filled with untold energy and he could even tear apart a saber-toothed tiger.

It was at this moment that Ye Fan felt that something was amiss. The clothes on his body seemed to have grown larger and those worn on his body seemed to be very loose, a total misfit. From within the long sleeve he reached out his hands and upon seeing them, the calm demeanor that he usually had was lost as he exclaimed. Were these still his hands? Such small and sleek hands, these were something that an adult could not possibly have.

Ye Fan stood up speedily and he felt that everything was inconceivable. At this moment the clothes on his body were too big, as though he were a performer in an opera. He realised that it was not the clothes on his body that had gotten large, rather, his body had become smaller and he seemed to be barely eleven of

twelve.

At this moment, Pang Bo who was nearby also woke up and after rubbing his eyes he looked at Ye Fan who stood beside him and had an expression of shock as he said: “Damn kid who are you? Where did you come from and why the f*** are you wearing Ye Fan’s clothes?!”

Having said this he realised that something was wrong as he flipped his body and stood up. Thereafter he let out a shout as though he had seen a ghost.

“Why are my clothes too big, no, why is my body so small?” Having realised this he looked at Ye Fan in shock as he stammered: “You….. You are Ye Fan?” He covered his mouth as he realised that his voice was soft and immature like a youth.

Looking at Pang Bo, Ye Fan was also stunned. That was a tender, young and immature looking youth that looked to be only eleven of twelve but he could still vaguely see the shadows of the adult Pang Bo.

“What happened to us?” Pang Bo came to Ye Fan’s side as he excitedly shouted. He was in shock.

“I think….. we’ve returned back to our childhood.” Ye Fan was shocked and did not understand but could only make a judgement based on their current looks.

“F***! How can this sort of thing happen to us?!” Pang Bo loudly shouted as he had difficulty believing and understanding how such an impossible thing had happened.

“Let’s hurry and check what the others look like.”

Ye Fan called to him as they started to climb the mountain. They had previously rolled off the side of the mountain for tens of metres and it was thankful that the slope of the mountain was gentle and full or vegetation that they managed to avoid any danger. It could be imagined how violent their struggles were and thinking back the pain they had been through was simply unimaginable.

Reaching the mountain peak. Ye Fan and Pang Bo were stunned, Pang Bo shouted: “Who are these old and elderly folk?!”

What they saw in front of their eyes made the two petrified, their hearts palpitated as they considered what could have possibly happened.

There were over a dozen bodies lying disorderly on the ground and anywhere the eye could see, bodies that had a head full of white hair and withered skin, that was looking especially old. These people all wore familiar clothes and guessing that they were seventy or eighty years in age would be no exaggeration. They simply looked withered with old age.

“They…… couldn’t possible be Zhou Yi, Wang Zi Wen, Lin Jia, Li Xiao Man and the others?!”

The aging of youths in a snap of the fingers, both people felt their mouths were dry and they stood there like statues as they stared.

# Chapter 33: The White Haired Youths

Ye Fan looked at the group of ten or more old people with heads full of white hair and did not speak for a long time. Those were his familiar classmates but they had suddenly gone through such an abrupt change. It was simply jaw dropping.

Pang Bo was also speechless and felt trepidation and fear. If he had become like that he would definitely be thinking of dying.

The two people rushed over to check the conditions of each person and they were all breathing, their lives were not at risk.

“Ehh!”

Pang Bo noticed Liu Yi Yi within the grass and she did not seem to have aged. She was still delicate and pretty although she looked a bit pitiful.

This made Ye Fan and Pang Bo happy as they had always been on good relations with Liu Yi Yi since university. They were filled with compassion for her and did not want anything bad to happen to her.

Below an ancient tree Ye Fan found Zhang Zi Ling and he seemed to have aged to about forty, although he had lost some time he was not as decrepit as Zhou Yi and the rest.

“The handsome Zi Ling has become an uncle.”

“That’s probably better than becoming grandpa Zi Ling.”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were softly conversing.

It was not long before Liu Yi Yi woke up and upon seeing Ye Fan and Pang Bo she was shocked and her mouth hung loose. After a short period, Zhang Zi Ling woke up and upon discovery of his body’s condition he let out a shout. He had been a youth at his prime, brimming with vitality but had become an honest looking uncle. Anyone put into his shoes would find this hard to accept.

“Zi Ling don’t be too agitated, look at their conditions and you’ll find peace.”

Zhang Zi Ling heard them and looked over at Zhou Yi, Li Xiao Man and the rest and was stunned. He realised that there were no worst misfortune, only more misfortune.

“How could it be like this……” He was stunned and in a daze but at least he was faring better than the despair he was facing earlier.

In the group, Ye Fan and Pang Bo had returned to their youth, Liu Yi Yi had maintained at the same age while Zhang Zi Ling had lost over twenty years. The rest had become decrepit old men and women.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo exchanged glances, the two of them immediately thought of the translucent red fruit. When they ate it

they had felt immense pleasure and had quickly recovered their energy. From the looks of it, that fruit was certainly out of the ordinary and could be described as simply miraculous!

Because of some unknown reasons everyone had turned old. Only those who had eaten the fruit seemed to have prevented the erosion of time.

“Exactly what power deprived them of their youth and vigor?” Pang Bo was puzzled and all his doubts were unanswered.

“I think this probably has something to do with the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land.” Ye Fan conjectured.

Just the name ‘Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land’ made it clear that this place was ancient and it had likely been a forbidden ground since long ago. Even the birds, animals and insects kept away. The land was barren and a deathly aura was heavy in the air, it was definitely an ominous and evil plot of land.

Even so, they had been able to safely walk out without encountering any danger. This did not seem to fit with common sense and this clearly made it seem that the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land did not live up to it’s name.

“That’s right! It must be because of the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land!” Pang Bo also felt that this conjecture was sound.

Based on their speculations, the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land

contained a frightening power that had deprived them of their youth and vigor. But why had the symptoms only occurred after they left the area? This was puzzling.

"Maybe it's the power of a curse, upon entering the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land whether we escape or not the curse would trigger once a certain period of time had passed. There was simply no way to escape."

Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt very fortunate, if it was not for the miraculous fruit that they had found and eaten, they would have already become doddering old men.

After a period of time people started to wake up one after the other, the mountain peak was filled with mournful cries that let one's hair stand on end. The "Wu.....Wu...." sound of crying could be heard everywhere.

Aging prematurely, a head full of white hair from an early age, this was the world's greatest tragedy. Their twenties were supposed to be the prime of their lives but before they knew it, they had all withered and grown a head full of white hair, their emotions were riled and they were aggrieved to the point of wanting to be dead.

"Why did I become like this?" Zhou Yi trembled as he lifted out a hand, feeling the wrinkles on his skin and pulling out a few strands of his white hair. He bellowed angrily in an archaic voice: "Why?!"

By the side, Wang Zi Wen was also shivering uncontrollably as he

inspected his body. His eyes were cloudy and his eye bags were the size of pigeon eggs seemingly ancient and said in a trembling voice: “I don’t believe it……”

“Aaahh…” Lin Jia was on the verge of breakdown, her sharp cry filled the air and all the birds in the area flew away in fright.

Looks were a woman’s priority in life, this was especially so for beautiful woman who paid more attention to their looks. Lin Jia who was naturally enchanting was born with beauty and sex appeal, suddenly she found her snow white skin had lost its radiance and become rough and wrinkled, this feeling was simply worse than death.

On the other side, Li Xiao Man was in a similar situation as she was in such pain that she really contemplated suicide. If it was said that previously she was a lotus flower that had just come into full bloom, right now she could not even be compared to the dried up leaves on the lotus flower. Her fine black hair had all turned to white, dull without any lustre like dried up grass. Her skin was wrinkly and loose and her eyes were cloudy, her face was similarly wrinkled.

Seeing Ye Fan walk over, Li Xiao Man suddenly screamed: “Don’t come over!” She used her hand to cover her face as she cried while also burying her head between her knees.

Ye Fan did not go over in fear of upsetting her and loudly consoled the group: “Don’t fall into despair, this world even has gods, what can’t happen. There must be a way to solve this problem.”

On the mountain top, the atmosphere was dismal and many people were in emotional distress. This was even more so when they saw that Ye Fan and Pang Bo looked as though they were only eleven or twelve making the shock even more intense. A large majority of the group had become old and decrepit but the two of them had actually returned to their youth, this comparison made many people's hearts bleed.

"Oh my god, Jesus..... Your grand uncle!" Carter was furious and spoke in a mix of english and chinese to portray his incomparably grieved feelings.

"Devil, don't be so agitated." Pang Bo walked over and sincerely patted his shoulder saying: "To grow old with one's loved one is the world's most romantic thing."

Carter cried on the spot like a child "Wu....Wu....Wu...." and said: "My girlfriend.... isn't even here. How can this be in any way considered romantic."

Pang Bo was stunned as he glanced at Li Xiao Man but did not say anything more and walked to the others in the group.

"Ye Fan, why didn't you guys turn old?" Zhou Yi was the first to calm down as he firmly stared at Ye Fan and Pang Bo, his cloudy eyes shot forth two rays of light.

The others also kept their feelings of agony in check and looked over.

Pang Bo heard Zhou Yi's words and felt very uncomfortable as he sincerely said: "I'll say Zhou grandpa, you can't possibly be suspecting us of foul play. If we had such mystical powers, we might as well have become gods already, why bother being normal humans."

Lin Jia stopped crying as she looked at Ye Fan and earnestly pleaded: "Ye Fan, tell me honestly, how do I return to my youth? What did you guys do?"

Ye Fan could only console her and give her hope. That mysterious red fruit had long been consumed and there were simply no other methods.

"Let's leave this place and ..... head to that celestial palace!" Zhou Yi shivered and swayed as he stood up, his hand pointing to the distant tall mountain. The halls (of a palace) seemed to extend forever into the distance and appeared to have descended from heaven itself. Although his body was decrepit, his mind was still clear and understood that currently this was their only hope. If there were immortals there, all this could be solved in an instant.

The group helped each other as they continued trekking the mountain. Many people had aged and their movements were sluggish. Ye Fan, Pang Bo, Liu Yi Yi and Zhang Zi Ling were busy as they ran to and fro to support each person in the group.

"Zhou grandpa, Wang grandpa, let me support the two of you as we go." Pang Bo walked in the centre and supported them with his

left and right hands. Wang Zi Wen laughed bitterly at Pang Bo's antics while Zhou Yi remained expressionless.

It was unknown why Li Xiao Man chose Ye Fan to support her, on the way nothing was said as her tears continued to flow. This continued till the point where she almost fainted from crying.

"What's going on? How can there still be a mountain between us and the palace?"

Ye Fan and the rest felt that something was amiss, the celestial palace had only been a mountain away but after struggling to traverse another mountain they found that they were still the same distance away, as though they had never moved.

"Since a while back no matter how much we progress it seems that our distance to the celestial palace has not changed one bit. What is going on?"

They attempted to get closer again as they crested another mountain but the result was the same. At this moment everyone understood that there was simply no way to get closer.

"It's time for us to make a decision, maybe we should stop advancing in that direction. It seems that the mysterious palace is a place that we will never be able to reach."

Suddenly, there was a stench that assailed their senses. The trees began to tremble as a tall black five metre vicious looking man-

beast jumped towards the group, its sharp claws flashing. Its body was covered in black fur and its length was at least half a Chi. It was awe-inspiring, its body was like an orangutan but its head was weird, there was a one Chi long beak on its face and it seemed to be a bird demon that managed to attain a human form. They had simply never encountered such a vicious beast before.

A majority of the group was filled with terror and two people even feebly fell to the ground. Such a sinister looking huge creature suddenly jumping at them, if its claws struck, one would certainly be rended apart.

“Ye Fan, be careful!” Pang Bo shouted as Ye Fan was in front of the group and Pang Bo nervously wielded his bronze plaque and rushed forward.

Ye Fan shoved the two people by his side as he charged forth while brandishing the Vajra he took from Liu Yun Zhi in his right hand.

“Bang!”

The Vajra came into contact with a sharp claw and caused the black beast’s hand to bend in a weird shape, it was clear that the bone had snapped.

Everyone was stunned and believed that this was the power of the Vajra. Only Ye Fan knew that the last divine power had been used up by Liu Yun Zhi and what happened was solely due to the immense strength within his body!

He was startled, if this was the previous him it would have been impossible to have such strength. After returning to his youth he felt that his body was surging with energy and could seemingly tear apart tigers & toss elephants with his divine strength.

The huge beast let out a shrill cry as its beak opened and it ruthlessly pecked at Ye Fan while its other sharp claw also attacked.

Ye Fan's actions were unbelievably fast as he dodged with an incredible speed and arrived at the back of the huge beast. He then forcefully wielded the Vajra and smashed it on the beast's back. Sounds of bone shattering could immediately be heard.

"Bang!"

It was difficult to imagine how large the force was as the five metre tall black beast seemed like a puppet and was flung eight to nine metres away. It landed heavily on the ground and after struggling for a moment its movements ceased.

The group was speechless, the scene that had played out in front of them was simply unbelievable. The barbarian's body had become smaller like an eleven or twelve year old and seemed to be gentle and delicate but the strength and speed he exhibited was so astounding that it made them simply shocked.

Everyone had been filled with fear but no danger had come to pass as they finally let loose a breath. Thereafter they furtively

discussed as they had no idea why Ye Fan had such divine strength and their hearts were filled with envy and jealousy.

The sky was gradually turning dark and finally the sun had completely set. The group was set on crossing another mountain but found that the celestial palace was still separated by a mountain and the distance had not changed.

At this moment, everybody had thoroughly fallen to despair and decided not to continue in that direction.

At this instant, there was a bright light over the horizon like a rainbow cutting across the sky, in the dark sky it was especially eye-catching.

“That is……”

Everyone was startled, there was actually a figure of a person within that rainbow. To one’s surprise that person could move unhindered in the skies and travel through the air, this was definitely not an ordinary person!

“Shua!”

The rainbow abruptly changed its direction and headed towards them. The speed was astonishing like a rainbow cresting the horizon, arriving in the blink of an eye.

# Chapter 34: The Legend Of The Desolates

A rainbow that was two metres in length and one metre in breadth was ramrod straight as it stood in the sky, highly textured, resplendent and bright. Like a piece of sparkling and translucent crystal.

Inside there was a young girl of eighteen or nineteen, her complexion was smooth like jade and her figure was slender. She had a slim waist and her straight legs were long and alluring, she wore wore a light blue dress that seemed to naturally float. She exuded an aura of someone that had transcended the confines of the earth.

Everyone was in a daze, this young beautiful girl seemed like a fairy that was untainted by the world, an otherworldly beauty. Like a moving dewdrop on a pure white lotus flower as well as a snow lotus on the peak of a snow white mountain, giving a feeling of one that does not eat the food of common mortals.

The world was not lacking in astonishing beauties but it was difficult to find one that carried an atmosphere of transcendence, as though she had stepped out of the mortal realm and had become one entity with the natural world.

This exquisite and elegant girl was very serene as she gazed at the group. She said a sentence in a moving voice and only after pondering over the sentence for a while did the group finally understand. Her speech was similar to that of an ancient dialect, it carried a soft flavour and required them to carefully analyze before they could understand the meaning of the words.

“We are a group of people who have fallen into dire straits. Are you a fairy? Can you save us?” A female student tearfully said. Her body was dry and wrinkled and she looked like a doddering old woman. Finally seeing someone who looked like a fairy, she immediately cried out for help.

Lin Jia and Li Xiao Man also stepped forward with expressions of hope, they were previously rare beauties and the psychological blow they felt was simply worse than death. Seeing such an elegant beauty made them feel more desperate to regain their past looks.

There was a glow in the air that seemed to have been cut off from a section of the rainbow’s brilliance, it coagulated to form a piece of precious jade and sealed the fairy-like girl within.

In reality, the crystal-like rainbow did not congeal and only seemed to have a form. The girl within was not hindered as her black hair cascaded like a waterfall, her eyes were moving like water and misty. Her skin was snow white and translucent seeming to radiate an otherworldly glow making her beauty even more astonishing.

“Have you people entered into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land?”

Another sentence of soft and moving words and the group pondered for a while before understanding the words said in the ancient dialect.

“That’s right, we escaped from that place.” A female classmate

that looked weathered helplessly cried as she looked at the sky, desperation written on her face. To a woman, such a tragedy was an immense blow and she was confused thus she did not consider her words carefully.

Upon hearing this, the serene expression on the girl within the rainbow showed ripples as she had an expression of surprise.

“They actually came out of there alive, this is really not simple.” She softly said these words. Her gaze continually swept past Liu Yi Yi, Zhang Zi Ling, Pang Bo and Ye Fan as she seemed to contemplate before an expression of even greater surprise seemed to appear on her features. She hurriedly questioned: “Are these your actual ages?”

“No, we aren’t that old. We have no idea why we lost dozens of years of our youth and vitality.” A male student eagerly responded and hoped nervously while looking at the girl in the sky.

The girl did not bother to look at him as though she had known that they had lost their youth and vitality but she continued to stare at Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

Ye Fan answered: “We were initially in our twenties but have no idea why some people aged while some became younger.”

“For real?” The girl in the air had on an expression of shock as she stared firmly at Ye Fan and Pang Bo and hurriedly questioned further: “Did the two of you eat a red fruit that was glistening with a scarlet red and sparkled like a crystal….”

Ye Fan was sure that the fruit they had eaten was exactly what the young girl had described and under the current circumstances they simply had no way to refute as Zhou Yi and the group were watching. He gently nodded.

The girl in the sky had a weird expression as she looked at Ye Fan and Pang Bo, as though she was looking at a priceless treasure and being stared at by such a moving beauty made the two people feel their hair stand and they felt very uncomfortable.

“May I ask if there is a way to save the people who lost their youth and vitality?” Wang Zi Wen could not keep calm under the circumstances and wanted to know if he could regain his youth.

“You don’t need to fall to despair, although it will be difficult to recover your looks, your lost youth has come with several benefits and many people in the outside world will be trying to wrest for you.” Seeing the expressions of confusion on the group, the young girl in the sky continued: “Don’t worry, fighting to obtain you isn’t a bad thing, conversely you can treat it as a an opportunity.”

“I..... only want to regain my past looks.” A female student tearfully said. Becoming old like this she had simply lost her motivation to live.

“Alright, let me first bring you people out of this ancient and desolate forest.” The mysterious young girl waved her hand and a rainbow encompassed the group lifting them into the air to float beside her.

This was certainly a mysterious world, based on the understanding of the group this seemed to be an immortal's technique.

"This area is a far cry from civilization, if you people wanted to walk out, this would simply be impossible. This primitive forest has many frightening beasts and even if I met some of them I would have no other choice but to bypass them."

Pang Bo had an expression of curiosity as he asked: "Didn't you come from that celestial palace up ahead?"

"Celestial palace……" The young girl had a befuddled expression as she said: "What celestial palace?"

Pang Bo pointed at a distant tall mountain and said: "Aren't there many palace halls over there that seem to extend forever into the distance. An innumerable amount of vast and imposing palaces that has many cranes fluttering about in the skies."

"The legends are real….." The young girl had an expression of surprise.

"What legend? Could it be that you can't see it?"

"That's right, I can't see anything at all." The young girl within the rainbow had a contemplative expression as she said: "Forbidden Ancient Desolate land, a forbidden ground since

ancient times, a place that prohibits life. Since ancient times those who entered unknowingly and managed to live to tell the tale all said they saw a celestial palace that seemed to be close yet forever too far to touch."

It was indeed so, the group had a flash of insight as what they were going through was exactly as the young girl described. Someone then asked: "Could it really be an illusion?"

"It isn't an illusion, there must be a specific time and some special methods to enter the celestial palace. That kind of golden opportunity cannot be obtained by just anyone, it will be in sight but unattainable."

Zhou Yi was very concerned for himself and asked: "Those who unknowingly entered the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land and managed to live, what happened to their lives thereafter?"

The young girl was like a snow white jade plant, lucid and elegant. She glanced at him and calmly replied: "Only one lives for every hundred that enter into the forbidden territory, even if they manage to live, they're usually old and withered, nearing the end of their lives. However, their saving grace is that the sea of bitterness will be stimulated, if they walk on the path of cultivation they can cultivate with half the work, twice the effect."

"Can we regain our youth?"

"It's very difficult but not impossible. As you cultivate to a higher level, your vitality would increase and when you reach a certain

level you can actually change your looks." The words from the young girl immediately ignited their hopes.

"Is there anything at the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land? What power made us lose our youth?" Wang Zi Wen could not contain his curiosity and asked. This was a question that plagued the hearts of everyone present and they were resentful and helpless.

"This question can be said to have been there since ancient times. People have asked this question countless times but nobody is clear on why this happens." The young girl brought the group and then swiftly flew, their surroundings were shrouded in a golden glow and seemed to be a rainbow piercing through the sky. The gentle glow blocked any wind and allowed them to speak without problems. She continued: "According to legend, within the abyss of the forbidden territory that rejects life, there is a forsaken place. Maybe an ancient person resides there or perhaps there is a type of terrifying force that exists there."

"Hasn't there been anyone who went to investigate?" Ye Fan could not help but ask.

"Since ancient times there have been untold number of people who tried to investigate but they all perished without exception." The mysterious young girl looked back at the primitive forest behind her and said: "That entire piece of land had previously been dyed in fresh blood and bones were piled high like mountains. Each person that perished was an unparalleled expert."

"That year, there was an immortal sect of the holy lands that had reached the peak of their strength since their founding. They sent

out their entire force of several tens of thousands of formidable cultivators from the onset to open up the forbidden ancient desolate lands in order to obtain the illusive object of legends. However, the tens of thousands of people perished there and that immortal sect of the holy lands was nearly wiped out from this world. In the end only three to five people made it out, their legacy was almost severed."

"So frightening?!" Pang Bo was dumbfounded.

"That was a devilish ground that was drenched with endless amounts of fresh blood, it's lamentable for the unprecedented and flourishing immortal sect of the holy land, other than the tens of thousands of powerful cultivators being exterminated, even the few whose cultivation were at the pinnacle had become 'desolate slaves' to the abyss in the forbidden area, forever condemned to slavery."

Hearing this everyone thought of the vicious cries that filled the night and the imagery of several hundred Zhang long iron chains being wielded, it was likely to be caused by the so called 'desolate slaves'.

The rainbow with all its colours in profusion* was moving at an exceedingly fast speed, akin to the speed of lightning as the ground below passed by in a blur of colours. Even so, they flew for over an hour before reaching the edges of the primitive forest.

[Idiom*: A garish display]

At this point the sky had already began to darken and a small brightly lit town could be seen in the distance. Having just reached this area, seven to eight different rays of light rushed to the sky, each colour was different and there was a figure within each beam.

“It’s Wei Wei, she’s back.”

“Did you manage to find anything in the surrounding area of the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land? The nearby immortal sanctuaries have all sent their experts out and seemed to have been looking for something. You didn’t have any altercations with them right?”

“Since our ancestors could feel something from the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land, those experts from the immortal sanctuaries would naturally be able to notice it as well.”

The people within the beams of light were all old people and could all be considered elders of this young girl called Wei Wei.

“These people are……”

“They couldn’t possibly have entered into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land and made it back out alive, right?”

Upon hearing the confirmation from the young girl called Wei Wei, the few old people began to laugh heartily.

“Ha Ha Ha! Not bad! Their sea of bitterness within their bodies

have already been stimulated, they are excellent seedlings for cultivation!”

The group quickly descended into the small town and entered a well-lit hall.

“How can they be so young?” Upon seeing Ye Fan and Pang Bo, the few old people had expressions of shock and disbelief.

“Could they have eaten that mysterious fruit of the legends? This..... is simply impossible!” An old man was very shocked and said: “The nine sacred mountains encircle together to form the abyss, it’s been mentioned in the legends that each sacred mountain has a divine spring that has these mystical divine fruits and in total there are nine divine springs which produces nine different divine fruits. It’s been said that these fruits can allow one to shed one’s mortal body and exchange one’s bones!* How could these mortals even go near that place?!”

[Idiom*: Change wholly or to be born again (Daoist term)]

# Chapter 35: The Workings Of This World

Within the well-lit hall, the few elders had sharp gazes that continued to sweep back and forth as they examined Ye Fan and the others in amazement.

“Why are your dressings so weird?”

“Why do you keep such short hair?”

“You are all ordinary people, why did you enter into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land?”

“Why is your spoken language so weird? Where did you come from?”

“With your strength, how could you possibly go near the abyss in the forbidden area and pick the divine fruit from legends?”

The few elders were very careful and meticulous as they continuously questioned, trying to find out exactly where these people came from.

They came from the other side of the stars separated by tens of hundreds of light years which was impossible to reach even after millions of years of flying. Who would be able to say something like that? Ye Fan and the group were taciturn and silent.

“Why aren’t you talking?” An elder’s gaze became incredibly sharp.

“Even if we told you the truth of the matter, would you be able to believe it?” Ye Fan looked at the people within the hall and said in a firm and calm voice: “Our home is in a far away place and we arrived here from the other side by scaling an ancient mountain. We are currently clueless as to where we are and have no hope of returning to our home.”

The few elders exchanged glances and someone finally nodded before saying: “I think I can understand, there must have been some extraordinary expert who set up an “influence” on that ancient mountain which could transcend time-space and turn the Big Dipper & move the stars*. A person who could use such methods is simply..... Frightening!

[Idiom* Time flies]

Since the elders did not pursue in their questioning, Ye Fan and the others did not mention the nine dragon corpses and bronze coffin. Nor did they talk about traversing through the desolation of space to arrive at the other side of the stars.

At this moment, the elders noticed the bronze lamp, alms bowl, bell and other artifacts

“This is.....”

An elder among them had an expression of concentration as he took the bronze lamp within Ye Fan's hands and looked it over carefully. Thereafter he let out a long sigh and said: " These are the workmanship of a supreme expert, I suspect that the lampwick itself has already borne 'spirit'. It's a pity that the lamp is no longer functional and the interior of the lamp has no veins to follow through."

Thereafter he carefully inspected the alms bowl, bell, plaque and other artifacts, there was shock clearly written all over his face but he sighed and said: "They were originally such good items, how can all of them not be working?! The highly regarded Dao inscriptions within all of the items have been destroyed. Even taking a glimpse of the workmanship involved is no longer possible."

"How did all of you obtain these items?" The elders felt their hearts ache as they felt that it was such a pity and continually sighed.

Ye Fan did not reply immediately. His words earlier had painted an airtight story that even if Zhou Yi and the rest said the truth, there would be no contradictions with what he said. However this time it was different.

Some people followed his train of thought as they replied, saying that the Buddha artifacts left behind were found on the ancient mountain with an 'influence' and although they had unknowingly entered the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land they had held onto them.

It was obvious that it was not only Ye Fan who did not wish to speak about the events that occurred on the other side of the stars, the others also felt that this matter was of great importance and they could not spill the beans so easily.

“So that’s the case, I’m becoming more and more interested in that ancient mountain that you speak of and I’m actually thinking of going over there to investigate.” An elder smiled as he narrowed his eyes, it was unclear if he was suspicious or really felt like investigating.

“Where’s the initial place that you guys lived in? Is there an approximate region or district?” Another elder started a different line of query.

By now the group had all caught on to Ye Fan’s line of thought and lied together as a group. A female student said that they came from the western region.

“The western region? This means that you people actually came from that vast and boundless desert……” One of the elders frowned as he muttered: “From the desert in the west to the eastern badlands, the distance is simply unimaginable. Even if I were to travel by rainbow and fly there, it would take at least thirty over years. Exactly what sort of person would have such unrivaled talent to create such a formidable ‘influence’ on that mountain? This is simply inconceivable!”

“This means that we’ve actually arrived at the eastern badlands.” Zhou Yi took the opportunity to ask: “How big is the eastern badlands?”

“The eastern badlands is endless, even if a mortal were to live for ten generations they would still be unable to finish exploring it.”

“It’s that big?!” Ye Fan and the others had expressions of incredulity.

“In this world, the state of ‘Yan’ controls this region which also includes the forbidden ancient desolate lands. The distance from north to south is two thousand miles and east to west is three thousand miles. This territory is but a drop in the ocean when compared to the eastern badlands, there are simply countless states just like this.”

Hearing these words Pang Bo nearly jumped up, it was such a large region? The state of Yan’s area was so vast yet it was nothing compared to the eastern badlands, the states with the same amount of territory were countless.

The eastern badlands was simply vast and boundless and it was difficult to imagine exactly how big it was!

“How could it possibly be so vast?!” Pang Bo’s pupils constricted as he felt that this reality refuted all common sense, this was simply too ridiculous. However, when thinking that there were even deities present in this world, he could only shake his head.

A few of the elders noticed Pang Bo’s flabbergasted expression and revealed expressions or mirth, this eleven or twelve year old looking youth would be the seedling that they focus on nurturing

from now on. One of the elders then continued: “State of Yan may just be a corner within the eastern badlands, a drop in the ocean* but it was not without its own reputation. Within the state of Yan there was the Forbidden Ancient Desolate lands that was one of the seven great life forbidding regions within the vast eastern badlands.

[Idiom*: small and insignificant]

The group was silent as they contemplated on all the information that they had received. Their emotions were riled as they tried to come to grips with all the shocking information.

“You also mentioned the western desert earlier, how does it compare to the eastern badlands?” Wang Zi Wen was more thorough and could not contain his curiosity.

“The scale of the western desert is almost identical to that of the eastern badlands’ region. It is similarly boundless.”

Hearing this confirmation their hearts were jolted, these regions were simply limitless!

Nonetheless, there was still a piece of news that was even more mind-blowing, an elder went on: “eastern badlands, western desert, southern mountains, northern plains and the central province, amongst these areas the central province is the most extensive and can be thought of as truly limitless, even cultivators would find it hard to traverse across ……”

Everyone turned into a statue as they felt their mouths were dry and were speechless.

The few elders were very satisfied with their reactions and encouraged: “A normal human’s life is but a speck, just like an ant and would have difficulty understanding how vast this world is. Right now you people have the chance to overlook this boundless world. If you work hard to cultivate, one day you will surely bring about a storm and stand at the summit above the clouds.”

The group started to recover their bearing as some people hesitated as they said: “Us…. Cultivate…..”

“That’s right, although you people have entered the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land and lost your youth, this world is fair, how much you lost would be relative to how much you would gain. The thorny road of cultivation may be difficult to traverse but you people have already opened up the basic path.”

“That’s right, your sea of bitterness has already been triggered and once you surpass the sea of bitterness to step onto the spiritual bridge, finding the divinity within you would not be impossible.”

The few elders continued to say words of encouragement to entice them onto the path of cultivation.

°

“We still don’t know exactly who are you people?” Zhou Yi seized the opportunity to ask.

“There are six immortal sanctuaries, and the place that we are currently cultivating in is one of them. Of course it isn’t located

here in the mortal world." One of the elders laughed as he replied.

"The State of Yan is but a drop in the ocean when compared to the eastern badlands, this corner of the region has six immortal sanctuaries. How many immortal sects with cultivators does this world exactly have....." Pang Bo softly breathed.

It was clear that the elders viewed Ye Fan and Pang Bo differently and did not show any displeasure as they warmly replied: "Don't think too far ahead. Your basics are the most important and our immortal sanctuary hails from one of the sacred grounds. The basics are the secret to success in this world. Also, if you can rise up like a phoenix in the future we will provide you with a more comprehensive and larger scale of development space."

"That's right!" Another elder boasted: "Although we are only an immortal sanctuary, we belong to one of the famous sacred grounds within the eastern badlands. If you are sufficiently talented in the future, you might even be selected to enter into the sect that oversees the sacred ground!"

Having said this, the few elders looked dotingly at the young girl Wei Wei and said: "Wei Wei is our immortal sanctuary's unparalleled talent within a thousand years, it won't be long before she's selected to enter the sacred ground. We're even feeling a bit reluctant to part but we aren't willing to stand in the way of her cultivation."

It was at this moment when the hall was filled with a loud raucous laughter: "Your 'blessed land*' is simply insufficient, if you have any talents you can send them over to our 'immortal

caverns*’. I heard that you people actually discovered over ten good seedlings that can cultivate?”

[T/N*: He split up the words immortal sanctuary 洞天福地 into 2 literal parts, blessed lands 福地 and immortal caverns 洞天]

Tens of rainbows seemed to fall from the sky as these people entered into the hall uninvited.

# Chapter 36: Primordial Divine Body

The ten or so people stepped into the hall and the rainbows around their bodies rescinded. There were males and females in the group and they all looked to be over forty, either tranquil like an orchid , sharp like a sword aura or steady like a rock. They each had a special aura surrounding them.

One of the middle aged men with an imposing presence spoke, his words were sonorous and forceful as he loudly laughed: “Within the Yan region, although in name there are six sanctuaries, your Ling Xu sanctuary doesn’t really fit the bill. Calling it a blessed land is about right.”

“Liu Wan Shan, what is the meaning of your words?” The few elders of Ling Xu sanctuary had displeased expressions as they strode forward to stand in front of Zhou Yi, Lin Jia and the group while focusing on protecting Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

The middle aged man Liu Wan Shan certainly lived up to his name*, he seemed like a mountain as he stoically stood there, giving off an immense pressure. His words were very straightforward as he laughed and said: “Since there are over ten good seedlings for cultivating, we naturally want to take a few and lead them on their path of cultivation.”

[T/N* The Shan(山) refers to a mountain in Chinese]

By the side, an old lady her head a chock full of white hair said: “He’s correct, the six immortal sanctuaries within the Yan region

have always breathed as one entity, suddenly so many talented seedlings have appeared we would naturally want to take a few."

An elder from the Ling Xu sanctuary frowned as he said: "Senior sister Li Ying, you can't make it sound like that. Three years ago your Jin Xia sanctuary also found several disciples that had exceptional constitutions for cultivation but never gave any to our Ling Xu sanctuary."

"That group of people had mediocre aptitudes, how could they be considered as celestial sprouts. I obviously wouldn't want to disturb you for nothing." The white haired old lady laughed as she replied.

At this moment an old man with flowing white hair and a sage-like appearance strode forward, he was unhurried as he said: "From the way I see it these people can't be considered as celestial sprouts. How about this, each of our immortal sanctuaries will choose a few and leave your Ling Xu sanctuary with a few as well."

The few elders of Ling Xu sanctuary lost their cool but seemed to be a bit apprehensive of this person with a sagely appearance coupled with an immortal's demeanour and quickly said: "Senior brother Ma Yun, your Yu Ding sanctuary couldn't possibly be lacking in talented disciples. I've heard that you actually found two genuine celestial sprouts."

The old man Ma Yun laughed but did not speak as he scrutinized Ye Fan and Pang Bo while nodding. This made the elders of Ling Xu sanctuary nervous, they could give away the others but these two people had to be kept at all costs.

“Alright, I’ll represent Yu Ding sanctuary to choose one person.” Ma Yun with his white hair and mustache pointed at Ye Fan and Pang Bo and said: “I’m actually not very picky, I’m fine with either of them.”

“No way!” The elders of Ling Xu sanctuary voiced their rejections simultaneously.

At the same time, the other immortal sanctuaries begun to choose people and none of them gave an inch as they argued with one another. Ye Fan listened intently and gained a lot of information. A sanctuary was better than a blessed land as it was more suitable for cultivation. If there was a sanctuary the place was likely to naturally give rise to a blessed land.

At this point it was simply impossible for the Ling Xu sanctuary to keep everyone, the other five immortal sanctuaries were of one mind and they could only painfully endure as each portion was being taken away. How the seedlings were split up was a different matter altogether. In the end there was a state of mutual hostility and the atmosphere was tense with the six immortal sanctuaries not giving an inch.

The middle-aged man with an imposing presence whose body was like a mountain Liu Wan Shan walked forward and said: “It seems that we can only spar to decide.”

“That should be the way.” The old lady Li Ying from the Jin Xia sanctuary nodded her head with approval.

“To prevent the harming of feelings, let’s do it in this manner, the first to land a hit wins.” Ma Yun from Yu Ding sanctuary also voiced his approval.

The few elders from Ling Xu sanctuary had ugly expressions, Ye Fan and the group were found by them but the result was that the other sanctuaries wanted a piece of the pie and it was difficult to say how many they would be able to retain.

More than ten rainbows of light shot towards the sky and seemed especially bright within the night sky. The battle between the immortal sanctuaries had begun. Ye Fan and the rest went outside of the hall and looked towards the skies. It was a pity that those people had flown out of the small town and were still heading further and further away making it impossible to see clearly what was going on.

Flashing lights could be seen across the sky and brilliant rainbows shone forth, occasionally the sounds of thunder could be heard, a tempest erupted with sand and stone flew about in a raging wind.

Zhou Yi, Lin Jia and the group were dazzled by the amazing display, although the elders had been cordial earlier, they had now flown into the skies and had such formidable prowess. This made them look forward to the future.

Not long after, the mystical rainbows in the sky had vanished and it was unknown where the fierce battle was continued at.

It was only half an hour later when the mystical rainbows could be seen in the horizon again, streaking across the vast sky and arriving in a flash.

The first to reach was the young girl Wei Wei, she seemed otherworldly, her dark brows were exquisite, eyes were watery, lips moist and her teeth was like jade. Under the moonlight, her figure was gentle and lithe while giving an indistinct presence, as though Chang Er* herself had come to the mortal world, exquisitely beautiful.

[T/N* Chinese folklore character with unparalleled beauty, goddess of the moon]

Thereafter the elders of Ling Xu sanctuary arrived and although they seemed to be in a rather sorry state and some of their bodies even had traces of blood on them, the expressions on their faces seemed to be the smile of victory.

The people gathered behind also similarly had wounds but in comparison their facial expressions were ugly. Liu Wan Shan's shoulder had traces of blood that had not dried, old man Ma Yun's flowing white moustache had been chopped off and the crutch in old lady Li Ying's hand had been broken into two.

"It's really such a surprise, Wei Wei at such an age has actually surpassed us. Ling Xu sanctuary actually has such a peerless talent!" Ma Yun lamented.

Ye Fan and the group were shocked, this young girl Wei Wei seemed to pace about leisurely with a graceful bearing, a silent gentle beauty. She was actually this strong and had beaten all these elders, this simply made one astounded.

“Since we’ve lost, there’s nothing more we can say. Your Ling Xu sanctuary can have the first two picks.” Liu Wan Shan’s expression was very ugly, not only had he lost all face by losing to the next generation, he had also lost the chance to pick first.

The elders of Ling Xu sanctuary did not hesitate as they picked Ye Fan and Pang Bo and expressions of glee could be seen on their faces. Thereafter old man Ma Yun from the Yu Ding sanctuary chose Liu Yi Yi and following that old lady Li Ying from Jin Xia sanctuary came forward and picked Zhang Zi Ling.

At this moment on the side of Ling Xu sanctuary the elders had carefully inspected Ye Fan’s body and their facial expressions changed as they no longer had any mirth on them.

“How can it be like this?!”

The others quickly noticed that something was going on and looked over. Seeing the unhappy expressions on the elders of Ling Xu sanctuary but they had no idea what had happened.

“What’s the matter? Could it be that even though we let your Ling Xu sanctuary have the first two picks you still aren’t satisfied?”

“It’s not like that. Why don’t you people come over and see.” The few elders from Ling Xu sanctuary had expressions of regret as they looked at Ye Fan.

The other’s immediately understood that there were definitely some problems with Ye Fan’s body and rushed over.

Old man Ma Yun from Yu Ding sanctuary walked forward and said: “From a cursory glance this youth’s blood essence is especially vigorous, comparable to that of a river dragon. He should be a rarely seen celestial sprout, could it be that there really are some problems?”

At this moment the rest of the people had come forward and started to carefully scrutinize Ye Fan. Being felt all over made Ye Fan feel very uncomfortable but he was helpless to do anything under the current circumstances.

Old lady Li Ying from Jin Xia sanctuary was befuddled as she said: “How can there possibly be such a physique?!”

After inspecting the body, Liu Wan Shan was dazed for a period before showing an expression of inconceivability as he said: “The divine wheel of life is absolutely quiet, his sea of bitterness is as hard as divine metal, as stable as a rock, firm and unshakeable without any way of establishing the fundamentals……”

“How could it be like this?!” Everyone had puzzled expressions, this kind of physique was simply too strange and simply did not conform to common sense.

At this moment, Ma Yun from Yu Ding sanctuary seemed to suddenly remember something as he muttered: “Could it be..... The physique from legends?” He started to thoroughly inspect Ye Fan’s body once again, his finger was translucent like jade and drops of divine light could be seen flowing out as he constantly poked and prodded. He was earnestly inspecting his bones and measuring his spirit..

It was only after a long period of time before Ma Yun finally stopped and said with a dazed expression: “There is really a physique from the legends within this world.....”

“What physique?” Everyone present had expressions of curiosity

“Peerless–Primordial–Transcendent–Divine–Body*!!” Ma Yun placed heavy emphasis on each word and spat out these eight words that were imposing like a mountain**.

[T/N* Author emphasized eight different words in Chinese however when converted to English the number of words decreased.]

[T/N** Idiom: Of great importance]

“What?!” There were shocked expressions on everybody present and they simply could not believe what they heard.

The reactions of the elders from Ling Xu sanctuary were swift as they pulled Ye Fan behind them and surrounded him, tightly

securing him in the fear of the others making an attempt to steal or assassinate him.

Li Wan Shan felt that it was simply unbelievable and said: “Yan region, the distance from north to south is two thousand miles and east to west is three thousand miles, this territory when compared to the boundless eastern badlands is but a drop of water in the ocean. On this land it would be hard to find one with a peerless divine body even after an eternity of time. It must be known that since ancient times the entire vast eastern badlands has never produced such an individual.”

Old lady Li Ying from Jin Xia sanctuary shook her head saying: “It’s not an impossibility for it’s appearance. I’ve heard that it’s very likely that such an individual has appeared within the eastern badlands. There are rumours that it isn’t just a single person but due to them being in the phases of growing up they have not shown themselves before the world’s eyes. I believe that the person is concealing himself in one of the sacred grounds or leaning on an archaic aristocratic family that has continued on since ancient times.

At this moment the looks the elders had as they stared at Ye Fan had changed, burning with fire as though they could not wait to grab him and keep him as a disciple. Even Zhou Yi, Lin Jia and the group looked at Ye Fan with astonished expressions.

At this point, Ma Yun from Yu Ding sanctuary coughed as he said: “I think..... you people have misunderstood the situation. Maybe it was because I didn’t speak clearly enough.”

“Hmm?”

“What’s the matter?’

Everybody looked at him in bewilderment.

“He certainly has a peerless divine body, that is without question. However, there is a time period restriction, it belonged to the ancient past of old.

“What do you mean?”

Ma Yun explained: “Everybody has probably heard of some ancient legends before right? During that time there was a peerless physique, unrivalled since ancient times, during that period there were nine generations of such people and each was invincible among the heavens and earth, shaking the old and illuminating the new*. With that kind of physique, when walking on the path of cultivation, none could surmise their eventual accomplishments. This was reputed as the foremost divine body since ancient times.”

[Idiom*: Glorious and world-shattering]

“That’s right, we’ve obviously heard that before. You couldn’t possibly be saying……” Having said this, everyone looked towards Ye Fan and their expressions no longer held the blazing intensity earlier but was filled with disappointment.

“That’s right, he’s exactly that kind of physique. It’s such a pity,

since ancient times countless years have passed and the appearance of such a physique would occasionally shock the heavens, however, now the appearance of such does not hold any might and one would be unable to look down on the world like the ancient times."

The truth was that such a physique had gradually died off from ancient era due to unknown reasons and was simply unsuited for cultivation. Since then, no one had ever cultivated successfully with that physique.

"There are rumours from many immortal sects that celestial sprouts with peerless divine bodies have appeared within the eastern badlands. Previously I actually thought that our Yan region would produce an earth-shattering talent. I simply did not expect that it would turn out like this....."

"The peerless divine body from the ancient times can be considered as a matchless heavenly body of the present..... Ai!" The few elders from Ling Xu sanctuary let out a sigh as they were thoroughly disappointed and no longer held Ye Fan in any regard.

The faces on the people from the other immortal sanctuaries were complicated, unsure if they should celebrate or feel disappointment.

At this point no one paid any attention to Ye Fan and from their heated attitudes earlier to the cold indifference now, the difference was so huge that it was strikingly apparent.

# Chapter 37: Ling Xu Sanctuary

At present, Ye Fan and their group had only thirteen people left and the rest had died. Besides Ye Fan with his unique physique, the other twelve were evenly split up and each immortal sanctuary could take two people.

They had no choice in the matter but Zhou Yi, Lin Jia and the others did not voice any rejection. As the few elders from Ling Xu sanctuary had said, this was an opportunity for them.

Finally, Ye Fan was left alone in an embarrassing position. Initially he had been highly viewed but now nobody paid any attention to him.

“If you people don’t bring Ye Fan along, I won’t follow you.” At this moment although Pang Bo looked to be eleven or twelve years old, his words were firm as he said: “At the worst I’ll follow Ye Fan and go adventuring in the mortal world.”

An elder from the Ling Xu sanctuary explained: “There are no mortals within the immortal sanctuaries, if we let him enter it may not be a good thing for him.”

Ye Fan understood and after careful contemplation thought of the countless scenarios that could happen. There were only cultivators within the immortal sanctuary and who would bother about a normal human like him. Although Pang Bo would be there to shelter him but this would not be a long term solution. Going forward, there would certainly be many problems that would be

difficult to predict.

“Pang Bo you should follow them, I won’t be joining any of the immortal sanctuaries. It may be better to live a simple, dull and ordinary human life.”

“No way, I’m definitely bring you along.” Pang Bo resolutely rejected.

“Alright, we’ll bring Ye Fan along.” The elders from Ling Xu sanctuary did not want Pang Bo to have any grudges in his heart and decided to bring Ye Fan along.

“Wait!” Ye Fan did not feel any happiness and was calm as he said: “I’ve already said that I won’t be joining any immortal sanctuary. I thank you all for your kind intentions.”

“Ye Fan, this is an opportunity……” Pang Bo frantically persuaded.

Ye Fan shook his head as he said: “You don’t have to persuade me.” He had carefully thought through earlier and understood that if he entered any of the immortal sanctuaries there would be many unforeseen problems and the elders from the Ling Xu sanctuary had also hinted at such.

“If you don’t go, I also definitely won’t go with them.” Pang Bo was very loyal and no matter what he did not wish to throw Ye Fan away to walk alone.

Ye Fan smiled and said: “In the future I’ll be depending on you, you better earnestly pursue your cultivation. In the future I’ll need your charity, be it a heroine, fairy, goddess or a saintess.... just gifting a few will do. I won’t be picky.”

Pang Bo rolled his eyes as he heard this. The cultivators from the immortal sanctuaries had expressions of shock and a few of the female cultivators stared hatefully at him.

“Ye Fan, I still think you should go with me.” Pang Bo tried to persuade once more.

“I really want to go with you however I’ll only be a guest for a short period of time and will not be joining the sanctuary. I’m not sure if the people from Ling Xu sanctuary will permit.” Ye Fan suddenly said. He was unwilling to part from cultivating in this manner and wanted to enter the Ling Xu sanctuary to understand it better without being shackled down by belonging to a sect.

“Okay, as long as you’re willing to go.” Pang Bo was delighted, as long as Ye Fan was willing to go he felt that there was surely a way to make him stay and he immediately looked towards the elders of Ling Xu sanctuary.

“Alright.” The few elders finally nodded their approval.

Ye Fan and the group were about to be separated and their futures were unknown. The group was feeling lost but at the same time anticipation. This was their final gathering and each person

said their well wishes hoping that one day in the future they would meet again.

At this moment, Ye Fan was different as compared to the rest, his future path was bleak and he and his classmates seemed to belong to different worlds. Even if they met in later years, it could be imagined that that he would not be held in regard. As each person looked at him they carried different expressions.

Finally, after saying their well wishes the group split apart.

“Ye Fan, this is for you……” Before Liu Yi Yi left she handed her Malas to Ye Fan and did not wait for him to reject before speedily leaving.

“Actually it’s also fine being a normal person. Wishing you eternal happiness.” Li Xiao Man walked over and after saying this words deeply looked at him before turning and leaving.

“Ye Fan, I wish you success in whatever you do and I believe that with your abilities even in the mortal world life will be vibrant.” Lin Jia said her piece and also left.

Thereafter, Zhou Yi and Wang Zi Wen also came to say their goodbyes.

“Actually, it might be a kind of fortune being an ordinary person.” Zhou Yi coolly laughed as he lightly patted his shoulder and said: “There’s nothing to be too dispirited about.”

Ye Fan was calm like a lake and smiled: “What happens in the future is difficult for anyone to predict.”

A short while later over ten mystical rainbows could be seen flying towards the sky, piercing through the silent night like shooting stars and slowly disappearing into the horizon. The group had finally parted ways.

When the people from the other sanctuaries had left, the elders from Ling Xu sanctuary said to Pang Bo and Ye Fan: “Actually, our immortal sanctuaries aren’t that far apart. If you wish it you could meet each other.”

The people from Ling Xu sanctuary only moved off on the second day and directed the mystical rainbows, as fast as lightning, their speed was exceptional and the mountains and rivers passed by in a blur.

Finally, the group of people stopped before a faintly discernible celestial mountain. It was simply prosperous and peaceful. Lush green trees, waterfalls and springs abound, pavilions scattered about in the clearing with red-crowned cranes fluttering around in the skies, all of this painted a vivid scene. This was indeed a beautiful place.

“This is the Ling Xu sanctuary?” Pang Bo could not help but ask. His next words were like a splash of cold water as he softly muttered: “the red-crowned cranes are quite fat, we should catch one or two to roast.....”

An elder by the side stared at him with displeasure as he said: “Those are red-crowned cranes that have actually attained spiritual wisdom, don’t think of any random ideas. Based on your current skills there would be no way to even get close to them.”

This place was not the Ling Xu sanctuary but only the entryway to the mountain. The insides were misty,hazy and indiscernible, with many unique flowers littered the ground. Upon reaching an area where the clouds were incredibly dense, they saw a big green rock that was erected in front and two ancient words were engraved on it: “Ling Xu!”

Pang Bo naturally did not recognize the ancient words and only when an elder by the side educated him did he understand that they had reached the Ling Xu sanctuary.

According to legend this place was a ruin handed down from ancient times and after being tidied up by future generations it had become an immortal sanctuary. It could be said that Ling Xu sanctuary had a deep-seated history and if one actually investigated they could trace its origins back to the ancient times.

Future generations had excavated and tidied this place on a large scale in hopes of finding a few mystical artifacts within the ruins but came up empty handed.

The expert cultivators within each generation from the sanctuary all felt that this place was not that simple but had not made any groundbreaking discoveries.

Moving past the large green rock and walking into the mist, the scenery suddenly had a drastic change. It was actually an incomparably magnificent world and they seemed to have been transported to a different world altogether.

“This is Ling Xu sanctuary!”

“It can absolutely be regarded as another world!”

The few elders were very satisfied with the reactions from Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

The vegetation in the area seemed to have absorbed the radiance from the sun and moon and even the grass and trees seemed emerald green, as though they were formed from precious jade. The ancient trees covered the sky and the fragrant smell of medicinal plants filled the air. Spirit beasts were fluttering in the skies and rare beasts were roaming about. A mystical spring gushing forth as the water continued to flow.

At this moment, Ye Fan suddenly slipped into a trance as his consciousness recalled a mantra that resounded out, the very same mantra from the bronze coffin.

# Chapter 37: What Is Cultivation

Only after walking over a hundred steps into the Ling Xu sanctuary did the mantra resounding within Ye Fan's heart slowly dissipate, the entrance had tens of limestone steps that seemed extraordinary but Ye Fan did not stop and would not be allowed to stop either.

Just ahead of them, the mountain peaks were breath-taking and filled with thick spiritual Qi that went on in the distance. A thousand metre long waterfall was flowing down from a tall mountain like a stretch of shining silk, it was as if the galaxy was flipped upside down. The thunderous rumbling sound echoed out like ten thousand stampeding horses, simply a magnificent and beautiful sight.

"No wonder it's called an immortal sanctuary, the scenery is exceptional and it seems like a piece of pure land that does not belong to the world."

A snaking path that lead towards a serene place, the track was made of cobblestones and continued past a waterfall. The winding path led to the innermost parts of the magnificent immortal mountain. Along the way, ancient trees covered the sky and their branches seemed like vigorous curling dragons. Many palaces could be seen hidden amongst the trees and they seemed to fit in naturally with the surroundings.

By the sides of the ancient road, there were man-made medicinal fields that held ginseng that was as thick as a child's arm, ling zhi mushrooms with nine hanging leaves and many other unknown

medicinal plants that were glistening and translucent with divine glows within. The medicinal smell permeated the air and penetrated deeply into the heart*.

[T/N* Idiom: Feeling of comfort and happiness derived from external influences]

The people they met along this road largely had to pay their respects to these elders and were very friendly towards Wei Wei who was a peerless talent and her status in Ling Xu sanctuary could be imagined.

Wei Wei returned the greetings but did not have an air of arrogance. Within this peaceful pure land, she was elegant and otherworldly like a fairy and like a gentle wind that gently blew by, delicate and graceful, she vanished into the depths of the sanctuary.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were brought before a small mountain, there were several thatched cottages interspersed with bamboo forests and medicinal fields accompanying each house. A few ancient trees were also closely linked.

Although there were no fine jade buildings or palaces and everything seemed rather ordinary, it gave one the feeling of nature and tranquility as though one had stepped out of the world onto a pure land. It seemed to cleanse the soul, escaping from the mortal world and cleansing all vexations.

“The two of you will stay here first.” The few elders warned and

explained before leaving. There was another student who was also brought to Ling Xu sanctuary but was not brought to stay with Ye Fan and Pang Bo and was sent to another area.

It was close to afternoon when a youth in his twenties brought food for them. The food was light and simple and contained a majority of medicinal ingredients: lotus root, polygonatum, poria and gastrodia elata.*

[T/N* All of these are actual Chinese medicinal herbs]

“This meal..... can it even be eaten? There isn’t even any meat. These two days we’ve only been eating wild fruits or drinking water. Right now we’re continuing to eat such simple fare, I feel that our mouths will soon have mountain water flowing out.”

Although the food was simple and had no grease, Ye Fan and Pang Bo still cleared the dishes and even a leaf was not spared.

“Can you send over some roast chicken?”

Seeing the behaviour of the two, the youth who brought the food over was stunned and speechless as he said: “We.... don’t have that. Within the sanctuary, that isn’t provided. If the two of you still aren’t full I can send additional food over.

“Why aren’t there any meat dishes? I’ve seen the red-crowned crane, white deer and other unknown precious birds and unusual animals. Just roasting one or two of them would suffice, I

especially feel that those red crowned cranes have been fed sufficiently fat."

The youth who brought the food seemed like he had seen a snake demon as he hurriedly left, as though he could not wait to get away from the two of them.

"It seems that entering into an immortal sect to cultivate isn't something that is worth celebrating much over. The days are too simple and there isn't even any meat to be had. How are we going to continue living like this." Pang Bo grumbled incessantly.

Ye Fan also felt very unsatisfied and really felt like catching a chicken to roast, tearing out a drum and having wine as an accompaniment, gorging oneself fully.

In the ten over days that followed the elders did not appear again and the youth that brought food started to be familiar with them and under their continual exchanges Ye Fan and Pang Bo began to get used to the ancient language. The youth was envious of them, disciples that first entered the sect usually did not have their own abodes and needed to successfully cultivate before being allowed one.

"These thatched cottages also count as owning an abode?"

Ye Fan and Pang Bo wore the clothes that the youth brought over and besides their short hairdos, they were no different from the others within the Ling Xu sanctuary.

“You can’t say it like that, this small mountain and its surrounding area belongs to the two of you and if you enough capability you’d be able to establish your own abode.”

“Since the small mountain is ours, even if we kill a deer or roast a few red-crowned cranes there shouldn’t be anyone who cares right?”

Seeing the way the two were behaving, the youth did not dare to continue talking and felt that these two people were too bold and their thoughts were simply too different from normal people.

“Don’t be afraid, we won’t act rashly. Why don’t you fill us in on exactly what is cultivation?”

This was something that Ye Fan and Pang Bo were very concerned about and until now they still had no clue as to what it entailed. Although they had heard people mention about ‘sea of bitterness’, ‘divine bridge’ and ‘the shore on the other side*’, they did not understand what it meant.

[T/N* In Buddhism it is known as paramita]

The youth shook his head as he did really know either. He had entered the Ling Xu sanctuary for a short period and had not actually started on the road of cultivating.

“It seems like you guys can’t wait any longer.” At this moment an elder with white hair yet whose complexion was like a child

appeared before the small mountain, his sleeves were fluttering and his feet hovered above the ground. He seemed to have rode the wind to arrive before the thatched cottage and nodded to the youth by the side who was greeting him: “You can go.”

“You are……” Ye Fan and Pang Bo did not recognise this elder with his rosy face and long white hair that seemed to be an otherworldly old immortal.

“I’m an elder of the Ling Xu sanctuary, Wu Qing Feng. All the disciples who have joined for three years or less are taught by me.”

“Greetings venerated elder.”

“No need to be so formal.”

“Venerated elder can you change the contents of our meals? If it goes on like this even before we start cultivating we would have already levitated and become an immortal. The food is simply too plain and even seeing a grasshopper would make us salivate.” Pang Bo whined bitterly.

Elder Wu Qing Feng had a serious face as he said: “The mortal world is filled with greed. Upon entering the immortal sanctuary the first objective is to cut all ties with opulence, cleansing the body and soul. If you can’t even rid yourself of the lust for food, in the future when facing the various temptations on the road of immortality it would certainly be difficult to get through.”

Hearing this Pang Bo was rendered speechless. Ye Fan had not joined the immortal sanctuary and it was not his place to make any requests.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo had many questions within their hearts but Ye Fan was not in a good position to question and Pang Bo who was already a disciple of the Ling Xu sanctuary could do so without any worries. Elder Qing Wu Feng sat on a tree stump and began to answer the various questions that were posed to him. When it came to cultivation they simply had no understanding at all.

“Look at this sky, do you two feel that it is unblemished?”

“No clouds can be seen for a thousand li, the blue sky is spotless and naturally is unblemished.” Ye Fan was unsure why the elder had asked such a question but since the elder looked at him he naturally answered.

“Wrong, there are endless amounts of dust.” Elder Wu Qing Feng opened his palm and said: “Even between my fingers there exists an endless amount of dust.”

“What…… is the meaning?” Pang Bo asked in confusion.

Elder Wu Qing Feng was tranquil like an otherworldly immortal as he continued: “What do you people think this endless dust is?”

“What else could it be? Naturally it’s dust.”

“It is dust, yet it isn’t dust.” The elder coolly stated.

“I understand the part that ‘it is dust’. What’s the ‘yet it isn’t dust’ part supposed to mean?” Pang Bo questioned.

“It’s the world, a vast and boundless world.” Elder Wu Qing Feng was unflappable as he spoke very naturally and calmly.

“It’s a vast and boundless world..... you aren’t joking are you?” Pang Bo was bewildered.

“In the future the two of you will understand. The dirt, grass and trees all form one world.”

“Can you speak more directly? I feel as though I’m listening to obscure writing and although the words are easily understood the deep meaning contained within cannot be comprehended.”

Elder Wu Qing Feng sat there and coolly laughed: “Let’s not discuss these matters today. What I want to say is that within the heaven and earth there are endless amounts of dust and each particle is a world. Similarly our body is composed in the same way. Although we can’t see anything there is an endless ‘gate’ and it is plentiful like the endless dust within heaven and earth. A seemingly small body but containing an untold number of ‘gates’, continually opening these gates and discovering the ‘true self’ that is cultivation.”

Seeing the stunned expressions on the two, elder Wu Qing Feng

was like the calm waters of a well* and questioned: “Now, do you two understand what is cultivation?”

[T/N* idiom: calm and composed]

“I seem to have grasped a bit of what you just said.”

“That’s good, continue to slowly comprehend what it means. Right now I’ll explain what is the sea of bitterness, there are an untold number of techniques but all of them begin from the sea of bitterness to embark on the road of immortals.”

“Venerated elder you must be more in-depth this time.” Although they had not really started on the path of cultivation, Ye Fan and Pang Bo understood that their initial understanding on it was extremely important.

“Of the countless living things within this world, all go through the process of growing and ageing. There are some that can exist eternally within the world, immortal throughout time, then there are others that are born in the morning and dead in the evening*, in a snap of the fingers their lives had already passed.”

[T/N* Idiom: Lives pass by fleetingly]

“Venerated elder, what you just said is far too mystifying, what exactly are you trying to tell us?”

The elder did not blame them for interrupting his speech and

pointed an ancient tree in the distance: “Do you two know how long it’s been around for?”

“Naturally there is a way of finding out. Once we chop it down and count the number of growth rings within the trunk we will know.”

“That’s correct, time is emotionless and would leave its scars on all living this. The tree has growth rings and our bodies also have the wheel of life.”

“Us humans also have these things?” Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt that this was ridiculous.

“The cultivation that I will be talking about precisely stems from the wheel of life within our bodies……”

# Chapter 39: Wheel Of Life

“All living things have a place from which they came from and within our human bodies there is also such a place, where all our vitality stems from. It contains all the qi essence within our body and is known as the origin of life or also known as the wheel of life.” Elder Wu Qing Feng calmly explained.

“Where is the wheel of life located?” Pang Bo asked.

“Just below the naval.” Elder Wu Qing Feng pointed below his navel: “It’s position is the perfect point that separates the upper body from the lower body.”

Ye Fan was surprised and immediately thought of the golden ratio within the body which tallied with the position mentioned by the elder. From the bottom of the feet to the crown of the head, the ratio proportions are 0.618 and was separated by a line. This was known as the golden line that divides the human body and the navel happens to be right at the point. This type of human body was perfect in terms of structure and proportion.

There were many golden ratio points within the human body and these points were precisely where the important parts of the body were located. In comparison the largest golden ratio point within the body, below the navel, did not seem as important.

At this moment hearing elder Wu Qing Feng say the wheel of life was actually located there and contained all the qi essence within the body, Ye Fan felt enlightened that perhaps the body’s most

important golden ratio point was really the “place where all living things originated from”.

The wheel of life was not a single point but rather a region and based on what elder Wu Qing Feng said its centre was below the navel and the region was a circle around it. The region was the the size of a palm and all the essence in the body was stored here.

Elder Wu Qing Feng was stern and earnest as he stressed: “The Wheel of life; the common people birth children, the Daoist birth one’s self. This is the cultivator’s basic fundamentals.“

Based on what elder Wu Qing Feng said the wheel of life was where the spring of divine energy was located. If cultivators wanted to step onto the path of immortals it would all begin from there.

“Throughout the lives of mortals their wheel of life is constantly drying up. The passing of each year would leave a mark on the wheel like the growth rings on the tree. When the human body is in its final years the wheel of life would have been full of scars from the passing of time and at that time the wheel of life would thoroughly disintegrate.”

“How many marks are there on our wheel of life?”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were originally youths in their twenties and now they appeared to be eleven or twelve. Their body had gone through an astonishing change and actually reverted back further to their youth.

“There are eleven marks on your wheel of life.”

Hearing this conclusion Pang Bo opened his mouth and loudly laughed. Compared to their classmates who had lost their youth, what happened to his body seemed to defy heaven’s will and he pointed at Ye Fan: “What about him? He’s the same as me right?”

Wu Qing Feng had already known about Ye Fan’s physique but he still thoroughly inspected and found that the conclusion was similar to that of the other elders. Ye Fan’s wheel of life was absolutely silent, his sea of bitterness was as hard as divine metal, as stable as a rock, firm and unshakable without any way of establishing the fundamentals.”

“His physique is very special and can’t be seen through. I can’t tell exactly how many marks there are but I surmise that it should be similar to you.” Having said this elder Wu Qing Feng had a weird expression as he said: “Blood Essence so vigorous like that of a river dragon, if only he could cultivate…… what a pity.”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo finally understood what was the wheel of life but still had many queries in their hearts.

“The wheel of life is the foundation of cultivators and if we reach the cultivation levels of legends and protect the wheel of life’s sparkle and translucence, without scars or marks as though one had just been born, there would be a chance to become an immortal.”

“Is becoming an immortal very difficult?”

“The immortals referred to by mortals are only cultivators who can fly in the sky. Whether the real immortals mentioned in the legends really exist is difficult to confirm. Based on what I know, for the past thousands of years in the boundless eastern badlands there hasn’t been anyone who became an immortal. It may be that only the people within the sacred grounds, archaic aristocratic families that have been around since ancient times or ancient demons would know some truth.”

“Venerated elder, are you trying to shatter our conviction. We are currently on the beginnings of the road of cultivation but you tell us that immortals may not be real, this is simply such a huge mental blow.”

“The flowers of spring will not live past autumn, the winter cicadas will not get through winter, mortals don’t live past a hundred years. If they could live for several thousand years and break the heavenly principles, they can be considered in a sense an immortal.”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo understood what the elder was trying to say. From the day that cultivators stepped onto the path of immortals and began cultivating they had already surpassed being normal humans. Experts could live for up to several thousand years, breaking heaven’s rules. Although they could not become immortals in the end, their struggles in life were not in vain as they had already broken heaven’s rules and changed their destinies.

“Actually, I haven’t really denied the existence of immortals. Rather, I feel that we can’t fathom that world.”

Thereafter, Ye Fan and Pang Bo continued their questions and the elder patiently answered their questions.

“I’ve heard so many people mention the sea of bitterness. What exactly is it?”

“That is the endless sea of bitterness that shrouds the wheel of life.”

“What do you mean?” Ye Fan and Pang Bo did not understand.

“When cultivators reach a certain cultivation level, within the small palm sized wheel of life there is an actual world where the sea of bitterness is borne from and it exists together with it.

“Could you please explain more thoroughly what is the relationship between the wheel of life and sea of bitterness? They also seem to be at the same place.”

“The sea of bitterness and wheel of life coexist. To be more precise, the sea of bitterness has submerged the wheel of life and besides the passing of time wearing the wheel of life, the sea of bitterness also slowly nibbles away at it.”

“So that’s why there’s the saying of withstanding the sea of bitterness?”

Elder Wu Qing Feng nodded and said: “That’s right, the fundamentals of all cultivators starts from the wheel of life. One of the goals of all cultivators is to withstand the sea of bitterness.”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were shocked and said: “Based on what you said, the sea of bitterness is endless and drowns the wheel of life. How can we possibly withstand it completely?”

“That’s right, there is no end to enduring it and even expert cultivators with astonishing talents that live for several thousand years or even over ten thousand years can only turn to dust.” Elder Wu Qing Feng had an expression of anticipation as he said: “According to legend, the real immortals have to completely withstand the sea of bitterness and turn it into an oasis of life, one drop of it would be enough to give life to the dead and give flesh to mere bones.”

“Ai, that’s only in the legends. Whether immortals really exist is still a big question.” Pang Bo sighed as he said: “I think you should tell us things that really exist.”

“There is no end to withstanding the sea of bitterness and if cultivators want to live a prolonged life they cannot be confined within the sea of bitterness.” Elder Wu Qing Feng had radiant lights shining out of his eyes as he continued: “Creating life within the sea of bitterness, brewing a vigorous and thriving life force within the emptiness. Develop the spiritual veins, building the overhead bridge and understanding the other shore. This is the end of the sea of bitterness. ”

Ye Fan contemplated for a while and felt that he still did not

understand as he asked: “The sea of bitterness submerges the wheel of life, the two can be said to coexist. If we develop a spiritual bridge and reach the other shore to escape from the sea of bitterness, doesn’t that mean that we also escape from the wheel of life? Isn’t that where the fundamentals of a cultivator are? Can we simply escape from it?”

Upon hearing this elder Wu Qing Feng nodded in appreciation as he said: “I’ve said that the wheel of life is the fundamentals of a cultivator. It is where all the fundamentals are found but I’ve never said that besides it there are no other areas.”

Pang Bo’s eyes grew larger as he asked: “There’s still something else?”

“If you want to be an immortal, only cultivating the wheel of life is insufficient. The spiritual bridge would allow one to surpass the sea of bitterness and connect to other mysterious crucial areas within the body……”

“Could it be that there isn’t only one wheel of life? There are others…… or it could also be said that within the human body there are several things akin to the wheel of life?” Ye Fan was astonished.

“If you want to be the expert at the summit of the world, cultivating the wheel of life to its extremes would be sufficient. However, if you want to become an immortal, simply cultivating the wheel of life would be far from sufficient.” Having said this, elder Wu Qing Feng shook his head because even he did not know if immortals truly existed. He then continued: “Even peerless

talents that cultivate their entire lives would find that cultivating the wheel of life is ample and have endless benefits. Wanting to cultivate spiritual veins, building the overhead bridge and reaching the other side of the shore to attain a prolonged life is not that simple. You two shouldn't look too far ahead and remember that a firm foundation is the basis for all of this and is the most important!"

# Chapter 40: Dao Scripture

Time flew by and in the blink of an eye three months had passed. Ye Fan and Pang Bo had gradually gotten used to the lifestyle here. This change began from their personal ideologies as they slowly accepted their circumstances.

Within this period of time, the two did not practice any cultivation and were only absorbing knowledge as well as contemplating on their future paths. Elder Wu Qing Feng did not hurry them and imparted the different experiences and insights into cultivation to them.

This was especially important to Ye Fan and Pang Bo and it took another full month before they finally felt that they had integrated and understood the knowledge and could begin on the path of cultivation.

“The wheel of life and sea of bitterness coexist as one, cultivating the wheel of life one also cultivates the sea of bitterness. From here it can be construed that cultivation begins from the sea of bitterness.”

Cultivation was a difficult process especially the initial step onto the path of immortals. There had to be someone to guide otherwise one would simply have no idea where to begin and how to take that first step.

“In the coming two months I will help the both of you step onto the road of immortals, officially allowing you to become

cultivators. Thereafter I will not be there to individually instruct you and you will have to go before Ling Xu cliff and listen to the mystical arts with the others."

Although Ye Fan did not join the Ling Xu sanctuary, elder Wu Qing Feng did not bade him to leave when he was instructing and treated Pang Bo and him as one entity. The elder knew that even though Ye Fan persisted on the path of cultivation there would be no fruits. Since ancient times, Ye Fan's physique was known as the world's first divine body but today it was only a crippled body.

For cultivators taking their initial step onto the path of immortals, forging a solid foundation was the most important and only in this way would they be able to climb to greater heights in the future. Elder Wu Qing Feng took a part of what was said to be the world's greatest foundation technique: <Dao Scripture>.

Dao Scripture, daring to name it as such was enough to speak volumes, it recorded the scriptures of the great Dao and was a supreme technique. The legends say that it was the classic of the immortals. In the vast and boundless Eastern badlands region, only a few ancient scriptures could be only considered similar in strength and there were none that could completely surpass it.

It was obvious that the Ling Xu sanctuary could not possibly have the real Dao Scripture , as an immortal sanctuary it simply did not have that kind of roots and what they had was merely the introductory section of it. In addition, this introductory section was not the only copy within the Yan state otherwise it would have attracted a calamity onto their sect.

There was no question that the introductory section of the Dao Scripture was the best kind of information for disciples who had exceptional talents. It allowed their foundations to be unbelievably solid and would be extremely beneficial for their future cultivation.

Although this section that held the key to success for one's foundation was precious, since long ago it had no longer been the secret of only one family and elder Wu Qing Feng had no need to keep it from Ye Fan. This was why he decided to impart it to these two people.

The Dao Scripture was indeed a profound and deep ancient scripture, otherwise its name would not have resounded within the eastern badlands for untold years. This introductory section alone contained innumerable doctrines, it was only a few thousand words but elder Wu Qing Feng required half a month before explaining all the intricacies contained within.

Every sentence within the Dao Scripture was profound and countless insights were contained within. It expounded on cultivation to the absolute pinnacle and even experts who saw this introductory section would sigh, the foundations of cultivation could be actually be so profound.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo earnestly cultivated each day, following what was said within the Dao Scripture, they first had to get a feel of the wheel of life within their bodies and guide their qi essence to batter their sea of bitterness. During this process there were naturally mysterious methods to feel for the wheel of life and guiding techniques that stood above the masses*.

[T/N* idiom: Extraordinarily good]

This was however still insufficient and by solely depending on oneself to cultivate it would be difficult to break through the first barrier onto the path of immortals. Someone also needed to help use their ‘immortal qi’ to guide. Elder Wu Qing Feng personally did so each day and his body circulated the foundation which was the key to success written within the Dao Scripture while his hands pressed against Ye Fan and Pang Bo just below the navel.

Over ten days later Pang Bo finally felt the wheel of life within his body and in the next few days he began to slowly try to guide the qi essence hidden within the wheel of life to batter the sea of bitterness.

Ye Fan, on the other hand, made no gains and his wheel of life was undeniably silent, that region was firm like divine metal and even with the strength of elder Wu Qing Feng he was unable to use his ‘immortal qi’ to enter and obviously could not help to guide.

“It’s really difficult to imagine why there’s such a physique.....” Elder Wu Qing Feng frowned as he eventually had no choice but to give up. He had circulated all the qi essence within his body to stimulate the wheel of life within Ye Fan’s body but there was simply no reaction.

“Venerated elder you must help Ye Fan, who knows maybe in the next instant it’ll be successful.” Pang Bo saw that elder Wu Qing Feng was giving up and rushed to plead.

“Ai, it’s not that I don’t want to help but there’s simply no way. With his physique, no one would be able to help guide him and he can only depend on himself.” Elder Wu Qing Feng shook his head.

“How could it be like this, Why don’t you…… try again?” Pang Bo tried to plead once more.

“Since ancient times this physique has been known as the number one divine body, naturally it isn’t something that I can understand and there must be many secrets that people don’t know about. It’s only that we don’t know the reasons and thus it is difficult for this physique to once again rise to glory. Whether a special cultivation technique is needed or some other reason is the cause, it is simply difficult to determine.”

At this moment, Ye Fan was still within quiet meditation and had not woken up yet.

Pang Bo continued: “Venerated elder I feel that you should carefully analyse again, if you do find what the reason is, maybe the prominence of the number one divine body can see the light of day again. At that time the Ling Xu sanctuary would immediately rise to fame.

Elder Wu Qing Feng had lived for a long time and clearly understood the affairs of the world, how could he be swayed by those simple words. He laughed as he shook his head and said: “Since ancient times, this unique physique has appeared multiple times and even those sacred grounds which are infinitely stronger

have no way, with just our Ling Xu sanctuary and its shallow roots do you think we stand a chance?”

“Hmm”

At this moment, elder Wu Qing Feng suddenly had a strange feeling and raised his hand to press against Ye Fan just below his navel. He gathered the qi essence within his body and began to investigate.

“How is it venerated elder, is there any hope?” Pang Bo urgently questioned.

After a long period of time, elder Wu Qing Feng seemed drained as he retrieved his hand and shook his head: “The wheel of life and sea of bitterness remain as solid as divine metal, still and quiet without any fluctuations. However, I felt something unique, the blood essence within his body seems to have become even more vigorous and because it’s hidden within, it’s very difficult to detect. Previously there were some slight fluctuations that I managed to barely detect.”

“The blood essence is becoming more vigorous?” Pang Bo was befuddled.

“That’s right, the two of you had the serendipity to find the sacred fruit within the forbidden land and also drank the water from the divine spring. You have shed your mortal bodies and exchanged your bones and gone through a major transformation, blood essence becoming incomparably vigorous.” At this point,

elder Wu Qing Feng had a puzzled expression and said: ”For the past few days, he has not progressed in the cultivation of the <Dao Scripture>. He has been unable to get a response from the wheel of life but presently, his blood essence seems to be boundless and is even more vigorous than your blood essence itself.”

Pang Bo was stunned as he said: “Didn’t you say that the Dao Scripture was known as the strongest foundation technique and is an immortal classic from legends. It should have a strong focus and since the introductory section is used to cultivate the wheel of life how could it be that his cultivation has affected his blood essence?”

“This……” Elder Wu Qing Feng frowned as he could not make head or tail of the situation.

At this moment, Ye Fan opened his eyes as his gaze seemed to shine forth divine light, and he appeared to be full of strength, energy and vigor.

Seeing his expression full of vigor and vitality, elder Wu Qing Feng felt even more confused and asked: “Did you manage to feel your wheel of life?”

Ye Fan shook his head and honestly replied: “Nope.”

“Then do you feel anything special?” The elder continued to question.

Ye Fan did not want to hide anything because the elder had been

really good to him and constantly tried his best to aid him. He did not hold back because of his unique physique and had not shown any form of prejudice or discrimination but rather used large amounts of spiritual qi daily to aid him.

"Although I haven't managed to feel the wheel of life, I feel that my entire body is comfortable and relaxed and it is brimming with energy.

"Do you feel that there are any changes?" Elder Wu Qing Feng then asked.

"It feels as though there is an inexhaustible amount of strength within my body." Having said this Ye Fan lifted a huge boulder by the side of the thatched cottage and seemed to have barely used any strength to do so.

Elder Wu Qing Feng took in a deep breath as he said: "You look so young but the strength of one arm seems to have at least several thousand jin, if both arms are used your strength would be like an elephant."

By the side Pang Bo was shocked, he had gone through the same changes as Ye Fan in returning to their youths and thought that the difference in their strengths were minimal. It was jarring to find out that he simply could not compare to Ye Fan's divine strength.

Elder Wu Qing Feng had a puzzled expression as he left. He simply could not understand why this was happening. Ye Fan

could not feel the presence of his wheel of life but with his current state could he still be considered a normal human?

After the elder left Ye Fan suddenly began to run and seemed to be like a fierce wind blowing through the small mountain. Pang Bo had a flabbergasted expression as he said: “Not only has your strength improved by large margins, even your speed has gone up another level!”

In the following days, the elder instructed even more sincerely because he would no longer be able to continue teaching individually like this in the future. After a period of time Ye Fan and Pang Bo would have to join the others and go before the Ling Xu cliff to listen to the mystical arts.

The master would guide them through the first barrier, once they had officially stepped onto the path of immortals they would have to completely depend on themselves. The Ling Xu sanctuary would provide mystical arts and medicinal liquids, as for any questions regarding mystical arts or queries that they had, these would have to be put together and asked. The elders themselves also had to cultivate and did not have that much time and energy to individually instruct.

“It won’t be long before the two of you need to go to the Ling Xu cliff. When you’re there try to be low key, if you can bear it just bear it don’t act rashly.”

# *Chapter 41: Establishing The Sea Of Bitterness*

For two months elder Wu Qing Feng did his utmost to instruct Pang Bo and Ye Fan guiding them to step onto the path of immortals. Pang Bo's cultivation was very smooth, he had already felt the wheel of life within his body and was able to circulate the qi essence within it. His next step was to establish his sea of bitterness to prepare for the release of the spring of divine energy.

Ye Fan was still unable to feel this wheel of life and there were still no fluctuations within the area, only absolute silence. After cultivating each day, he was filled with vitality and his entire body was comfortable and relaxed, brimming with energy. These past few days his strength had steadily been getting stronger and stronger and his speed had also increased by a large margin, his body seemed to be filled with endless amounts of strength, energy and vigor.

Time flew by and two months had passed in the blink of an eye. Elder Wu Qing Feng had to leave and could no longer individually instruct them.

"The path of immortals is wrought with danger and only with a firm will to pursue unremittingly would there be success." Having said this the elder floated away.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo bowed deeply towards elder Wu Qing Feng's back, this was not a cursory show of respect but rather one that originated from the heart.

Before the small mountain there were several thatched cottages interspersed with bamboo forests, it was tranquil, quiet and natural. Ye Fan and Pang Bo had slowly gotten used to the daily meals of plain tea and simple food.

The next day they were going to Ling Xu cliff to cultivate and Ye Fan was initially hesitant, he had not joined the Ling Xu sanctuary and felt that it was not right to go together with Pang Bo there to learn. Elder Wu Qing Feng had given him a jade tablet and with it even if one was not a Ling Xu disciple they could go there to learn.

While the moon hangs in the sky, the splendor of the bright moon spills down, the moonlight was soft like the ripples in the water. The woods in the nearby hills were hazy like as if it had put on a thin layer of gauze.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were both gazing at the stars, they did not talk for a long time and were looking for the star within their hearts. The sky was filled with many bright stars but everything was so unfamiliar, they could no longer see that familiar piece of sky.

Reaching the other side of the stars, the past was simply just too far away and there was no way to search for it.

“I am wondering in the palace of the heaven, this night is which year……”*

“People have their own sorrow, joy, parting, and reunion. The

moon has its dimness, brightness, waning, and waxing..... May we all be blessed with longevity. Although a thousand miles apart, we can still share the beautiful moon together."*

[T/N: Both lines are from the same poem by the Chinese essayist Su Shi]

The two people laid on the grass gazing at the stars, their hands held plain tea but the tea never made it to their mouths as nearly all of it fell onto their faces.

"We can never go back again....."

Thereafter the two fell into contemplation for a long time and laid there silently, looking at the stars completely silent.

It was a long time later before this silence was finally broken.

"We have to live on well....."

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were both optimistic people and the brief period of melancholy was a good bye to the past and they would be steadfast as they met the future.

They moved on from this speedily as their conversation topic switched to questions on cultivation. Although they had only cultivated for two months, this was a 'new life' to the two and something they had never experienced before. The path of immortals was shrouded in mist and their future paths were

uncertain. Since they had already stepped onto this path, they would have to unswervingly walk on.

Ling Xu sanctuary was one of the six immortal sanctuaries within Yan state, although it could not be compared to those accomplished large sects, it still had nearly one thousand cultivators and its young disciples numbered nearly one hundred people.

The morning sun had risen and the golden glow bathed the mountain cliff, glorious and dazzling.

Ling Xu cliff was a precipice, it was formed by over ten short stone cliffs that did not link to each other. There was a certain distance between each short cliff and they were only seventy to eighty metres in height.

It was dawn and there were many young disciples gathered here. Due to the differences in their cultivation levels, their choices were naturally different as they moved before the different stone cliffs to listen to the mystical arts that most benefited their current cultivation.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were also timely in their arrival and upon reaching they rushed for their only option, the stone cliff that was furthest away. There were many people gathered here, males and females amounting to forty to fifty of them. The youngest among them seemed to be only seven to eight years of age, face young and tender radiating childishness, while the oldest few seemed to be in their thirties with their faces already showing signs of ageing.

There was a flash of light as a mystical rainbow descended upon the stone cliff. The glow rescinded and an elder with a spotlessly white beard and hair sat atop it and calmly swept his gaze past the crowd, only pausing slightly on Pang Bo and Ye Fan's bodies before beginning to instruct.

At the same time, the other cliffs also had mystical rainbows descend and they were all elders of Ling Xu sanctuary. There was a distance between each cliff and there would be no disturbance from the other cliffs.

Looking at the morning glow and listening to cultivation techniques, there were several people who felt a feeling of novelty, most of them had recently become disciples of Ling Xu sanctuary.

The elder atop the cliff was steady and his voice was calm without any emotion. He instructed very concisely and every important problem faced by cultivators at the start of the path of immortals was answered.

An hour later, the instructing ended and the elder atop the cliff was emotionless as he looked down and said: "If you have any questions please feel free to ask. Otherwise, today's session will be concluded."

A few youths hurriedly rushed forward as they fervently questioned in succession. The elder on the cliff answered each question patiently and seeing that there were no other questions rode on a mystical rainbow towards the sky.

The first time coming here to listen to the mystical arts was dull

and boring without any novelty, this was what Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt to the point that it even felt like a waste of time. In the past two months, under elder Wu Qing Feng's guidance their foundations were solid and the several crucial problems had long been pointed out.

"The introductory section within the Dao Scripture will allow us to cultivate for up to two years, these little mystical arts are boring and the venerated elder has explained it to us long ago."

"Don't bite off more than you can chew*, the venerated elder has warned repeatedly that a we must have a solid foundation and since he was placed such emphasis on this and asked us to come here to cultivate, he must have his reasons."

[T/N* idiom: Chasing a target that is unrealistic and too far away]

In the following half a month, although the two felt it was awfully boring they persevered to stay each day and gradually found that there were some benefits for doing so. The elder atop the cliff would occasionally speak of his own cultivation process and the insights and understandings that he gained, this was extremely important! For a student at the beginning stages the experiences during cultivation were like a bright light guiding their way, they could compare it to their own circumstances and even gain insights, speeding up their cultivation process.

This morning, the elder atop the cliff suddenly opened his palms as over ten rays of light shot forth and landed within the hands of Ye Fan, Pang Bo and the group. There was a jade bottle within the hands of each person, very bright and clean and after opening it

there was a fragrance that assailed the senses.

"This is a medicinal fluid that can aid you in establishing your sea of bitterness." The elder's words were very concise and not a word was wasted.

The sea of bitterness and wheel of life coexisted together and if one wanted to release the qi essence hidden within the wheel of life they had to continually establish their sea of bitterness.

The medicinal liquid within the jade bottle was very valuable and only every three months would it be given out, each year everyone would only obtain four bottles.

Pang Bo's sea of bitterness was slowly changing and in the three months it grew from the size of the pit of a date to that of a fingernail. The surroundings were filled with bits of the essence of life and he seemed to be more nimble.

Although Ye Fan had also drank a bottle of the medicinal fluid, there were simply no changes. The sea of bitterness was incredibly silent and had not been established, even a region the size of a sesame seed had not been formed and there was simply no essence of life circulating.

Nevertheless, Ye Fan's strength and speed continued to improve during this period and the energy within his body was surging, his blood essence was especially vigorous, surging like a river dragon.

"I think I'll continue slowly cultivating like this. Although at present I cannot establish my sea of bitterness nor interact with

my wheel of life, my body has been strengthening continually and this can't possibly be a bad thing."

"That's right, I feel that the current you is simply many times greater than me. Everyday I cultivate the sea of bitterness but I don't see any improvements to my strength or speed, neither can I execute any mystical arts. I really don't see any use to cultivating." Pang Bo grumbled.

On the second day he could bear it no longer and before the elder atop the cliff he consulted: "Do we really have to continue cultivating like this? When can we also ride on mystical rainbows to travel?"

The elder indifferently looked at him and said: "Food should be eaten mouthful by mouthful, the road should be trodden step by step. Before you can walk, you are actually thinking of running, this will only end up in a fall."

Although the elder had reprimanded he still spoke of the benefits when one cultivated to the later stages in order to ignite the hopes of the group below.

"When the sea of bitterness is sufficiently big, one can begin the next step of cultivation. That would be to open a path that leads directly to the wheel of life at the bottom of the sea of bitterness, opening the 'mouth of the spring' and releasing the spring of divine energy from the wheel of life. At that time you would be considered to have attained some form of success and will finally be able to execute some mystical arts. This is what all of you are looking forward to, mystical magical abilities."

# Chapter 42: A Disastrous Setback

Time flew by quickly, Ye Fan and Pang Bo had already spent four months learning before the Ling Xu cliff. This was the day which the elder would give out medicinal liquids once again.

The dazzling and translucent jade bottle was no bigger than two inches, the circular bottom was no larger than one inch and the medicinal liquid contained within was really limited.

The medicinal liquid was jade green in colour and had a unique grassy scent, it had exceptional effects in aiding one to establish the sea of bitterness, saving the cultivator plenty of time and energy. It was rumoured that this medicinal liquid was forged from the essence of one hundred different kinds of medicinal plants, it was equivalent to the qi essence hidden within the wheel of life and was referred to as the ‘Hundred plants extract’.

“Shuaaa”

The elder atop the stone cliff transformed into a rainbow as he flew towards the sky, disappearing into the depths of the Ling Xu sanctuary in the blink of an eye.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo kept their jade bottles and were preparing to leave when a youth of fifteen to sixteen years of age walked over and like a thorn in their sides blocked their path saying: “Lend me the two bottles of hundred plants extract.” Having said this, the youth stretched forth his hands and grabbed, not giving either person a chance to reject him.

“Who are you? Why do I have to give it to you?” Pang Bo brushed aside his hand and stood there glaring at him.

Ye Fan saw fear in the eyes of the surrounding people as they all backed away, then looked at the youth’s hand which held five to six bottles of the hundred plants extract and immediately understood that this was an undisguised seizing of others possessions.

The face of the fifteen to sixteen year old youth darkened as his hand was brushed away and said: “You dare to stare at me?”

Pang Bo and Ye Fan did not want to cause a scene, all the people here were cultivators and they had only arrived at the Ling Xu sanctuary for a short period of time. They did not want any altercations and slowly backed away while planning to leave.

“You want to leave without saying a word, have I agreed?” The youth had a cold smile and grabbed onto Pang Bo’s wrist while his other hand grabbed at the hundred plants extract.

Although Pang Bo did not have Ye Fan’s strength, as compared to cultivators who had not managed to learn any mystical arts, his strength could be considered godly and with a shake of his hand he managed to fling the youth away, causing him to stagger, stumble and almost fall to the ground.

The youth was humiliated and flew into a rage shouting: “You dare to act against me! I will make sure that the both of you will be

unable to get up from your beds for three months!”

At this moment, several other fifteen to sixteen year olds squeezed their way through the crowd. The surrounding people looked frightened and hurriedly moved aside as though they recognised these people. In each of the youth’s hands were six to seven bottles of hundred plant extract, it was clear that they had also forcefully taken these bottles.

These people speedily surrounded Ye Fan and Pang Bo, the youth who was shamed by Pang Bo cold laughed: “Teach them a lesson, make sure they can’t get off their beds for three months.”

“It’s true that where there are people, there will be grievances, this is true even for cultivators.” Having said this Ye Fan did not speak any further and strode forward. A youth had just jumped forward but was kicked aside by him.

Pang Bo also coldly laughed: “Even though we’re disciples from the same sect, you people still want to plunder, you really have guts. If I don’t teach you people a lesson, I really can’t imagine what evil acts you people will do in the future.” His moves were more forceful as he practically gave each youth a slap which sent them flying, making it seem like a ground full of fallen gourds.

“You actually dared to hit me?” The youth who initially riled matters had a swollen face as he stared hatefully at Ye Fan and Pang Bo. He swiftly stood up as he turned and ran while saying: “You two just wait.”

If one could not access the spring of divine energy within their wheel of life, even cultivators were merely stronger than normal people. When compared to Ye Fan and Pang Bo, they were simply like normal humans.

At this moment, a youth of fourteen to fifteen years old was talking to a youth in his twenties in the distance: “Your little brother is really so useless, we made him go over to feel them out but it ended up in such a disgrace.”

The young man in his twenties looked embarrassed, when faced with this youth who was younger than him he was filled with trepidation as he spoke with a look of respect: “These two people don’t seem to be all that much, is there really a need to test them?”

“It’s my granduncle who wants to test them, I heard that the two of them ate some sort of divine medicine……” The younger youth had an indifferent cold smile as he said: “Otherwise, I would have no interest in them whatsoever!”

The older youth felt cold sweat as he heard this, he seemed to be extremely frightened of the youth’s granduncle as he said: “Even if it was divine medicine, it has already eaten by those two. What plan does your noble granduncle the venerated elder have?”

“My granduncle feels that within their bodies exists some remnants of the strong medicinal properties. It’s a pity that we only recently learnt of these two, my granduncle was very upset about it.”

“This……” The youth by the side felt his body grow cold as he hesitantly asked: “Even if their bodies have some remnants of the medicinal effects, we couldn’t possibly extract it right?”

“ Since we can’t directly extract it, don’t tell me we can’t let out blood from their bodies?” The younger youth seemed sinister and cold as he laughed, he did not seem his age as he said: “In the worst case we can always refine their bodies, I think….. this is possibly what my granduncle plans to do.”

The older youth felt his heart palpitate, that elder who refined medicines was always vicious and merciless and as an elder of Ling Xu sanctuary, not many dared to provoke him. The two youths who were seen as medicinal ingredients by him would be hard pressed to stay alive.

The younger youth seemed to be speaking to an underling as he said: “Your useless little brother has come back, go with him to feel out those two people. Let’s see how their physiques are and if it’s actually worth it for my granduncle to use them to refine medicine.”

“Alright, I’ll go immediately.”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo had tried to stay under the radar but were still targeted. Right now they did not know that, just as they were squeezing past the crowd to leave, they were stopped again.

The youth in his twenties had seemed to have drops of brilliance shrouding his body, it was clear that he had cultivated some form

of mystical art and could use a portion of some magical ability.

“Brother, you have to help me teach them a lesson!” The youth who stirred up matters earlier stared hatefully at Ye Fan and Pang Bo, the surrounding youths who were kicked away saw that they had someone to rely on and started to loudly berate.”

“Break their hands and feet then throw them into the lotus pond to feed the fishes.”

“Let the two of them bow down and kowtow one thousand times.”

……

The few youths hooted constantly, the person they could rely on was here and they continued to ridicule and scold Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

Ye Fan frowned, naturally he was not incensed by the few youths but felt that the situation seemed rather abnormal, as though someone was deliberately targeting them.

“Why did the two of you viciously beat my little brother?” The youth had a cold expression as he glared at Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

“Which eye of yours saw me viciously beating him?” Pang Bo said with his eyebrows raised. The situation had become one that could no longer be tolerated and even if he bowed his head and

recognized his mistakes the other side would still viciously teach them a lesson. He could see that they were simply finding an excuse to do so.

“What exactly do you want to do?” Ye Fan asked straightforwardly.

“You two viciously beat up my little brother, naturally I’m going to help him vent his anger.” The youth coldly laughed and walked closer one step at a time.

At this point many people had gathered around and they looked over from far away. No one dared to come forward and help them, the few disciples at this stone cliff had mostly just joined the Ling Xu sanctuary and felt fear towards this youth which had a glow around his body.

“Break both their legs! Make them kneel on the ground!”

“Throw them into the lake to feed the fishes!”

The few youths started to hoot again.

“Shuaaa”

There was a flash of light as the youth rushed forward like a demon, extremely fast, his palms were dazzling and translucent like jade and made a knife like chop towards Ye Fan’s neck.

He did not use all his strength, in his opinion this knife palm blow of his would be enough to knock aside Ye Fan and have him fall to the ground. Contrary to his expectations, Ye Fan reacted speedily and took two steps back as he dodged very naturally. At the same time Ye Fan also stretched forward and a “Bang!” resounded as he grabbed hold of the fist.

“Let go!”

Although the youth was rather surprised, he did not feel that Ye Fan could possibly be a threat to him and wanted to fling Ye Fan aside. Matters fell short of his expectations as his fingers seemed to have been clamped by pliers, filled with intense pain and it was simply impossible to break free.

“Bang!”

At this moment, Pang Bo who was by the side threw a vicious punch to the back of the youth. The strength contained within was stupefying and the body of the youth trembled violently as blood could be seen dripping from his mouth.

Ye Fan was still holding onto that hand and as though he were brandishing a straw man, he fiercely swung the youth and heavily smashed him into the ground.

“Bang!’

There was a cloud of dust as the ground shook violently and the glow shrouding the youth had thoroughly disappeared. A miserable shriek was heard and fresh blood could be seen spewing forth, the youth was twitching on the ground.

The people in the surroundings were stunned, they could never have imagined that Ye Fan would beat the youth to the ground in such a convincing fashion.

The youth clearly had strength as he had already cultivated mystical arts but he did not have any chance to use them. Ye Fan could currently lift a huge boulder of several thousand jin with one arm, akin to strength of an elephant. Normal mystical arts when faced with such monstrous strength would find it difficult to resist.

“It’s clearly you guys who were picking a fight, we were only engaging in self defense. You people actually had the cheek to say that we viciously beat you, alright, let’s make your words a reality then.” Pang Bo was enraged as he speedily rushed forward,the few youths that were hooting earlier wanted to run but the surrounding audience was in the way and they had no way to get away quickly.

“Bang!”, “Bang!”, “Bang!”……

Pang Bo did not let up as he kicked all the youths back and held them to the ground before beginning to continually slap them as sounds of “Piak Piak Piak Piak” were heard non-stop.

“What did you guys say just now? Break our hands and feet and

throw us into the lotus pond to feed the fishes? I seem to recall you also wanted us to kneel down and kowtow one thousand times, are you guys tired of living?!”

Pang Bo was vicious in his strikes as he continued to rain slaps, the faces of the youths began to swell like pig heads and miserable shrieks could be heard all around.

“You people haven’t even learnt a bird feather’s worth of mystical arts but actually want to be tyrants and bully people, you guys simply don’t know how high the heavens are or how deep the ground is. If we don’t properly teach you guys a lesson today, you guys would actually think you’re immortals!”

Pang Bo stood up us his feet began to madly trample the few people on the ground as they continued to miserably groan, Pang Bo felt more and more invigorated as he continued beating them.

“Tell me, why did you people target the two of us?” Ye Fan who was by the side did not remain idle as his feet fiercely kicked forth, the youth in his twenties was rolling on the ground, body spasming and blood could be seen staining his mouth.

“If you don’t tell us, I’ll throw you headlong into the pond up ahead.” Ye Fan kicked forth again, his strength was simply monstrous and the youth was kicked into the air and flew eight to nine metres away.

Pang Bo heard this and his face immediately lit up: “Good idea!” He crouched down and using his immense strength, he lifted the five to six youths simultaneously and walked towards the direction

of the pond.

"No! Put us down!"

"Save us! They are committing murder!"

"Please I beg you to let us go!"

Pang Bo simply ignored them and began to throw them one at a time into the pond. There was plenty of mud and sludge within the pond and as Pang Bo had thrown them with immense force the few youths were thrown in with their heads first and their legs were in the air. They were all planted headlong into the sludge.

"Don't kill anyone……" Ye Fan reminded.

"It's okay, these useless things have all stepped onto the path of immortals. Although they haven't managed to learn any mystical arts, their physiques are much stronger than normal people, they can hold their breaths for at least one hour."

"Are you going to speak up? Could it be that you also want to fall in head first?!" Pang Bo kicked the youth on the ground again.

Pang Bo walked over with big strides and said: "Just throw him headlong, don't speak any further with him. We'll see if he still keeps his mouth shut."

Ye Fan saw that the youth was still tight-lipped and did not continue speaking as he lifted him and forcefully threw him.

The group in the surrounding area were speechless, how immense was this divine strength? There was still a distance of forty to fifty metres from the pond and Ye Fan seemed to be hurling a lance as he threw a large living person there.

“Chi!”

In reality, this youth was really like a lance as he stuck into the mud ramrod straight. The top half of his body was submerged leaving only his two legs that were flailing about.

“Simply too incredible!”

“Where did this monster come from? Looking like eleven or twelve years of age, cultured and refined. How could there be such monstrous strength?!”

……

The surrounding people were flabbergasted and after a while they began discussing fervently. The crowd was feeling ecstatic that the bossy and domineering youths earlier were taught a lesson, they felt this was certainly justified.

Suddenly, the group in the distance began to part as a few people who had terrified expressions opened a pathway. A youth that

looked to be fourteen to fifteen with a sinister and cold face slowly walked over. By his side were a few youths in their twenties with glows shrouding their bodies.

“This is elder Han’s grandson, Han Fei Yu……”

“His granduncle is an elder, it’s rumored that his granduncle is an expert in refining medicine.”

“Keep quiet! Don’t discuss about him, be careful that disaster comes from whatever you say!”

……

Han Fei Yu slowly walked forward with his cold countenance and said to Ye Fan and Pang Bo: “What do you think Ling Xu sanctuary is? Being so violent in front of everyone without any qualms, do you really think you are elders here?”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo did not bother about him and turned to look at the pond.

Han Fei Yu’s face grew colder as he told the four people by his side: “Don’t let those eye sores continue to remain in my sight!”

Hearing this, Ye Fan turned and said: “You sure can speak loudly, it seems that you were the one instigating all along. There’s nothing more to be said, today you will also fall in head first.”

Cold light seemed to shine from Han Fei Yu's eyes as he indiscernibly muttered: "It seems that I'll have to send two corpses to granduncle……"

[T/N: The literal meaning of the chapter title is to fall headlong]

# Chapter 43: Divine Symbol

Cold light could be seen in Han Yu Fei's eyes, he had a cold smile and stared at Ye Fan and Pang Bo wordlessly as though he were looking at dead people.

The four youths by his side heard his orders and moved forward together, their faces had mocking expressions as they slowly surrounded the two.

One of the youths spoke softly as though he did not want the surrounding people to hear him and said: "You people really don't know how high the heavens are or how deep the earth is, within the Ling Xu sanctuary there are some people that you cannot afford to offend. The words that the two of you actually dared to say earlier, simply looking for death!"

By the side another youth walked closer with a cold smile as he ridiculed: "Really impressive, you guys just entered the Ling Xu sanctuary but are already so impressive. I think you guys really don't know how the death word is written. However, I think the two of you won't be able to die, because what's worse than death is being tortured while alive, if you don't go through endless amounts of torture it will be difficult to even wish for death."

"Actually, there is a way for the two of you to go through less agony." At this moment another youth spoke up very casually and seemed to be addressing the two like grasshoppers that he could squash at any time, his voice dripping with sarcasm: "The two of you can break your own two feet and kneel down to beg for mercy. Thereafter you can climb into the pond and stick yourselves into

the mud, show us how to be shoved headlong."

"If I were you guys, I'd opt to knock my head and kill myself. At least I'd be able to avoid the agony of living."

The four people were very carefree and did not put the two in their eyes. Ridiculing and mocking them as they stood all around not giving the two any way to escape.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were not the kind of people to take things lying down, these four people were going too far with their speech but they did not act in anger but rather seemed to be indifferent and calmly responded.

"What are these four idiots doing?"

"I reckon that when they went out their heads were accidentally wedged flat by a door, otherwise how could they have such retarded looks and constantly spew nonsense."

The two of them spoke as though they were third parties, as if they were happily watching a bustling scene from the outside and were commenting on the matter. These made the four youths fill with anger, these two people who they regarded as grasshoppers were actually unafraid and had such an attitude, simply not putting them in their eyes. They were vicious with their words and made their tempers rise, their faces grew colder and the mocking smiles on their faces were wiped clean.

“You don’t know what’s good for you!” A youth coldly snorted but did not rush forward. They had noticed that the two had abnormal strength and did not want to ruin their assured chances of victory.

“Shmm”

Light could be seen coming from below his navel, a divine symbol that was like an iron chain as it came gushing forth like a wave and headed towards Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

“A divine symbol that originates from the sea of bitterness!”

“The elder that taught mystical arts had said that if there was a small success in cultivating, one could perform mystical arts. This is an expert.”

……

The surrounding people were shocked, a majority of the people gathered here had just joined the Ling Xu sanctuary and it was rare to see someone using mystical arts. There were panicky expressions on everyone’s faces.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo reacted very quickly as they each dodged to a side, the symbol of light that seemed like an iron chain brushed past their bodies but speedily changed directions and continued heading towards the two of them.

This was their first time encountering a cultivator who could use mystical arts thus they had no idea how strong the divine symbol from the sea of bitterness would be and did not dare to easily block it. The two people dodged again, however, the divine symbol was like a shadow that could not be escaped from, dazzling and bright with a metallic feel as it hastily changed directions again.

“Bang!’

Ye Fan suddenly lifted a huge rock from the side and held it against the oncoming divine symbol. The two forces struck each other with a loud noise and a large cut appeared on the several thousand catty heavy rock, as though it had been cut by an axe.

This made the faces of Ye Fan and Pang Bo change, cultivators that could use mystical arts were indeed impressive, normal people simply had no way to defend against them.

“Shmm”

The divine symbol that was akin to an iron chain had left a very deep scar on the large rock and clearly spent most of its energy. The glow had significantly dimmed and it became a vague image as it flew back into the youth’s sea of bitterness. His body trembled as he took two steps back.

“These two grasshoppers really have very abnormal strengths, let’s be more careful. If we end up getting injured by them that would really be humiliating.” The four youths silently communicated.

“Shmm”, “Shmm”, “Shmm”, “Shmm”

A few light noises echoed out and four different coloured lights were released from the four youth’s sea of bitterness. Four divine symbols that looked like iron chains came from four separate directions at Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

At the same time, Ye Fan and Pang Bo also began to retaliate. In the vicinity of the stone cliff were countless boulders and the several thousand catty boulders were hurled by them to meet the four divine symbols.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo’s divine strength was astonishing as one large boulder after another flew out and struck the divine symbols. There were also several boulders that were flung towards the four youths.

The four youths who could be considered to have an entry level understanding in mystical arts were frantic, although they had sent forth their divine energy and formed divine symbols, controlling these divine symbols to fly was simply too slow and the large boulders could not be avoided. They were unable to effectively engage the other party.

After cultivating divine energy from their sea of bitterness, their physiques went through a large improvement but this was still simply incomparable to Ye Fan and Pang Bo. As one large boulder

after another constantly smashed towards them, they could only dodge.

Large boulders were flying and the four youths were not only stopped, they had to constantly retreat in fear of the several thousand catty boulders smashing into them.

“Shuaaa”

At this moment, Ye Fan suddenly dashed forward with indescribable speed, leaving a faint illusion where he previously stood.

“Bang!”

The next instant he appeared before one of the youths and threw out a simple punch, heavily planting his fist on the other person’s nose and sending the cultivator flying through the air.

This was a punch that was simply aesthetically pleasing yet filled with immense force! Ye Fan moved gracefully as he started to move about his right hand, there was a sense of beauty in this. But when he shot out his fist, it was brutal and vicious, the youth received a heavy blow and was sent flying more than a dozen metres away.

A splatter of blood could be clearly seen spurting forth from the cultivator’s nose and mouth, the splatter of blood flew several metres through the air forming a blood red line and seven to eight

teeth could be seen flying through the air as well.

On the other side, Pang Bo could bear it no longer and also acted with an incredible speed as he viciously smashed a huge boulder against one of the cultivator's bodies. There was the sound of bones breaking and the youth trembled as he was flung into the air and heavily landed on the ground.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Another two loud striking sounds could be heard and the remaining two youths were struck to the ground. They had performed a ballad of brute force and their fists were like metal hammers that smashed the two people and caused them to spit out large mouthfuls of blood.

At this point, the light from the four divine symbols had dimmed and speedily entered the four youth's sea of bitterness. Ye Fan and Pang Bo placed the four cultivators that were lying limply on the ground together and stood there looking down at them.

"I seem to recall that previously the few of you said that the two of us don't know how high the heavens are and how deep the earth is and that we don't know what's good for us. I'd like to ask, do you guys know?" Having said this Pang Bo kicked forth four times and the four people rolled on the ground like balls.

“Treating the two of us like grasshoppers and wanting to squash us?”

“I recall you also said that you wanted us to break our own two legs and kneel down to beg for mercy. Thereafter you even said that we should climb into the pond and plant ourselves into the mud and sludge.....”

“You people even said that you’d make living worse than death for us, torture us to the point of us wanting to die. Really boasting so shamelessly!”

“Bang! Bang! Bang!.....”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo only felt extreme disgust for these four people and felt no pity nor did they show any mercy as they kicked and kicked. The four people were like bed bugs being trodden on and constantly kicked around, eventually they were left in a pile like mud on the ground.

“Enough!” At this point, Han Fei Yu was coldly looking from a distance and his face became darker and darker with cold light shining forth from his eyes.

Pang Bo glanced at him and said: “It’s enough just because you say it’s enough? Who are you to even talk like this!”

“Let them go!” Han Fei Yu’s voice was deathly cold and let the surrounding people feel chills down their spines. Although he

looked to be only fourteen to fifteen years of age, his demeanor and attitude were simply too sinister and cold to be attached to one of that age.

“Why should we to listen to you?!” Pang Bo simply didn’t care.

As for Ye Fan he was also indifferent towards the youth and crouched down to lift two of the youths. He smoothly moved his body with grace and shifted his hands.

Two shadows streaked across the sky like two sticks, in a flash they flew for about 50 metres and there were two perfectly straight figures stuck in the middle of the muddy pond, only two pairs of legs could be seen outside the mud.

“You’re looking for death!”

Han Fei Yu finally had an expression of intense anger as his body seemed to radiate coldness and he pressed forward.

Ye Fan ignored him and continued to lift another two people, flinging them and with two soft sounds of “Chi! Chi!” they landed ramrod straight into the mud and sludge.

The people in the area were speechless, this outcome was simply stunning and stupefying.

“Chi!”

Below the navel of Han Fei Yu, light was being released that was dazzling and blinding, a square-shaped green wooden symbol that was smaller than an inch flew out of his sea of bitterness. A bluish green colour radiated brilliance from the symbol, it expanded rapidly in size and was heading towards Ye Fan and Pang Bo with pressure.

The people in the surroundings let out exclamations of shock, this was an actual green wooden symbol. It was not simply forged by some bits of divine energy from the sea of bitterness and was certainly incomparably better than the four divine symbols earlier.

The green wooden symbol rushed out of the sea of bitterness and wisps of green energy could be seen, releasing a heavy pressure.

# Chapter 44: Celestial Sprout

Ye Fan and Pang Bo wanted to dodge but simply could not react in time. This green coloured wooden symbol was faster than the divine symbols by too much and in an instant it was encompassing them above their heads.

The four sided green wooden symbol was barely an inch when it was released but in the blink of an eye it had become as big as a house, surrounding the entire area with green energy as though there were clouds floating.

Under the immense pressure, Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt as though a large mountain was descending on them, and they were exhausting all their energy just to resist.

“Bang!”

The two of them used their hands to forcefully shove upwards, wanting to knock aside the green wooden symbol that was descending. They did not expect that the force would be so immense that their feet immediately left cracks on the ground as it sunk in.

“Bang!”

The green wooden symbol trembled and endless amounts of green coloured mist gathered. It grew bigger and now seemed to be as tall as a palace and continued to descend.

“Even if it was a ten thousand catty large boulder it would have long been knocked away, what stupid thing is this. How could it be this heavy……”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt the pressure on their arms steadily increasing and their feet continued to sink into the ground, everything beneath the knees was completely within the ground and fissures could be seen.

“I thought that you guys like to shove others headlong, now I’ll make the both of you into living ‘human trees’.” Han Fei Yu coldly laughed as he walked forward making everyone feel the chills.

“Bang!”

The green wooden symbol trembled again as the hazy green energy grew once more to shroud the entire area, Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt that the pressure suddenly rise greatly and both their feet completely sunk into the ground, leaving just their upper bodies above the ground.

“If it goes on like this we’ll be squashed into meat pulp.” Ye Fan felt that the situation was grim and whispered to Pang Bo.

“Don’t worry, I won’t let you guys die so easily……” Han Fei Yu had a cold smile, it was clear that he wanted to continue torturing the two people.

By this point, Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt that both their arms were starting to feel numb and if it continued like this they would have no more energy to resist, likely to be squashed into the ground. Ye Fan signalled to Pang Bo and wanted him to relax his hands and rush out. Pang Bo shook his head, he was afraid that once he removed his hands, Ye Fan would be unable to hold on and immediately be squashed into meat pulp.

“There’s no more time or other options available……” Ye Fan grit his teeth as he spat the words out, the pressure above was too great and even with his elephant like strength they would not be able to hold on for much longer.

Pang Bo understood their current circumstances and one person needed to rush out to take care of Han Fei Yu otherwise, there would be simply no way to live. The person who was left behind would likely be in dire straits, if two people could barely handle the pressure from the green wooden symbol, the person left behind would certainly be in grave danger.

With no other option as one person needed to handle the green wooden symbol, Pang Bo was not a wishy washy person and immediately freed his hands as he forcefully pushed himself out of the ground.

“Bang!”

The green wooden symbol trembled and continued to release dull green light, the immense pressure made Ye Fan’s arms tremble uncontrollably. He continued to sink deeper and he was buried up till his chest, the green wooden symbol was less than a metre from

the ground.

Pang Bo felt nervous and cold sweat dripped down his back. He was like an arrow as he shot forth, his speed was phenomenal.

“Bang!”

The green light flashed and the green wooden symbol trembled once more, in the instant that Pang Bo dashed forth, the huge symbol pressed to the ground and buried Ye Fan’s entire body including his head into the ground.

Pang Bo felt anxious and his entire person became a blur as he madly rushed forth, in an instant he grabbed Han Fei Yu and his two hands were like pincers as he began to tear.

Han Fei Yu had never expected that of the two people who were pressured into immobility, one would actually rush out and slam him to the ground, then attack him like a hungry wolf.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!……”

Pang Bo sat atop Han Fei Yu and like the beating of drums he continually wielded his fists and heavily swung them downwards.

The people in the area were shocked, they did not expect that Pang Bo would be able to rush out.

Although Han Fei Yu lacked Pang Bo's strength, he had cultivated a little of the spring of divine energy and could utilise all the qi essence within his body. His body was shrouded in a layer of divine light and although Pang Bo's fists continued to heavily rain down, it did not cause much damage to him and only a slight trickle of blood could be seen flowing from his mouth.

Even so, Han Fei Yu saw red, he had never eaten such a big loss before and started to vehemently struggle, from within his sea of bitterness light was released that struck Pang Bo into the air. Thereafter, several iron chain like divine symbols shot forth from the sea of bitterness, bright and dazzling as they writhed with killing intent towards Pang Bo.

Pang Bo hurriedly dodged as he lifted a large boulder by his side to block and viciously smashed.

"I want to tear you into pieces!" Han Fei Yu's expression was icy cold and multiple divine symbols were swirling around his body like strips of lightning as they shot forth towards Pang Bo.

"Boom!"

At this moment, the green wooden symbol that had been pressed to the ground was suddenly flung into the air and Ye Fan rushed out while his both hands lifted it. Ye Fan used all his strength to fling it towards Han Fei Yu and a green light flashed, green haze could be seen everywhere and like a mountain it smashed towards him.

With Han Fei Yu's level of cultivation he could not control more than one thing at a time and was thus unable to properly control both the divine symbols and the green wooden symbol. Earlier when he started to fight with Pang Bo, Ye Fan took the opportunity to escape and like a lightning bolt he left a mirage and rushed forth closely behind the green wooden symbol.

When the green wooden symbol was flung back, Han Fei Yu's face drained of colour as he hurriedly stopped attacking Pang Bo and kept his divine symbols as he tried to regain control of his green wooden symbol to kill the two people.

Ye Fan's speed was simply too fast and reached at the same time as the green wooden symbol. As Han Fei Yu took control of the green wooden symbol and managed to stabilise it, Ye Fan was already before him and his right leg swept forth, flying through the air and viciously smashing into Han Fei Yu's face. Flesh blood flew threw the air as blood spurted out from Han Fei Yu's mouth and nose, he then flew through air landing over twenty metres away. The green wooden symbol having lost its controller fell heavily to the ground.

Ye Fan did not stop as his body disappeared in a flash of light, he chased forward and even before Han Fei Yu landed on the ground he had appeared before him. His feet once again swung out and smashed Han Fei Yu heavily into the ground. The force behind this leg was simply tremendous and the people in the area paled as they saw the ground shudder violently and Han Fei Yu's body seemed to almost split in two.

Almost at the same time, Pang Bo also rushed over and lifted his

leg to viciously trample on the body, heavily stepping on Han Fei Yu's abdomen.

"Attack his head! Don't let him gather his senses!" Ye Fan forcefully instructed.

Pang Bo immediately understood, they could not let Han Fei Yu gather his senses to control the green wooden symbol, otherwise, the lives of the two people would be in danger.

"Bang! Bang! Bang!....."

Both of them had immense strength and every leg could send a large rock weighing several thousand catty flying, as they heavily stomped on Han Fei Yu's body such that even the ground began to tremble. If it were not for the sea of bitterness within Han Fei Yu that continually released a shroud of light that covered his body, he would have already been stomped into meat pulp.

The people in the surroundings were stupefied and speechless, the two people who were original trapped had escaped from their dire straits and actually turned the tables on Han Fei Yu, this was simply inconceivable.

"You actually wanted to torture the two of us to death, so sinister and evil at such a young age! If you grow up who knows what evil and sinister deeds you will commit, I think we should stomp you to death!"

Although they said this, the two of them did not want to cause a death as the consequences of this would be dire. However, they did not want to let Han Fei Yu go so easily and continued to stomp as the glow shrouding Han Fei Yu gradually grew dimmer.

Han Fei Yu wanted to control the green wooden symbol but each attempt ended in failure as the green wooden symbol flew into the air and heavily landed on the ground each time. He was constantly being stomped on and it was difficult for him to focus. In the end, Han Fei Yu finally ran out of energy and the divine glow from his sea of bitterness finally dissipated, Pang Bo and Ye Fan with their godly strength continued to stomp and shrill cries could be heard.

“Establishing the sea of bitterness and barely cultivating your spring of divine energy, you actually thought you were an expert and wanted to kill us. You aren’t fit to do so!”

“We have no enmity or grudges, why did you target us?”

“So young yet so evil and sinister, you actually wanted to torture us to death……”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were relentless as they were unsure if Han Fei Yu was only putting on an act and continued to be heavy handed, his face had swelled, tears and mucus could be seen streaming down mixed with blood from his nose and mouth, his head was simply swollen to the extent that it resembled a pig’s head.

Although Han Fei Yu continued to shriek from the unbearable

pain, his eyes still hatefully glared at the two people.

“This young kid seems to be really venomous, i think we really should consider getting rid of him.”

“He targeted us first but currently shows such a vengeful visage, if we don’t get rid of him it could be disastrous in the future.”

Hearing the discussion between the two, Han Fei Yu was finally spooked as he loudly shouted: “Don’t kill me!” He seemed to also be speaking to the surrounding people as he shouted very loudly. Thereafter, he softly said: “The two of you better not kill me, my granduncle is a Ling Xu sanctuary elder. If you kill me, you two won’t be able to go on living either……”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo frowned as they realised that matters had gotten rather complicated.

“The enmity has already been formed, since we already can’t get rid of it……”

Han Fei Yu was once again spooked and hurriedly said: “Don’t kill me! This small matter isn’t much at all! I won’t find trouble for the two of you in future……”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo exchanged glances and knew that killing him under the current circumstances certainly was not a good idea. They would have to face the wrath of an elder and they would surely perish.

Finally, Ye Fan brought him beside the pond and held his legs as he prepared to throw him in.

“You two!” Han Fei Yu’s eyes spat out fire, if the two of them really shoved him headlong, that would be so humiliating that he would not know how to hold his head up high anymore within the Ling Xu sanctuary.

“Shuaaa”

“Shuaaa”

Light flashed as two mystical rainbows could be seen streaking across the sky from the nearby stone cliff and landing by the side of the pond. The people in the area started to back off as they knew these were clearly experts. Riding on mystical rainbows to travel meant that one’s divine spring within their sea of bitterness was already gushing, this was a clear indication that one had connected with their wheel of life and released their spring of divine energy.

“Senior brother Li Fei, senior sister Wang Jing……” Seeing these two people descend, Han Fei Yu immediately shouted: “Are the two of you in charge of patrolling today? Hurry and arrest the two of them, they wanted to kill me.”

This male and female pair seemed to be around twenty seven to twenty eight years old, the male was graceful, the female seemed otherworldly, although they could not be considered to be handsome or beautiful, they exuded an air of a Dao practitioner.

Li Fei indifferently looked at him as he said: “The incident earlier was seen entirely by us, you were the initial instigator and the fault does not lie with the two of them.”

“You!” Han Fei Yu was angry and shocked but he did not dare to fall out with the two people.

Wang Jing stepped forward and said to Ye Fan: “Although he was in the wrong, he has already suffered enough. I think it’s better to just let him go.”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo had no intention of letting Han Fei Yu go but had to give face to the two seniors, thus they flung Han Fei Yu to the side of the pond.

Han Fei Yu stood up, his eyes ablaze as he stared hatefully at Ye Fan and Pang Bo then swept his gaze which was filled with resentment at Li Fei and Wang Jing before giving a cold snort and turned to leave.

Li Fei halted him from behind and said: “Junior brother Han, I advise you to stop your reckless behaviour. Pang Bo has officially been recognised by elder Wu Qing Feng as a celestial sprout, if you continue to act impulsively i fear even your granduncle won’t be able to protect you.”

“What?!” Han Fei Yu turned back and had an expression of shock: “He…… he is a celestial sprout?!”

“That’s right, he has been confirmed to be a celestial sprout.”

A normal disciple would not know what being a celestial sprout meant, but with Han Fei Yu’s status as the grandson of an elder, how could he not understand. Any immortal sanctuary would treat a celestial sprout as a precious treasure and look after it, this was because the celestial sprout would be a strong presence which the immortal sanctuary depended on in the future.

Under normal circumstances, using all resources to constantly search for a celestial sprout for ten years would seldom yield any results. It could be imagined how rare such a physique that was suitable for cultivating was and once found, the person would immediately be treated as a future successor and nurtured. The number of celestial sprouts currently within the Ling Xu sanctuary definitely did not exceed the number of fingers on one hand.

“How could this be……” Han Fei Yu had a look of disbelief as he said: “If he really is a celestial sprout, why would he need to come before the Ling Xu cliff to learn mystical arts?”

“That is because elder Wu Qing Feng did not want him to consider himself special and above the rest. In reality, elder Wu Qing Feng had already spent the past few months personally teaching him and already passed on the <Dao Scripture> to him.” Wang Jing replied.

When he heard that elder Wu Qing Feng personally passed on the <Dao Scripture>, Han Fei Yu’s face turned green as he knew that

there was no question that Pang Bo was a celestial sprout.

Li Fei continued: “Elder Wu Qing Feng has always been paying close attention to them and personally witnessed the events that occurred earlier. He thus felt that there was a need to officially declare that Pang Bo is a celestial sprout so that in future you will not continue your reckless ways.”

Han Fei Yu’s expression was extremely dark and with a flick of his sleeves he turned and left.

Pang Bo was in a daze and only when Han Fei Yu left did he come to his senses. He had a weird expression as he asked Li Fei and Wang Jing: “Does this mean that in the future I won’t need to be concerned about him?

Wang Jing thought that Pang Bo was feeling consternation and fear as she consoled: “Don’t worry, let’s say that he isn’t the grandson of an elder, even if he is the offspring of our sect leader he would not dare to touch you.”

“Then I can certainly rest easy…….” Having said this, he hurried forward with big steps. It was clear that he did not feel fear or consternation and clearly wanted to continue beating up Han Fei Yu.

Li Fei and Wang Jing were stunned and were left speechless.

Han Fei Yu’s face was scrunched up and he felt as though he had

eaten a dead child, bottling up all his anger as he speedily squeezed through the crowd and disappeared.

# Chapter 45: Hundred Plants Extract

Ye Fan and Pang Bo had thoroughly suppressed Han Fei Yu, everyone was simply astounded. As the crowd saw it, these two youths of barely eleven or twelve were simply too ferocious and clearly had not cultivated their spring of divine energy yet managed to beat the grandson of an elder silly, almost to the point of maiming him. This simply made the crowd wide eyed and speechless.

“These two people are simply too ferocious!”

“They are barely eleven or twelve, how could they have such divine strength?”

“Confronting the enemy with their bare hands and suppressing Han Fei Yu with their strength, even knocking aside the green wooden symbol that elder Han had bestowed upon his grandson, this is simply inconceivable!”

The people in the area began to discuss fervently.

At this moment, even the disciples who had been in the Ling Xu sanctuary for a longer time and cultivated to a higher level had noticed that something was going on and found out that elder Han’s grandson was brutally beaten up by Pang Bo and Ye Fan, this resulted in a huge uproar.

“The two youths look so delicate and graceful, how could they be so fearless? It’s true that one shouldn’t judge a book by its

cover……”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo had been trying to remain low-key but were now the focus of everyone. As the disciples at the other stone cliffs heard of the events that transpired they also rushed over to see the two ferocious people.

“What? That Pang Bo is actually a celestial sprout?”

Eventually the news spread and everyone who learned of the news had expressions of shock. The disciples who had been in Ling Xu sanctuary for a period of time all understood what a celestial sprout meant, this was the future hope of Ling Xu sanctuary and would be nurtured as a successor. This was a personage who could possibly lead the sect into glory and fame.

“So he’s actually a celestial sprout, it’s no wonder he had such fearlessness, his morality and conduct are also different from others”

“It seems like Han Fei Yu has kicked a steel wall this time, he can’t even take revenge in the future, I wonder how he’s going to take this lying down……”

At this moment, the people in the area were looking at Pang Bo with complicated expressions, their hearts were filled with an indescribable feeling and many people had decided that they were going to try to befriend him.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo did not idle around and were indifferent to the gazes of the crowd as they picked the thirty over bottles of hundred plants extract that were littered on the floor. The few youths that had picked a fight with Ye Fan and Pang Bo were still in the mud and all the jade bottles that they had stolen were now in their possession.

Disciples that had just joined the sanctuary would only be entitled to one jade bottle of hundred plants extract, it could be imagined how valuable it was and the two of them had suddenly obtained more than thirty bottles, even the people in the area were seeing red.

“Those few youths had managed to cultivate divine symbols, they should possess even better things……”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were not satisfied as their gazes went to the youths that were currently in the mud and sludge. These people had all cultivated wisps of divine energy and had nurtured a divine symbol from within their sea of bitterness. They were certainly of higher status than normal disciples and would definitely be more “wealthy” than them.

The two people exchanged glances and as though they were plucking onions out of the soil, they started to lift the five youths out of the sludge and began to thoroughly search their bodies.

“Why do each of these people only have a few bottles of hundred plants extract on their bodies……”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo did a thorough inspection of each person's body and found that each youth only had five bottles of hundred plants extract and they had obtained less than what they had gotten earlier. The two people had unsatisfied expressions on their faces and this made the people in the surroundings feel speechless.

Today was the day for giving out hundred plants extract and based on the different levels of cultivation the amount of hundred plants extract given out would differ. These youths that were able to obtain five bottles were already considered decent.

Li Fei and Wang Jing had not left and seeing all this occur in front of their eyes, they looked at each other and simply did not know what to say. They had never encountered this kind of junior brothers before.

Currently, the few youths were piled on the ground like a heap of mud and simply did not have the energy to get up. Ye Fan and Pang Bo were already done searching the bodies and shared a look before nonchalantly tossing the few into the pond again. This time, they were not shoved headlong for fear that if the youths did not manage to get out in time a life might actually be taken. Thereafter, the first group of youths that were shoved headlong in the pond were pulled out and tossed into the muddy waters.

Finally, Ye Fan and Pang Bo came before the previous green wooden symbol artifact and tried to push it but discovered that it was simply too heavy and even if they could lift it, it would simply be impossible to wield. With this thought in mind, they trampled on the youths again before flicking their sleeves and leaving.

The crowd were stunned, the two people were simply like locusts as they went around under the gaze of everyone, unflustered as they thoroughly searched each person and even tried to take the green wooden symbol away……

“Senior brother Li Fei and senior sister Wang Jing, many thanks!” Ye Fan and Pang Bo squeezed past the crowd and shouted from the distance before hurriedly running off.

Han Fei Yu’s face was still green and his heart was burning, he had not bothered to retrieve the green wooden symbol and headed straight for a valley within the depths of the Ling Xu sanctuary.

It was very vast within the valley and medicinal plant farms could be seen everywhere, filled with many unique plants, the medicinal scent assailed the senses and spiritual qi was dense in the air.

Along the way there were a few pharmacy children that paid their respects to Han Fei Yu but he ignored them and with a gloomy face he headed to a deep part of the valley and stood before a cave dwelling. The medicinal scent here was even more pronounced and before the cave dwelling were eighteen medicinal pots that were orderly placed. It was unknown what metal was used to forge the pots but it could be seen to be simple and unadorned yet weighty.

“Yu-er, how did you manage to end up like this?” Within the cave dwelling an aged voice could be heard, no one walked out but it felt as though the person inside could clearly know everything that was going on outside.

“Amongst the two people, one of them is actually a celestial sprout……” Han Fei Yu stood outside the cave dwelling as he grit his teeth and described the events that transpired.

“If we had known earlier that these two people had eaten divine medicine, we would have only required the two of them to let out some of their fresh blood. It’s a pity that I found out too late and the situation has become problematic.” Having said this, elder Han silently contemplated within the cave for a long time before speaking again: “That celestial sprout…… do not provoke him, as for the other, let’s wait and see first.”

“What granduncle’s meaning is……” Han Fei Yu’s eyes were filled with a vicious light.

“What I mean is, right now you shouldn’t do anything and focus on cultivating.” Having said this the cave was silent and no other sound could be heard.

“Yes!” Hand Fei Yu was indignant but did not dare to disobey elder Han, he bowed before the cave dwelling, turned and left.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo returned to their dwelling as the two began to look through their spoils of war. They had gathered a total of sixty six bottles of hundred plants extract and this could be considered an astronomical sum of wealth.

“The person surnamed Han is really such a good person…….” The two people praised.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were done dealing with the little jade bottles and slowly calmed down. Although they had beaten Han Fei Yu and his cronies, they felt a strong sense of danger. Using only their bodies that had elephant-like strength, they could be considered super humans by normal folk. However, when faced with cultivators who had divine energy and could utilise mystical arts, they lacked versatility and it was difficult to overcome the enemy.

It was clear that they had to focus on training, establishing their sea of bitterness and connecting with their wheel of life to enable the divine spring to gurgle forth. Only when there was sufficient energy within their spring of divine life would they be truly strong. That was the foundation of a cultivator.

Being filled with this sense of danger, the two people felt a pressing need to become stronger and were even more motivated to focus on cultivation. In the two days that followed, Pang Bo continuously drank six bottles of hundred plants extract and combined with the mystical art of cultivation recorded within the Dao Scripture, his sea of bitterness had finally doubled in size. However, upon drinking the seventh bottle of hundred plants extract, he felt that something was amiss as the qi essence within his sea of bitterness was haphazardly moving around and it felt as though a myriad of pins were pricking him.

“Shit! The elder that taught the mystical arts mentioned that there would be no good outcomes from being too greedy. Disciples that had just entered would not be able to bear too much hundred plants extract and this was why every three months only one bottle was given. There was indeed a reason for this……” Pang Bo’s head was full of sweat as he bitterly endured.

“I’ll go find someone.” Ye Fan wanted to push open the door to look for help.

“No need, I can barely grit my teeth through this.” Pang Bo insisted on not finding anyone and after bitterly holding on for half a day, the pain finally gradually dissipated and he bitterly laughed: “It seems that food should really be eaten mouthful by mouthful and the road should only be trodden one step at a time. A normal disciple would only be able to endure one bottle every three months, being a celestial sprout I actually drank six to seven bottles within two days, this is already defying the heavens.”

Having said this, Pang Bo had a curious expression as he said: “You’ve already drank six to seven bottles, how come you don’t have any feelings of pain but rather your qi essence seems like it’s becoming more and more full. What’s going on? Are there any fluctuations within your sea of bitterness?”

Ye Fan shook his head, his wheel of life and sea of bitterness were still absolutely silent with no fluctuations. The only good thing about cultivating the Dao Scripture was that it enabled his qi essence to become more and more abundant.

“You’ve drank six to seven bottles yet nothing peculiar is happening, it seems that you are far from your limit. Ye Fan, you should continue to increase the amount you intake. Who knows, maybe there’ll be some miraculous effects.”

“How could I do that, with my physique, no matter how much

hundred plants extract I drink would be a waste. Rather than wasting it, I'd rather leave it for you to breakthrough and cultivate to a higher level allowing your divine spring to gurgle forth."

"Just relax, since they've already proclaimed that I'm a celestial sprout it's clear that I'll be able to obtain this hundred plants extract easily. Didn't elder Wu Qing Feng once say that our mental state is very important and even though he knew that I had a lot of potential he did not want me to have any feelings of superiority and sent us to the Ling Xu stone cliff to learn mystical arts. The reason we are going through all this is clearly to forge my will, I imagine that in the future all this will change and there definitely will not be a lack of hundred plants extract."

What Pang Bo said made a lot of sense and Ye Fan did not reject any further as they had no need to be courteous with each other. He finally began to drink large quantities of the hundred plants extract.

One bottle, two bottles, three bottles……

Ye Fan steadily executed the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture, currently he did not feel anything special but there was a miraculous change that was gradually occurring within his body……

# Chapter 46: Golden Sea Of Bitterness

Within this day, Ye Fan drank thirteen bottles of the hundred plants extract. In addition to the seven bottles that had been drunk in the last two days, the amount he had drank reached twenty bottles. Besides the qi essence within his meridians surging and flaring up, he still did not feel any discomfort.

Seeing the way he drank, Pang Bo also felt scared as he said: “Let’s temporarily stop first, my heart is currently jumping all over the place and my eyes are constantly twitching. I’m afraid that you might suddenly explode with a “Bang!” and I’ll never be able to see you again……”

“Don’t be a jinx! What nonsense are you talking about……” Ye Fan scrutinised the situation of his sea of bitterness and said: “I seem to be feeling something special.”

“What? Could it be that it was actually effective?” Pang Bo had an expression of glee as he said: “I’ll find venerated elder Wu Qing Feng to help guide you.”

Ye Fan stopped him and said: “Don’t go, I want to slowly progress by myself.”

Elder Wu Qing Feng had mentioned before that with Ye Fan’s physique, he could only rely on himself and outsiders had no way to help guide him. Elder Wu Qing Feng said that if the wheel of life within normal people was soil, Ye Fan’s wheel of life would be divine metal. After planting seeds into soil, with care and proper

nourishment the seed would germinate and fill with life. As for divine metal, no matter how much care and nourishment you give it would still be difficult for that seed to grow. Under such circumstances, only when the divine metal had changes that came from within would there be a sliver of chance at creating life. No matter how fantastic the external conditions were this was something that could not be changed.

Ye Fan's emotions were stirred as he had a unique feeling within his body. His physique was known as the divine body since ancient times and although it was currently considered a crippled body , his heart was unreconciled and with the unique feeling he currently experienced he naturally felt excitement.

At this moment, Pang Bo's eyes were wide as he stared at Ye Fan drinking the hundred plants extract like water, downing one bottle after another. His heart was simply stuck in his throat*.

[T/N* Idiom: flabbergasted]

"I think..... we should be more careful, look at the way you're going! I'm seriously getting frightened. Let's save the remainder for tomorrow okay? I'm really spooked right now....." As Pang Bo said these words there was already a heap of empty jade bottles on the floor and Ye Fan had already drank forty bottles of hundred plants extract.

"Don't worry, I'm currently feeling wonderful and the surging of qi essence within my meridians has calmed down. The area where the wheel of life is situated is actually vibrating intensely!"

Once Ye Fan was done speaking he continued to drink the hundred plants extract and finally finished all the bottles. Besides the seven that were drunk by Pang Bo the remaining fifty nine bottles were all drunk by Ye Fan!

“How are you feeling?” Pang Bo asked nervously.

“I can finally feel the existence of the wheel of life and the spring of divine energy is actually gurgling……” Ye Fan kept quiet thereafter and started to execute the mystical arts recorded within the to assail the sea of bitterness.

By the side, Pang Bo was stunned as he muttered: “The spring of divine energy within the wheel of life gurgling…… why is it I have not experienced such a feeling before?”

The thatched cottage became deathly silent and Ye Fan was like a stone statue as he quietly sat there with Pang Bo nervously waiting by the side.

After a long period of time, the thatched cottage was suddenly filled with bright dazzling light and the sound of a tsunami burst out. From within Ye Fan’s sea of bitterness innumerable amounts of divine splendour spewed forth, bright and resplendent, accompanied by lighting flashing and thunder roaring.

Pang Bo was wide eyed and speechless as he dazedly stared at the scene before him.

From within Ye Fan's sea of bitterness, thousands of rays of divine light shone forth, brilliant like the rainbow. There were actually golden waves surging violently and this was accompanied by flashing lightning and roaring thunder, there was a violent tsunami and the waves reached the heavens!

Such a phenomenal scene occurring within the sea of bitterness was simply unheard of and Pang Bo was shocked to the extreme. He felt that the scene before him was simply too unbelievable as he muttered: "What is going on here……"

The thatched hut was filled with the deafening sounds of the howling sea, as though a magnificent army of thousands of man and horses were surging forward. Pang Bo forcefully slapped himself to ensure that he was not in a dream.

"Tsunamis that reach the sky with a thunderous sound and a great number of raging waves ……" Pang Bo felt his mouth and tongue going dry*, this was like a dream as the rumbling waves sounded like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses that was surging forward. At this moment, they did not seem to be in the thatched hut but instead they appeared to have arrived at the coast of the sea and were currently facing the undulating vast expanse of the sea.

[Idiom*: to talk too much]

Ye Fan was absolutely silent as he sat there motionlessly, his sea of bitterness was releasing a divine glow that was dazzling to the

eye and the sound of waves was unending, golden lights flashed, thunder and lightning were striking down and there were dreadful foamy billows.

"That vast body of water that is golden in colour..... could it really be his sea of bitterness? Why does its splendour diffuse out such that even outsiders can see it?" Pang Bo was still shocked as he stared at Ye Fan. His sea of bitterness was glowing and glittering, waves were unceasingly surging.

He was sure that the sounds of the howling ocean originated from Ye Fan's sea of bitterness. This was simply astonishing and the sea of bitterness which was supposed to be hidden within the body actually made endless noises that were akin to an actual sea.

Pang Bo stood there like a stone statue, the rumbling sounds came from in front of him,and the golden waves seemed as though they could rush out at any time, giving one immense pressure.

"Why is it golden in colour?" After the initial shock from the sounds of the howling sea had passed, Pang Bo gradually calmed down.

If that golden body of water was Ye Fan's sea of bitterness, that would simply be too extraordinary, Pang Bo was feeling floored. He could already view the sea of bitterness within his own body, it was black like ink and had a lifeless atmosphere. Elder Wu Qing Feng had mentioned that without connecting to the wheel of life within the sea of bitterness, the essence of life could only linger above the sea of bitterness. As for the sea of bitterness, it would be deathly still and silent without a single fluctuation of life, and the colour

would appear to be a dark deep green or pitch-black.

Contrary to expectations, Ye Fan's sea of bitterness was simply too inexplicably different from their understanding and absolutely did not fit into elder Wu Qing Feng's description.

"Kaboom!"

Above the roiling golden sea of bitterness, lightning and thunder abounded and combined with howling sea, making the entire area seem to be blazing, sea and sky were connected and resplendent golden rays could be seen everywhere, dazzling and spectacular.

Pang Bo nervously watched filled with the fear that something might go wrong. Throughout this process, Ye Fan did not seem to be aware as he sat there in absolute silence continuing to execute the mystical arts recorded within the .

Several hours passed, the golden light finally rescinded and the sound of the howling sea was gradually growing softer. Another hour passed and the thatched cottage was finally silent, Ye Fan's sea of bitterness had regained its former calm, the brilliance was stored within and the sound of waves had vanished.

Not long after, Ye Fan opened his eyes and there seemed to be divine light deep within his eyes. When he stood up, he seemed more agile and had an aura of a Dao practitioner.

"What exactly happened earlier? How do you feel now?" Pang Bo

impatiently asked.

"Earlier I finally managed to feel the wheel of life and saw the gurgling spring of divine energy. Thereafter I assailed the sea of bitterness and actually saw a golden body of water. Even now I'm not sure if that was just an illusion."

Hearing Ye Fan's description, Pang Bo was shocked with his mouth wide open as he nodded vigorously: "It isn't an illusion, because..... I also saw it."

"You also saw it?" Ye Fan had an expression of surprise.

"That's right, earlier you have no idea how loud the noise in this area was, the sound of the howling sea, thousands of divine light brilliant and resplendent, the entire thatched cottage was trembling. It's fortunate that the area we live in is rather isolated, otherwise, it would certainly have caused a ruckus.

Ye Fan carefully listen to Pang Bo's description of the events and finally believed that the golden body of water and howling sea he saw were not an illusion.

Pang Bo asked in concern: "How do you feel? I saw that in the end the golden sea of bitterness disappeared. Could it be that you failed?"

"I'm not sure if it can be considered a success....." Having said this, Ye Fan once again executed the mystical arts recorded within

the , a miniscule little dot of golden light was emitted from the area where his sea of bitterness was location, about as large as a sesame seed but dazzling to the eye.

"Although the sea of bitterness seems to be rather small, there's no problem. As long as you continue to cultivate surely it will gradually grow bigger." Pang Bo excitedly continued: "I'm absolutely sure that your sea of bitterness is exceptional, it is actually golden in colour totally different from the average person. The golden lights that are released can actually be diffused outwards……"

Although only a "sea the size of a dot" had been cultivated, Ye Fan was ecstatic, he had finally gotten through the initial barrier and established a sea of bitterness that belonged to him.

"Why do I feel that your sesame-sized sea of bitterness seems to have bits of divine energy fluctuating within, could it be concentrated essence?……" Pang Bo had a puzzled expression.

# Chapter 47: Challenging

A cultivators sea of bitterness was as the name suggested, deathly silent and filled with a lifeless atmosphere without any form of life fluctuations. Contrary to this, at the centre of Ye Fan's sea of bitterness, the dot of golden light was dazzling and resplendent, like the rising morning sun filled with vigor and life.

It was as Pang Bo described, the dot of gold that was the sea of bitterness did indeed have fluctuations of divine energy. Although it was very weak, it clearly was extraordinary as compared to other people's sea of bitterness, it could be considered miraculous and splendid like the quintessence of nature, simply exceptional.

"Could it be that you've already connected with your wheel of life?" Based on Pang Bo's speculations, it could be that Ye Fan had already established a path linking to the wheel of life within the depths of his sea of bitterness resulting in the divine spring to gurgle forth creating such a miraculous result.

"I haven't establish any channels and the divine spring of life has not gurgled forth." Ye Fan shook his head refuting his speculation. He was sure that this was his sea of bitterness and not the result of the divine spring from the wheel of life.

Pang Bo sighed: "This is simply too mystifying, an ancient divine physique certainly is far from ordinary, totally different from that of a normal person. Could it be that a golden sea of bitterness is something exclusive to people with such unique physiques?"

“I’ve only established the sea of bitterness, it’s unknown if I can continue cultivating.” Ye Fan did not let his joy overcome his rationality.

Thereafter he began to inspect himself internally to see the situation of his sea of bitterness. The sea of bitterness was the size of a sesame seed, the surroundings were like an area void of life, shrouded in darkness and absolutely silent. The glow from the sea of bitterness was resplendent in the darkness and the dot of light was like a moon in the sky. This made Ye Fan feel endless hope that one day he might actually be able to establish a vast golden sea of bitterness, thoroughly ridding the area of darkness and the aura of death, leaving the deathly silence behind and filling it with life and vigor.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo probed for a long time and came to the conclusion that Ye Fan’s physique was simply too unique and was like a bottomless pit that required large quantities of hundred plants extract to establish the sea of bitterness. Different from normal people, he was not afraid that the excessive medicine might be too strong that his sea of bitterness would overflow, rather, his sea of bitterness was like an abyss that had no way to be completely filled.

Reaching this conclusion, the two people felt stiff. Other disciples that just entered would only use one bottle of hundred plants extract every three months, four in a year. In order to establish a sea of bitterness the size of a sesame seed, Ye Fan had used fifty nine bottles of hundred plants extract, this was an amount that others could use for well over ten years. This was simply terrifying!

Based on what elder Wu Qing Feng said, the road of cultivation got harder as one progressed. In the later stages every step forward would be ten times the difficulty as compared to the early stages.

Ye Fan was in a daze as he considered this problem, this reasoning certainly would apply to the usage of hundred plants extract as well. It was just the beginning and he already required tens of bottles, it was difficult to imagine the insane amount of extract he would require when he actually managed to obtain a small success.

“Don’t worry, I’m sure that there will be a solution.” Having said this, Pang Bo seemed to recall something as both his eyes seemed to light up: “You can let elder Wu Qing Feng know that you can actually cultivate and if the divine physique from ancient times can even cultivate a small success, this would certainly cause a huge uproar within Yan state and shock all of eastern badlands. That would simply be amazing! I think that the Ling Xu sanctuary elders would be astonished upon hearing this news and use all their resources to nurture you.”

Ye Fan earnestly and carefully pondered before finally shaking his head and said: “We can’t let them know.”

“Why?” Pang Bo was confused.

“The first reason is that Ling Xu sanctuary has no power within the eastern badlands. Once the news leaks out, I’ll surely be a dead man. The second reason is that I suspect that although the golden sea of bitterness is miraculous, it is quite likely that I won’t be able to continue cultivating and it is quite likely that my body is still

considered a crippled one.”

Pang Bo carefully thought through and also felt that the first reason was certainly a valid one. They certainly could not afford for this information to be leaked otherwise it would certainly be disastrous.

“With regards to the second reason, I think you’re just thinking too much.”

Ye Fan shook his head and said: “I now know why the divine physique from ancient times would occasionally appear but it would be difficult for the person to achieve any success in cultivation. Just the expense alone would not be something that a normal sect could endure. The early stages are still alright but the path of immortals is long and every step forward would require ten times the expense. Walking down the path and continually increasing ten times per level, let’s not even talk about cultivating to the late stages, even if I were to barely reach the middle stages, the amount required to continue cultivating would be an astronomical number. I’m afraid that even those sacred grounds that have existed since ancient times or those ancient aristocratic families would feel the strain. It could be said that the gains of such an expense would not make up for the losses, the amount of resources used could have resulted in the nurturing of many talented disciples.”

“Could this be the real reason why there is no way to cultivate with the divine physique from ancient times, resulting in it being considered a crippled body?” Pang Bo had an expression of astonishment.

Ye Fan contemplated for a while and said: “This reasoning is only based on the findings during the early stages of cultivation. I’m sure that there are certainly a myriad of other reasons. Otherwise, those sacred grounds and ancient aristocratic families would not have given up easily. It’s very likely that there is an even more stringent requirement or certain difficulties involved.”

“How could it be like this……” Pang Bo was in a stupor as he felt that Ye Fan’s future seemed bleak, his path of cultivation seemed to be wrought with difficulty.

However, Ye Fan did not have any expression of dismay as he said: “The divine physique from ancient times, if it was that easy to cultivate then it would lose all meaning. The more difficult the road ahead the more exceptional it is. Going against the waves, scaling a tall cliff, forcefully overcoming an abyss, regardless I’ll continue walking forward and who knows one day I may actually reach the pinnacle.”

In the next new days, Ye fan and Pang Bo continued to bitterly cultivate as they toiled to raise their cultivation levels.

During this period, elder Wu Qing Feng had summoned Pang Bo to a back mountain within the Ling Xu sanctuary and officially declared him as a celestial sprout. He then encouraged him to persevere in his cultivation to allow the divine spring within the sea of bitterness within him to gurgle forth. At that point, they would take him as an inner disciple.

Upon being officially recognised as a celestial sprout, Pang Bo could receive eight bottles of hundred plants extract every month. Compared to previously where he could only obtain four a year, there was a big shift in treatment. As his cultivation continued to improve, the quantities would increase as well, fulfilling any requirements he faced. He would never need to fret that there would be a lack of hundred plants extract.

At the back mountain of the Ling Xu sanctuary, Pang Bo earnestly sought help from elder Wu Qing Feng regarding many questions and his aim was actually to understand some doubts with regards to Ye Fan's golden sea of bitterness.

Elder Wu Qing Feng talking about many secrets regarding the sea of bitterness. Within the world, there were actually many frightful talents that established their sea of bitterness with unique characteristics.

"What peculiarities did each of their sea of bitterness have?"

Elder Wu Qing Feng spoke of over ten different types of peculiarities but none of them had a golden sea of bitterness.

Finally, Pang Bo could bear it no longer as he straightforwardly asked: "When establishing the sea of bitterness, is it possible for the howling sounds of the sea to reach the heavens, with thousands of divine rays shining forth and the sea of bitterness to be a vast gold body of water?"

"Impossible!" Elder Wu Qing Feng shook his head but hesitated

before admitting: “Maybe the divine body from ancient times could cause such an astonishing scene but even then there shouldn’t be such a ruckus created.”

There had been rumours that recently a certain rare divine body has appeared within the eastern badlands and this was not an isolated incident. It is rumoured that they are currently in their growth phase and have been hidden by a sacred ground or ancient aristocratic family. Even elder Wu Qing Feng had heard this rumour several times.

“Those rare peerless talents have almost all been taken by those sacred grounds and ancient aristocratic families……” Elder Wu Qing Feng said with bitterness.

Pang Bo returned and shared all that he had learnt with Ye Fan before finally saying: “It seems that the golden sea of bitterness is indeed extraordinary, even those divine bodies that appeared within the eastern badlands when establishing their sea of bitterness would not have such a mystifying scene. I really hope that you are able to successfully cultivate and by that time you would be able to compete with those peerless talents nurtured by the sacred grounds or ancient aristocratic families.

Having listened, Ye Fan pondered for a long time before looking over at Pang Bo: “I think it’s time that I leave the Ling Xu sanctuary.”

“Why?” Pang Bo was shocked, he did not understand why Ye Fan suddenly made such a decision.

“The reason why I came to the Ling Xu sanctuary was to understand the ways of cultivating. This place is no longer suitable for me to continue cultivating and I need to go to other places to encounter some new opportunities.”

“No way, If you’re going I’m going as well.” Pang Bo vehemently rejected.

“You have already been declared as a celestial sprout, Ling Xu sanctuary will use all their resources to nurture you. There is simply no need for you to leave. As for me, with my current physique, continuing here in the Ling Xu sanctuary I would hardly make any progress.”

# *Chapter 48: The Scripture Not Belonging To This World*

"If there are any fortunes we will share them and any difficulties we will face them together. Since you want to leave, I will definitely follow." Pang Bo was very firm and staunch, making the decision to follow Ye Fan should he leave. There was no way that Ye Fan would agree, Pang Bo had already been declared as a celestial sprout, his future was bright and if he left like this, everything would come to naught. The future would be filled with uncertainty and accidents might even occur.

"There's another reason why I'm leaving, we pressured Han Fei Yu with such force thus embarrassing him……"

Pang Bo cut him off and said: "There's no need to be worried about him, I'm now a celestial sprout. I believe in that within the near future he won't dare to be reckless and once our strengths have grown there's even less reason to be afraid of him."

Ye Fan shook his head and said: "This matter isn't as simple as it seems on the surface. These past few days I've been scouring for information and I've found out that Han Fei Yu's granduncle is an expert at refining medicines. He is currently trying all ways to refine a panacea in order to increase his lifespan. In the past few years, Elder Han has been using all means at his disposal to look for the panacea, at times personally travelling deep into the mountains and swamps to look. This time round, a few days after he returned, Han Fei Yu targeted us, I think this matter clearly isn't that simple."

Hearing this Pang Bo nodded, he also felt that it was strange, they had no enmity or grudges with Han Fei Yu and should not have any altercations with him. They had never communicated with each other before the incident.

“You couldn’t possibly be guessing..... that his uncle has ill intentions towards us right?” Pang Bo was quick witted and immediately thought of many possibilities. The two of them had previously got lucky and eaten a divine fruit, unexpectedly returning to their youths. If elder Han knew of this matter, he would certainly have ill intentions towards them.

“I think that his life is nearing its end and he’s desperate to refine the “Yang Returning Pill”, it’s very likely that he has his eyes on us.” Ye Fan shared his speculations and said: “With your current status as a celestial sprout, he has no way to deal with you. As for me, if I continue to stay here, it would be likely that certain unforeseen circumstances may occur.”

“That old fart!” Pang Bo frowned as he no longer attempted to stop Ye Fan from leaving but insisted on accompanying him on his journey.

“If you wish to go together then I won’t leave.” Ye Fan was adamant in his speech and he did not wish to interfere with Pang Bo’s cultivation. Ling Xu sanctuary was clearly the best choice for Pang Bo right now.

Pang Bo understood Ye Fan and seeing him like this, he did not persuade any further and just silently sat there.

“Go get get the paper and ink, I’ll leave you the ancient scriptures for you.”

The fact that Ye Fan had obtained ancient scriptures from the bronze coffin was only shared with Pang Bo, Ye Fan previously recited the scriptures for Pang Bo however it was simply too profound and he had no way to understand. Even now Ye Fan still had not understood it and had been analyzing it for a long time without any progress.

“Those scriptures to me are akin to a bunch of illegible writing, leaving them for me is useless. In the Ling Xu sanctuary I’ll have no lack of mystical arts to learn from, you don’t have to do superfluous things.”

Ye Fan ignored him, grabbed the paper and brush and began to write. Upon writing, his soul suddenly resonated a voice that was clear as a bell. Hundreds of archaic words appear to trickle in and started to spread out while flowing within his innermost being. Immediately he felt a mysterious, pure and crisp feeling. Ye Fan’s brush moved about like a snake-like dragon as he brushed and painted in one go. In a short period, the paper had lines and lines of writings however at this moment something occurred.

When his brush stopped, all the words disappeared!

Once the brush within his hand stopped, the ancient words that were written down gradually faded and the paper became ash, as though there was a mysterious energy hidden within the strokes of the brush.

At the same time, the hundreds of words within Ye Fan slowly began to recede, as the sounds disappeared as well. By the side, Pang Bo was stupefied, this matter was simply too mysterious making one feel absolutely bewildered. After a long time he finally spoke: “I think..... you’d better not write anymore, that obscure writing is simply too bizarre.”

The several hundred ancient words had never been seen or heard before, even more ancient than bronze inscriptions. Initially Ye Fan also didn’t recognise the words but the presence of the divine sound helped assist in branding the hundreds of archaic words within his innermost being. He started to understand some of the meaning of these words.

Ye Fan was in deep thought as he recalled the words of elder Wu Qing Feng, back in the ancient times there was divine writing, every word contained an element of the Dao, it was filled with a mysterious power. Just by copying the words would result in some strange happenings. Some people speculated that when writing these words, one could communicate with the energies of heaven and earth, leading to a disruption in vital energies thus resulting in all the strange occurrences.

“Could it be, every stroke within these ancient characters has some sort of “influence”. During the process of writing the surrounding qi essence of heaven and earth would be disrupted resulting in the eventual disintegration of the paper.....” Ye Fan muttered.

Thereafter, he began to draw on the floor. As the strokes of his brush stopped, a sliver of electricity streaked past the ground and

all the words disappeared.

Pang Bo felt astonished as he said: “This obscure writing is simply too strange! Stop writing!”

“It’s not that the obscure writing is evil* , it’s the ancient words that are extraordinary. Every stroke has a type of “influence” which can affect the fluctuations of qi essence between heaven and earth. All the “influence” gathered together is sufficient to affect the surrounding energy within heaven and earth wiping away any trace of the ancient words.” Ye Fan made a deduction from what he had seen.

[T/N* note: The word used is demon or evil monster, used to describe an omnious phenomenon or thing]

This made the ancient scripture seem all the more mysterious, it was difficult to estimate the sort of person who could leave such a section of ancient writing. Several hundred of the ancient words were strung together however this ancient script could not be recorded down in any way, making it seem as though this ancient script was a mysterious script not meant to exist within this world.

Ye Fan did not persist any further, the ancient scripture was very abstract and even if he left it for Pang Bo it would be very difficult to comprehend.

In the end, Ye Fan still decided to leave and Pang Bo gloomily sent him off. He followed the cobblestone pavement, walking out of the depths of the celestial mountain and reached the exit of the

Ling Xu sanctuary. Upon stepping onto the limestone steps, the ancient scripture within Ye Fan's heart began to resound again. He turned to look at Pang Bo saying: "These hundred over limestone steps must have something exceptional beneath them, when you're free you should come here often……"

At this moment, Pang Bo's eyes were wide as he said: "Don't go."

Ye Fan felt that something was amiss and turned back to look. He saw a familiar figure suddenly dodge and disappear, it was one of the youths who they had thrown headlong into the pond.

"Han Fei Yu hasn't given up, he actually sent people to spy on us."

"Don't go first, you've already been seen leaving. They will surely kill you along the way."

Ye Fan nodded and the two of them turned to return. That youth could no longer be seen but on his return, Han Fei Yu could be seen rushing crazily in their direction with several people in tow.

Pang Bo's face was ashen, if they had not inadvertently discovered the youth trailing them and Ye Fan had just left like that, he would have definitely regret it for life. He immediately loudly scolded: "Han Fei Yu you bastard! Do you feel that because you have your granduncle supporting you from the shadows you can do whatever you want, kill whoever you want? If you really have the ability why don't you just come over and kill me!"

Hearing the anger in his voice, Han Fei Yu's face changed. If the elders or sect leader were mistaken and thought that he wanted to get rid of the Ling Xu sanctuary's celestial sprout, even his granduncle would not be able to protect his life.

"You better not talk nonsense, it's only a coincidence that I'm going by this area." Having said this, he led the few people onwards into the distance, cutting quite a sorry figure. His intent was indeed to go for Ye Fan, upon learning that Ye Fan was planning to leave he had immediately rushed out and planned to kill him along the way.

Pang Bo was enraged and grit his teeth as he said: "This kid is really vicious, he's been constantly spying on us and it seems like he's just waiting for the opportunity to get rid of you. I think it's better if you don't leave yet."

Ye Fan nodded, without sufficient strength he could not rashly leave otherwise his life might be in danger.

In the following month, everything was peaceful and Han Fei Yu no longer dared to send people to spy on Pang Bo and Ye Fan. He had seemingly withdrawn a lot in fear that Pang Bo would seek out the elders.

Pang Bo came back from visiting elder Wu Qing Feng and he looked crestfallen.

"What's the matter?" Ye Fan asked.

“It may be good news to you but to me it’s not.” Pang Bo sighed before continuing: “I also feel that if you remain within the Ling Xu sanctuary there’ll certainly be danger lurking. I just went to seek elder Wu Qing Feng to help send you off……”

“This is indeed a good piece of news.” Ye Fan laughed: “It’s not like we’re parting forever, don’t need to get so upset. In the future we’ll surely see each other sooner or later. By that time hopefully you would have already be able to rebuke heaven and earth* and be known as Pang of the martial fraternity, famous throughout the eastern badlands, letting those so called sacred ground and ancient aristocratic families feel fear.

[T/N* Idiom: All-powerful]

Pang Bo simply could not bear parting ways with Ye Fan but he had no other choice as he said: “You have to wait for a few days. Within the next few days, elder Wu Qing Feng will select a few talented disciples and bring them outside the Ling Xu sanctuary to the primitive ruins to gain experience.

Countless years ago, the area where Ling Xu sanctuary was currently situated was a ruin. Only after people came and did a make over of the place did it become an immortal sanctuary. It could be said that the Ling Xu sanctuary’s history was deep and if one were to follow it, this piece of ancient land could certainly be traced back to the ancient times.

The primitive ruins covered a huge area, extending almost endlessly into the distance. The Ling Xu sanctuary was but a small portion of the area and there was a much larger area that had not

been tidied. On this piece of ruin, ancient trees covered the sky and various rare animals and birds could often be seen. There was also a variety of rare medicinal plants and each year the Ling Xu sanctuary elder would bring disciples to gain experience. This was not only a form of tempering them, but also enable them to improve their knowledge.

The ruins with ancient trees scatter about was not some pure land. Within the ruins dwelled many brutal beasts and vicious animals. Although there were elders accompanying them, every year blood will be spilled.

“It’s rumoured that inside there are many rare and valuable medicinal plants as well as even rarer panaceas. If one was able to have the fortune of picking one, he could immediately exchange it with the accompanying elder for medicinal pills.” Pang Bo turned to look at Ye Fan and continued: “Right now you urgently need large amounts of hundred plants extract, if you manage to make gains in that place you can possibly meet your current needs.”

# Chapter 49: Good And Bad Entwined

This was indeed a good piece of news for Ye Fan. If he could pick some panaceas or kill some rare birds or animals, he could solve his current pressing need for hundred plants extract. His golden sea of bitterness that was the size of a seed was like a lake that had almost dried up, it would require large amounts of qi essence to supplement it, allowing it to grow and finally result in a vast golden body of water to appear.

“This time elder Wu Qing Feng will be personally leading the group, you don’t have to worry about that dastardly elder Han doing any mischief.”

The matter was decided upon and Ye Fan and Pang Bo would both participate.

Two days later, Wu Qing Feng and another elder brought hundreds of disciples to leave the Ling Xu sanctuary to head towards a neighbouring area of the ruins.

In that area ancient trees covered the sky, a scene that seemed primitive, even from far away one could hear the earth shattering roars of wild beasts and occasionally feel a bitter killing aura being transmitted.

“Let me remind all of you one more time, precaution is key. Don’t look down on this expedition as your lives are on the line……” elder Wu Qing Feng spoke about many of the areas that attention was required and finally reminded: “In the past, for the

sake of picking some rare spiritual grass some disciples disregarded danger and entered into the depths of the ruins, thereafter they ran into some ferocious wild beast and lost their lives. The deeper you go, the more fearsome the birds and animals you meet. There are many species that can be traced back to ancient times and even us Ling Xu sanctuary elders have no way to deal with them. Therefore I'd like to emphasize to not go too deep!"

The two elders brought the hundred odd disciples and soon reached that piece of ruin. The air here was filled with spiritual qi which was comparable to Ling Xu sanctuary. Having just reached this area, some people had already spotted spiritual grass.

"If the medicinal plants are too young don't pick them……" Elder Li reminded.

The ancient trees here were enormous and even if several people were to link hands they would be unable to encompass it. The old vines hanging down were as thick as a normal man's thigh and rather than calling it a ruin one could say it was more like a primitive forest.

"A gigantic python!"

They had only just entered the forest when someone suddenly shouted, he had discovered a multicoloured python that was as thick as a bucket.

"Chi!"

That huge python whose body was covered in multicoloured spots spit out a mist which enveloped the disciple that had shouted and immediately a shrill cry could be heard.

The other disciples felt their hair stand on end as they hastily retreated. The mist slowly dissipated and snow white bone could be seen on the ground together with a strange yellow liquid substance, the surrounding vegetation had all withered as well.

Elder Wu Qing Feng hurriedly walked forward and frowned: “How can there be a Venomous Serpent just on the outer edges of the ruins, something seems to be amiss.”

At this point elder Li walked forward and said: “This huge python is known as ‘Venomous Serpent’, it contains a highly toxic poison. All of you have to be careful, do not let the poison mist it spits forth come in contact with you, otherwise the poison will act immediately and you will perish.” Elder Li then reminded: “Its gall bladder is good material for refining medicine, those disciples with strength can go forth and subdue it.”

They had just arrived at the edges of the ruin and already met with such a venomous python, it was simply unimaginable what other fearsome wild beasts lurked within. It had already killed one disciple and the hearts of everyone felt chills as they all became more attentive of their surroundings.

“I’ll go forth and get that gall bladder!” A female appearing to be sixteen or seventeen walked out of the ground and moved forward, from her sea of bitterness came a green light that flowed to her arms and shot forth from her fingertips. The green light was like a

sword as it chopped towards the Venomous Serpent with a “Chi!”, rending it in two.

That young girl carefully retrieved a gall bladder the size of a fist out and immediately exchanged it for a bottle of hundred plants extract from elder Li. The morale of the other disciples were immediately boosted as almost all of them had the ability to kill the venomous python and if they could control the fear in their hearts and use their abilities properly, they would be able to have a big harvest in the ruins.

“Don’t be frightened but remember to stay cautious, as we continue forward there will be more blood being spilled and possibly even some deaths, this is something that you people have to experience. The flowers and grass within the greenhouse will also one day have to meet with the cruelties of reality otherwise it will never be able to truly grow.”

Although the two elders worded it like this, they had frowns on their faces. They had only reached the edges of the ruin and a disciple had already died, this did not seem like a good omen.

At this moment, the other disciples began to move and it only took a while before someone had dug out a ten year old “Dragon Tongue Grass” and another disciple had found a “Green Dragon Vine”.

Suddenly, from within the depths of the ruin a shrill bird cry could be heard, it sounded metallic in nature as it pierced through the skies, making everyone’s eardrums extremely painful from the buzz. At present, everyone had expressions of shock as they

stopped what they were doing and looked towards the direction of the sound. A golden flash of lightning streaked across the sky and sped towards a mountain peak.

"What is that thing?!"

Everyone was shocked, that golden flash of lightning was simply too fast and nobody could see it clearly, only a blazing golden flash could be seen.

Elder Wu Qing Feng had a serious expression as he said: "That's a Lightning Bird, as swift and frightening as lightning, born with the power of thunder and lightning. Even if I were to meet it, I could only avoid it and carry on."

"ROAR!!"

Suddenly, a roar shook the heavens, from the mountain peak that the Lightning Bird had swooped towards suddenly stood a huge ape whose body was densely covered in scales. It jumped over hundred metres into the air as it attempted to kill the Lightning Bird.

"It's a Scaled Ape!" By the side, elder Li's face drained of colour as he said: "It seems to be the king of the scaled apes, otherwise it couldn't possibly be so big actually daring to attack the Lightning Bird."

Elder Wu Qing Feng frowned: "It seems that it is no longer

peaceful within the ruins, this expedition will likely have some twists and turns, we better not venture too deep."

Shrill bird cries and roars of a beast could be heard resounding within the ruins, the sounds seemed to pierce the heavens as it travelled from far away. The faces of the disciples paled, previously someone had easily slain a Venomous Serpent and they were filled with confidence but now they finally understood that the ruins was far more frightening than they had imagined and within its depths were unparalleled existences that they simply could not afford to offend.

"Let's change an area to enter the ruins from……" Elder Wu Qing Feng felt that this region was simply too risky and the ruins was vast enough that they could simply enter from another region.

After walking over ten miles the group reached another patch of forest and bore through it entering the ruins.

"Let me warn all of you one more time, even if you want to venture deeper do not go further than ten miles in!

Reaching this area the group split up into smaller groups and travelled together, all wanting to make gains. The hundred plants extract was simply a big temptation for these disciples that were establishing their sea of bitterness.

Han Fei Yu had also taken part in this expedition and when he gazed over at Ye Fan and Pang Bo cold light flashed within his eyes. When Ye Fan and Pang Bo looked over, he immediately looked

away seeming to not pay them any notice.

"Han Fei Yu, you were almost killed by the two people?"

Together with Han Fei Yu were a group of males and females that looked to be around eighteen to nineteen, each seemed to be brimming with qi essence and their every action seemed to flow with a divine glow.

"Although one is a celestial sprout, he only just joined the sect and shouldn't have learn much. The other is a useless person that cannot cultivate, being defeated by such an idiot, you've really thrown Elder Han's face."

The male and female who spoke in turn were around seventeen to eighteen and although they were younger than the other youths they were surrounded like stars by the rest.

Pang Bo was incensed, these two people were simply too unscrupulous, they actually ridiculed Ye Fan to his face that he was a useless person. He shouted: "How can you guys even speak like this, do you people even know how to speak the human language?"

The seventeen year old female coldly smiled, she had a mole just by her mouth and although she was very beautiful, she gave one a feeling of bone-chilling cold as she coldly said: "You temper certainly isn't small, don't think that just because you are a celestial sprout you can treat everyone as nobodies and look down on us. Who knows what may happen in the future, even celestial sprouts could die prematurely!"

“I wonder who’s the one disregarding everyone. Have we provoked you? On our first meeting you are already so cold and ridiculing others as useless people, if we are considered to be disregarding others, won’t you be considered as simply having no eyes at all?!” Pang Bo said very belligerently.

“If it weren’t for the elders orders that there could be no altercations between disciples, I’d really like to teach you a good lesson on how to be a well-behaved disciple.” The female with the mole had cold light in her eyes as her gaze swept past Ye Fan and stared at Pang Bo saying: “Although you are a celestial sprout, you shouldn’t just bring random people to this area. This ruins is an important ground of the Ling Xu sanctuary and random people shouldn’t be allowed to easily enter.”

The other seventeen year old who stood with her also ridiculed: “Not everyone can cultivate, a person should have some level of self awareness.” Having said this, he coldly looked at Ye Fan: “I’ll have to trouble you to leave as soon as possible, this is the area where our Ling Xu sanctuary disciples train in and outsiders should not be here.”

“Shut your dirty mouths!” Pang Bo was pissed, dissing Ye Fan was the same as dissing him and he really wanted to rush forward.

Ye Fan held him back as his gaze swept past the few people. He did not say much but merely held a jade pendant as he flashed it in their direction before moving forward with big steps.

“It’s Elder Wu’s jade pendant……”

The few people had pained expressions on their faces, they had wanted to get Ye Fan to scram but it seemed like they had just spoken a bunch of nonsense.

Han Fei Yu walked forward and said: “Senior sister Li Lin, Senior brother Li Yun, don’t provoke them first. My granduncle has instructed me not to provoke them and if that old foggy finds out he will surely punish me.”

After walking several hundred metres, Pang Bo voiced out: “I remember now, I’ve seen them at the back mountain of Ling Xu sanctuary before. They were very far away then and I didn’t pay much attention to them. Elder Wu Qing Feng casually mentioned them, if I recall correctly that girl is called Li Lin and is also a celestial sprout. The boy is called Li Yun and although he isn’t a celestial sprout his aptitude is exceptional and doesn’t pale much in comparison to a celestial sprout.”

Pang Bo was simply indifferent: “Only when there’s pressure will there be motivation. My current target is to step on all those bastards within three years. I finally understand why elder Wu Qing Feng had previously sighed and mentioned that in recent years the good and bad were entwined……”

“The Ling Xu sanctuary isn’t as peaceful as it seems on the surface. There may be some conflicts between the elders, in future you better be more cautious.” Ye Fan reminded.

“I know, elder Wu Qing Feng has said that he wants to take me in as his disciple. I think once you leave, I’ll go to the back mountain to cultivate and I won’t find trouble until I’ve at least achieved some modicum of success.

Ye Fan pondered for awhile before shaking his head and said: “It’s a pity that our current strength is simply not enough. Otherwise we could plot and get rid of these nuisances.”

“No problem, don’t worry about me. They won’t be able to do much to me.” Having said this, Pang Bo was still fuming: “Don’t care about those nuisances.”

Ye Fan laughed: “Don’t worry, I can’t be bothered to talk with them, I obviously won’t care about them.”

“That’s good, you don’t have to care about anything else now, just concentrate on cultivate and once your golden sea of bitterness is finally established they will know who’s really the useless person.”

It wasn’t long before Li Lin, Li Yun, Han Fei Yu and their group caught up, but this time they weren’t chasing after Pang Bo and Ye Fan but merely passing by.

“We’re going to the depths of the sanctuary, leave the outer edges to the useless people……” Li Lin had a mocking face and her mole seemed all the more unsightly, making one feel cold inside.

Ye Fan stood by the side quietly watching them go by and did not say anything.

“These bunch of low lifes!” Pang Bo was pissed but he could only bear with it as he currently did not have the strength to retaliate.

In the following two days, Ye Fan and Pang Bo found several medicinal grasses but only managed to exchange them for two bottles of hundred plants extract. There were many others who were like them and some people were even unable to exchange for a single bottle. Within the two short days three disciples had already died.

“We can’t go on like this, the outer regions have some medicinal plants but their age is insufficient and the ones that are mature have long been picked by others. As for those rare animals and birds, with so many people around it’s likely that they’ve all gone into hiding and hunting them will not be simple.

Two bottles of hundred plants extract to Ye Fan was simply too insignificant and would not have any effect. The two people discussed and came to the conclusion that if they wanted to find real spiritual medicine or hunt spiritual beasts they would have to follow Li Lin and her group’s example and head deeper into the ruins.

“The deeper parts are simply too dangerous, those ferocious birds and beasts are not something that we can handle. Furthermore if we meet with the group of Li Lin and Li Yun, although they won’t dare to openly attack us, if there’s no one else around I’m afraid……”

The two people continued to discuss for a long time and finally their gazes locked in a certain direction.

They wanted to leave this region and walk towards a different part of the ruins. Two days earlier the Lightning Bird had streaked across the sky, its body a blazing gold leaving a deep impression on them. There was also the Scaled Ape King whose entire body was covered in scales that leapt over hundred metres high which made them feel stunned. At this moment the battle between the Lightning Bird and Scaled Ape King was unfolding in their minds.

These past two days, the sounds of shrill bird cries and beast roars could be heard within the depths of this region and the sounds of their activity were very loud. It was only today that the sounds gradually became silent. Why were these two frightening beasts fighting? The two of them were certain that there was an extraordinary reason behind it.

Currently, the depths of the ruins gradually became peaceful and they felt that if they could advance stealthily to that region they would have astonishing gains.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were very decisive people and once they made their decision, they immediately moved and headed stealthily towards that region.

# Chapter 50: Jade Snake Orchid

Upon nearing the region, Ye Fan and Pang Bo got a fright of their lives. Several hundred bucket thick Venomous Dragons were spewing forth their toxic mist, shrouding this entire area causing the vegetation to all wither away. Besides this, from the deep forest low-pitched roars could be heard, an innumerable number of large ferocious beasts were clearly moving around within.

For unknown reasons, they did not attack each other but rather seemed fretful and continually gathered within this region. More and more like an unending tide of water that was rushing towards this area, a majority of this ferocious beasts were simply unknown to them.

There were also large numbers of flying beasts gathered in the sky and they continually glided through the air. Their bodies were all at least several metres big and seemed like a black mass, shrouding the sky and blocking the sun.

“What’s going on?”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were stunned, the scene unfolding before their eyes was simply stupefying. A veritable sea of ferocious beasts and endless numbers of flying beasts were gathering in this region, all of them seemed fretful and they were akin to a surging wave that was vast and mighty.

Ye Fan observed for a period of time before saying: “I think they should have retreated from the depths of the ruins.”

“Could it be the fighting between the Lightning Bird and Scaled Monkey King that resulted in these ferocious birds and beasts to be frightened and thus escaping outside?”

“It’s difficult to say, even if the king of beasts were fighting, it shouldn’t scare so many exotic beasts and birds out.”

“How are we going over there, there are too many ferocious beasts and birds in our way.”

“Let’s find a way to circumvent them, this is absolutely an opportunity. I’m sure that there’s an empty area within. The innermost parts may have two beast kings fighting or something other change that caused all these beasts and birds to escape to the edges.”

The two people circumvented over ten miles before finally finding a cliff, climbing the vines hanging down and continuing past several cliffs before finally using the old vines to once again climb down arriving at the depths of the forest and avoiding the beasts and birds.

“It’s so quiet here!”

Within this region, ancient trees covered the sky and old vines could be seen intertwined, verdant and lush however there was a deathly silence in the air as though all living things had fled only only this stillness remained.

“I wonder what happened in the depths of the ruins, even if the beast kings were fighting it should not result in this, I think there’s surely some other reason! Otherwise, how could all the beasts and birds run away.” Ye Fan and Pang Bo were bewildered but decided to continue moving forever. Another ten miles in, the ancient trees became even more old and hardy, it was simply an image of primitive times.

“Sssss……” Within the forest and rubble, sounds of hissing could be heard, as though a snake was spewing forth something as a five coloured mist was in the air there and the scent of a fishy stench permeated the air.

“An enormous snake!” Pang Bo let out a low shout.

Between the forest and rubble, an enormous snake that was as thick as a water tank was slithering amongst the rubble, its mouth continually spitting out a five coloured toxic mist, it seemed very restless and worried.

“It isn’t a regular snake, there is a jade horn on its head!”

The whole body of the enormous snake was covered with scales that were about the size of a palm, it was multicolored and unusually bright. The shiny scales seemed to sparkling under the sunshine. The most unique thing about the snake was that it had a horn on its head, continually releasing a glow that seemed to be multicoloured threads, bright and resplendent and was converging towards its head.

“This snake with a horn has already gained spiritual awareness , it knows how to swallow the energies of the sun and moon. If it grows claws out from its body. It will become the curling dragon from legends.

Their hearts were shaken. It was not all the ferocious beasts that had left, there were still some extraordinary ones left behind. This enormous snake seemed jittery as though it wanted to leave but could not make a decision.

Suddenly, from within the depths of the ruins came a soft sound that seemed to be muffled, like the beating of an enormous drum, coming from an incomparably far distance away.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo upon hearing this muffled sound felt a sense of fear but had no idea why. At this time, the enormous snake with the jade horn started to tremble before suddenly fiercely moving its body speedily into the depths of the rubble forest.

“Snake Hole!”

The rubble forest was its lair, it looked panicky as it crawled into a large black hole, not daring to come out again. The five coloured toxic mist dissipated, the fishy smell gradually dispersed and the everything within the rubble forest could be clearly seen again.

“This should be the Jade Horned Snake described by the elder that taught mystical arts!” Initially the two had not thought about it but now that the toxic mist had dispersed, they saw the black

snake hole within the rubble forest and recalled.

“I recall the elder saying that this Jade Horned Snake is an old snake that has been absorbing the energy from the sun and moon for at least one hundred years before evolving, its dwelling has a spiritual medicine that is exceptionally rare ‘Jade Snake Orchid’.

Although the two of them had some recollection, they were not entirely clear. Besides teaching mystical arts, the elder at the stone cliff also enriched them with other knowledge like the different cultivation books, weapons as well as spiritual medicines. Ye Fan and Pang Bo were more keen on cultivation and did not pay much attention when he talked about the other information. For this expedition they had toiled to remember the different medicinal plants so as to be able to recognise them. This was to enable them to quickly recognise medicinal plants if they come across any.

“It really is the ‘Jade Snake Orchid’!”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were very excited, they could see that at the entrance of the dark snake hole there were three unique plants the height of a palm. The plants were snow white like jade, their entire bodies sparkling and translucent, at a glance one would think that there were three white snakes standing tall there. There were several jade white leaves on them and on top there was a glorious white magnolia.

The three plants were very unique and it was clear they were exceptional. Dots of light could be seen flowing and a faint fragrance could be smelt in the wind.

“There’s no mistaking it, it’s the ‘Jade Snake Orchid’!”

Upon personally seeing the ‘Jade Snake Orchid’, the words the elder mentioned seemed to resound in their minds once more. The two immediately thought of how valuable he mentioned this plant was.

It was rumoured that when the old snake was absorbing the energies of the sun and moon, the spiritual qi surrounding its snake hole would be dense but normal plants would not be able to bear it, even spiritual grass when exposed to it for long periods of time would eventually turn to fine powder. Only a unique kind of plant could continue to live on, it would absorb the energy together with the old snake and after over a hundred years of basking in spiritual qi, it would gather large amounts of sun and moon energy, changing into a figure that would be akin to the old snake. This was why this unique plant was named ‘Jade Snake Orchid’.

Living by the side of the snake hole, it had an extraordinary ability to cure poisons and could cure many different kinds of unique poisons. Besides this, it also swallowed the energies of the sun and moon and had collected large quantities of spiritual essence of life which was something all cultivators longed for.

The two people controlled their impulse as they did not dare to directly rush forward to pick the plant. It was rumoured that the plant was prepared by an old snake for itself and when the ‘Jade Snake Orchid’ had completely turned into the form of the old snake it would swallow it. Whoever wanted to take the ‘Jade Snake

Orchid' would face the full fury of the old snake.

"The old snake has already transformed into a Jade Horned Snake but the three 'Jade Snake Orchid' have not fully changed into the form of the old snake, meaning that it has not fully matured."

"How can we take the plants……"

"I think this old snake was previously terrified as it hurriedly slithered to the depths of its snake hole and temporarily won't dare to come out. If we stealthily advance we should be able to successfully attain it."

"There's still quite a bit of danger, let's wait awhile. If that oppressive sound resounds from the depths of the ruins again, we'll rush forward to pick the plants then immediately run away."

"Okay, let's patiently wait and see."

The two people had finished their discussion and hid within the rubble forest. They did not know what was happening in the depths of the ruins but felt that the situation there was likely still continuing and the sound earlier should resound once more.

As expected, barely thirty minutes had passed before that oppressive sound resounded three more times, Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt trepidation in their hearts, they did not understand it but the fear seemed to stem from their souls as they shuddered.

The two people tried to remain composed as they speedily rushed forward, plucking the three ‘Jade Snake Orchid’ and rushing out of the rubble forest.

Only after running for several miles did they finally stop and from their backs a rumbling sound could be heard. There seemed to be tremors coming from that patch of rubble forest, it was clear that the old snake had slithered out.

“Boom!”

An oppressive sound could be heard from the depths of the ruin again as Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt their hearts trembling to the extent that they felt an acute pain. The patch of forest where the old snake was located immediately quietened upon the emergence of the sound.

“It’s fortunate that we were successful, I’m afraid if that old snake decide to chase us, with it already having spiritual awareness, even normal experts would not be able to deal with it, let’s not even talk about us!” The two people were sitting on a large limestone rock and wiping the cold sweat from their faces.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo carefully inspected the ‘Jade Snake Orchid’ within their hands. As expected there were leaves and at the top was a snake-like orchid, even the stalk had snake scale patterns. The whole plant was sparkling and translucent and seemed to be sculpted from nephrite jade. A fragrant scent that was able to penetrate deeply into the heart charged forth into one’s five

viscera and six bowels.

"It's a pity it hasn't fully matured……"

"We should feel satisfied, this is an extraordinary item."

"It's rumoured that it contains large amounts of essence of life, I'm not sure what the actual effects are."

"Let's find a safe place to ingest it."

The two people were certainly not going to use the 'Jade Snake Orchid' to exchange for hundred plants extract with the Ling Xu sanctuary elders. This item was definitely worth much more than the hundred plants extract and its effect would likely be many folds better.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo grabbed some thick vines and climbed up a cliff, the vegetation here was thick with nary an animal in sight, peacefully silent.

"After ingesting this 'Jade Snake Orchid, even if we meet any venomous snakes or insects we won't need to be fretful."

The two people discussed for awhile before deciding that Ye Fan would ingest one first to see the effects. His physique was special and did not need to fear that the medicinal effects would be too strong and destroy his sea of bitterness.

Ye Fan took a bite of the Jade Snake Orchid and the fragrance immediately pervaded throughout his mouth, he felt as though all the pores on his body had opened. The spiritual qi in the surroundings was dense, the broken half of the Jade Snake Orchid was emitting the qi essence of life as thin strands of multicoloured light could be seen. Ye Fan hurriedly popped the remaining half of the plant into his mouth.

Thereafter, he sat down and began to execute the mystical arts within the Dao scripture as his body was still like a stone statue. A short time passed before Ye Fan's breathing suddenly became heavy, his face and body were red and his blood vessels swelled as his body seemed to emit specks of brilliance.

Pang Bo was very nervous as he silently watched. He could feel the strong spiritual qi that was currently assailing Ye Fan's body.

He could clearly hear that Ye Fan's blood was rumbling like a roaring river as a strong qi essence of life within his body began to circulate, continually assailing his body as brilliance was continually emitted.

An hour later, the sounds of the rumbling finally stopped and his breathing gradually stabilised. His pulse became stable as his whole person appeared to be more agile.

"Boom!"

Suddenly, the sea of bitterness within Ye Fan exploded blazing

golden light, divine rainbows streaked with their gorgeous brilliance, dazzling to the eyes.

"It's here!" Pang Bo was excited.

The scene that he had previously witnessed re-emerged as the sea of bitterness within Ye Fan became a vast golden body of water, the howling sounds of the sea rumbled out as though a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses were surging forward, simply deafening.

Angry waves rushed to the sky with dazzling golden light, an endless body of water was undulating as it seemed to swallow the sky, a blazing divine glow seemed to fill the entire sky.

"Kaboom!"

Lightning and thunder abounded as golden lightning streaked through the air, tens of thousands of thunder claps resounded across the heavens, the destructive power seemed to contain endless life qi, as life energy seemed to dance vigorously within the lightning.

The golden body of water, huge waves covering the sky together with the blazing lightning created a strange world filled with endless divine glow.

The deafening sounds of the howling sea continued and although Pang Bo had experienced this before he still felt stunned, that

golden sea of bitterness had a seemed to have a unique energy as it continually trembled.

Ye Fan's sea of bitterness was radiating a golden light which made the surroundings coloured in a divine glow.

Four hours passed before everything gradually calmed down, the golden glow receded, the sounds stopped and Ye Fan's sea of bitterness was once again silent. He seemed to be more free and unrestrained and even had the aura of an immortal seemingly otherworldly.

Another hour passed before Ye Fan finally opened his eyes which seemed to lightning in them. Divine light was glowing in his eyes as he looked alert and his qi and blood was vigorous.

"How do you feel?"

"I feel very good, the sea of bitterness has become bigger!" Ye Fan began to execute the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture and his sea of bitterness began to release a golden light, the sea of bitterness that was only as big as a sesame seed had become as big as a soybean, as though a divine lamp were hanging there.

"This rate of establishing is simply stunning!" Pang Bo felt delighted for Ye Fan but was extremely shocked at the same time. The size of Ye Fan's sea of bitterness had multiplied by many times.

Divine energy continued to circulate within the golden sea of bitterness and Ye Fan felt incredibly comfortable as the divine glow emitted from the sea of bitterness seemed to nourish his body. As Ye Fan continued to execute the mystical arts, a streak of golden light came from his sea of bitterness and shot forth from his finger. “Chi!”, it had pierced through an ancient tree not far away.

Pang Bo was stupefied as he said: “You….. can actually execute….. an attack similar to the ‘divine symbol’ already!”

“The Jade Snake Orchid is indeed extraordinary, the qi essence of life contained within it is multiple times stronger than the several tens of bottles of hundred plants extract!” Ye Fan sighed, the establishing of his golden sea of bitterness was finally successful.

Pang Bo excitedly said: “It seems this expedition has not been a waste of our time, we’ve obtained these three spiritual medicines which would certainly be greater than the gains of all the other people added together.”

“Who knows what’s going on deep within the ruins, should we still continue to go deeper?”

“Naturally we’ll have to continue going forward, if we go a bit deeper who knows maybe we’ll be able to get more stuff. The beasts and birds have all ran away and this is a great opportunity. Besides, there may be some shocking changes occurring within the depths of the ruins that may be a huge chance for us.”

# *Chapter 51: A Day Apart Seems Like Three Years*

Pang Bo did not dare to reckless ingest the Jade Snake Orchid for fear of piercing his sea of bitterness. His physique was not as frightening as Ye Fan and would not be able to handle the vast amount of qi essence of life assailing him. He could only go back and think of other ideas.

“Did the oppressive sound from the depths of the ruins resound a few more times earlier?” Ye Fan questioned.

Pang bo nodded in affirmation: “For the past four hours there the sounds have been resounding with intervals between them, seemingly even more stifling making the entire ruins even more deathly silent. Even that tidal wave of beasts have stopped roaring. It’s fortunate that it’s like this otherwise I’m afraid that old snake would have chased us.”

“That oppressive sound can make several tens of thousands of beasts tremble in fear, it’s unknown if that Jade Horned Snake also left.”

“This old snake that has already gained spiritual awareness has probably left in anger. It would be best if it already left, otherwise, when we enter deeper into the ruins, we might encounter it again.’

“What’s that smell?” Ye Fan had an expression of confusion: “Why is there a faint fishy smell……”

Pang Bo took in a deep breath and the colour of his face changed: “It seems to be the smell of the old snake!”

At this moment, Ye Fan’s face drained of colour as he pulled Pang Bo and softly commanded: “Let’s go!”

Just several hundred metres ahead, a huge ferocious snake was slithering up the cliff, its scales were gleaming with a cold light and its fiery red eyes seemed to shoot forth a blood red glow. The three metre long snake could be heard slithering as it brushed through the thick foliage which immediately turned to yellow liquid.

“The old snake has come!”

Pang Bo’s face drained of colour, they had not thought that that demonic snake would actually chase them and their only saving grace was that it had not spotted them yet. Atop the cliff, there were many ancient trees that shrouded the sky and the two people hastily backed away as they went to the back of the cliff and climbed down using vines.

If they were slightly slower, their lives might have already been lost. The old snake was certainly infuriated and if it found traces of them only a tragic scene would remain.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were swift like monkeys as they ran and jumped, speedily following the vines to the ground and not looking back.

“For this old snake to bear grudges with us, we are in some serious trouble.” As the two of them were fleeing for their lives, they occasionally looked back to check. On the cliff’s precipice, there was a gigantic multi-colored snake that was ascending upwards, it’s pupils were emitting two bloody rays. The jade horn on its head was shining brilliantly as the sun rays shine down upon it, a continuous stream of mystical red clouds were being emitted from it.

“Kaboom!”

Rumbling sounds could be heard from atop the cliff as giant rocks continued to tumble down, much of the forest had been knocked down by the old snake as it slithered down the cliff heading speedily in their direction.

“Shit! It’s found us!”

“Let’s hurry out and let Elder Wu Qing Feng take care of this demonic snake.”

“That’s not possible, the old snake is simply too fast. There are those beasts and birds in the outer areas blocking us, it would surely be able to catch up. I think there’s no other choice, let’s rush towards the depths of the ruins, that oppressive sound seems to be able to bring fear to the old snake, with its heart filled with trepidation, it’s unlikely that it will dare to follow us in.”

Their discussion concluded, two streams of light could be seen

heading speedily into the depths of the ruins. This Jade Horned Snake had already attained spiritual awareness and was certainly extraordinary, it's speed was like lightning as it forced its way through the forest leaving a wake of destruction in its path. A clear path through the forest could be seen where it went through.

"Rumble!"

Mountain rocks were tumbling and the old snake was more ferocious than a steam roller as it continued unrestrained, the sound of slithering became closer and closer as wisps of fishy odour could be smelt in the air.

Ye Fan did not feel unwell but Pang Bo felt a headache as he said: "This old snake is simply too venomous, even though it's several hundred metres away the toxic mist has already reached this far and I feel that my body will soon be unable to endure it."

"Quickly ingest a petal of the Jade Snake Orchid!" Ye Fan was feeling nervous, the old snake was simply too fast and as it came closer and closer it seemed that it would catch up at any time. If anything happened to Pang Bo then he would regret it for life."

Pang Bo did not dare to ingest the whole Jade Snake Orchid and even taking just a petal of the flower he felt that the medicinal strength might be too strong and might perforate his sea of bitterness. Finally, he peeled a portion of the petal of placed it into his mouth before swallowing it.

"How do you feel?" Ye Fan was worried that something untoward might happen to Pang Bo.

“It’s really so miraculous!” Pang Bo let out a long breath. Having just ingested the petal the feeling of malaise had completed disappeared and his headache was gone. He felt that refreshed and the attack of the snake poison had clearly been halted.

“It is indeed a spiritual medicine, able to cure all kinds of unique poisons.” Ye Fan felt relieved.

“Snap Snap”

At the back, the old snake continued to pull closer and the ancient trees in its path were completely pushed aside, mighty and dreadful, those low lying shrubs had all been split asunder in its wake leaving a clear snake path. The old snake’s eyes were blood red as it continued to spit out large amounts of toxic mist. Although the distance was several hundred metres away the mist seemed to spread extremely fast and “Chi! Chi!” sounds continually resounded as the surrounding forest was completed melted into yellow water, simply shocking.

If the two had not taken the Jade Snake Orchid, they could have already become puddles of water.

“This snake poison is simply too barbaric!”

“If it continues on like this, we’d be hard pressed to escape with our lives. The old snake has almost caught up!”

If it were normal people the old snake would have already caught them. Its speed was simply too fast and the Jade Horned Snake which had attained spiritual awareness seemed to be one with the wind as it swiftly chased. Ye Fan and Pang Bo had partaken the divine fruit within the Ancient Forbidden land and had not only attained elephant-like strength but their speeds had also undergone a huge increase. It it were anyone else they would have already been caught.

“Hang in there, I believe that oppressive sound will resound again and by then the old snake will surely be filled with fright and that will be our chance to run away with our lives.”

The ground was trembling as huge rocks continued to tremble and the old snake was only seventy to eighty metres away. Ye Fan and Pang Bo’s faces were drained of colour as they hurriedly turned trying to dodge to the side.

“Shmmm”

The old snake dashed forward and it was not clumsy in its movements as its large tail swept forth like an iron last that was sweeping through the area, sweeping away the trees, leaves were flying everywhere and a vile stench assailed the senses.

Although the two managed to avoid that enormous snake tail that was over ten metres in length, the large broken pieces of wood were like rocks as they continually rained onto their bodies, knocking them into the air.

If it were not for their exceptional physiques with divine strength that managed to block the strong forces of impact, they would have long been smashed by the debris. Even so, the blood and qi in their bodies were in turmoil as they staggered and stumbled for a long distance before finally stabilising their bodies.

Suddenly, the two people felt a dangerous pressure on their hearts as a piercing sound could be heard through the air, a dazzling brilliance could be seen from the head of the Jade Horned Snake and it was like a sharp sword as it chopped towards the two people.

“Run!”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo faces changed as they used all the strength in their bodies to run leaving an illusion where they stood.

“Chi!”

The divine light of a sword over twenty metres in length sliced apart many trees living a frightening fissure on the ground. Even several huge rocks that were on the roar were all cleanly rended in two, the centre smooth and even like tofu.

“A demonic snake that has attained spiritual awareness is simply too terrifying!”

Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt chills in their heart, it was true that there were no free meals in this world. If one wanted to obtain

something one would certainly have to pay a price. If it were not for the drastic change occurring within the depths of the ruins they would not even have the chance to snatch the Jade Snake Orchid and even so, they were chased to the point where there is no road to the sky, nor door into the earth*.

[Idiom* To be at the end of one's rope]

"We can only last for another thirty seconds at most!"

"Thump!"

Suddenly, as the two people were conversing, an oppressive sound could be heard from the depths of the ruins. The two felt as though they were struck by lightning as they shuddered uncontrollably and felt an acute pain within their chests. The enormous snake was in a worse condition as it writhed on the ground, violently thrashing and smashing the surrounding forest.

"Quick! Let's run!"

Calming their state of mind, the two hurried away without stopping.

The oppressive sound stopped but the ruins seemed to be even more stifling. Ye Fan and Pang Bo could not retreat as the old snake barred their path and could only go forward. A while passed before the two came before a huge rock that was over hundred metres in height, using the vines that were covering it they scaled

the rock and looked back into the distance.

“Damn, that old snake is still chasing us……”

In the distance, the forest was rumbling as the Jade Horned Snake continued forwards. Although its speed had clearly dropped, it was still chasing the two people.

“We’ll be in trouble if it goes on like this. It may really follow us all the way into the depths of the ruins.” The two felt that the situation seemed grim.

“These things that have gained spiritual awareness shouldn’t be trifled with!”

“Hm, there seems to be a figure of someone in front.” Ye Fan had a stunned expression as there seemed to be several figures moving through the forest in front.

Pang Bo gazed into the distance and said: “It’s….. Li Lin, Li Yun, Han Fei Yu and their gang!”

“It seems like the few of them had the same idea as us to take the chance and enter into the depths of the ruins to gather as much as they can without any restraint.”

At this moment, Ye Fan and Pang Bo looked at each other before laughing out with a “Hei Hei”. The two people picked up their speeds as they were like the wind and dashed forward.

Li Lin, Li Yun, Han Fei Yu and the others were heading towards the ancient construction within the depths of the ruins. They had a far deeper understanding of this area of the primitive ruins. They knew that the strange scene they were currently facing was certainly not due to beast kings battling but rather had largely to do with the changes occurring within the ancient constructions in the depths of the ruins. If they could successfully enter that area, it could be a tremendous opportunity. These ruins were here since ancient times and clearly held many exceptional opportunities.

"There's somebody who's closing in on us, it seems that they had the same idea as us." Li Yun was releasing killing intent as he said: "Let's capture them in a while, who knows, maybe they've already obtained some exceptional spiritual medicine."

"It's Pang Bo and that cripple Ye Fan!" Li Lin's killing intent rose as she saw the two speedily approaching: "You dare to encroach on our area, looking for death!"

Han Fei Yu had a face full of hatred as two lights filled with hatred shot forth from his eyes.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo were very fast as they drew closer in an instant.

"Li Lin, brother Li Yun, it's really unexpected to meet you guys here. It must be fate!" Ye Fan and Pang Bo had expressions of glee and their faces seemed to be filled with emotion as though they were meeting close relatives whom they had not seen for a long

time. They speedily rushed forward with expressions filled with joy and warmth.

“Not meeting for one day seems like three years have passed, not meeting for two days it already seems like six years have passed, finally we meet again.” Ye Fan and Pang Bo were like shooting stars as they hastily moved closer, it seemed like they could not wait to hug the few people to express their happiness.

This made the group of Li Lin and Li Yun feel a loss of composure as their goosebumps stood on end and they all felt cold shivers.

Li Lin had an expression of disgust as her eyes swept to Pang Bo and lightly grazed past Ye Fan before saying: “Don’t try to pull any tricks, no matter what you guys do it would not change anything.” She stood on a huge rock looking down on the two, her face was filled with hate as she coldly asserted: “You people really have the guts, aren’t’ you afraid of dying prematurely within this forest? This ruins isn’t a place where any cripple can just easily walk in!”

Li Yun was also exceptionally cold as he stared at Ye Fan and Pang Bo with a cold smile. He was considering whether to immediately attack and was only concerned that elder Wu Qing Feng had left an imprint on their bodies and would be able to investigate what happened.

Although they were humiliating the two and not masking their killing intent, Ye Fan and Pang Bo seemed to be unaffected as they continued to be warm and joined the group. It was even more exasperating when the two actually held Han Fei Yu’s hands and repeatedly said:” Han Fei Yu..... You really are such a good

person!”

“Did the two of you manage to pick some spiritual medicine? Why do your bodies have such a strong fragrance emitting from it?” Li Lin had killing intent registered all over her face as the mole on her face was lightly trembling but her face immediately became serious as she said: “Something seems to be amiss, why is there a fishy stench in the air?”

“Rumble!”

At this moment, the few people felt the ground trembling as they looked back.

“That is..... a spiritual snake!”

“A snake that has gained spiritual awareness, that’s a Jade Horned Snake!”

The faces of the people in the area all changed, an old snake with a single horn was speedily rushing over like the wind, leaving behind a wake of destruction in its path as it rushed forward, a fishy stench could be smelt in the air.

“Damn! You two.....”

Li Lin, Li Yun, Han Fei Yu and the others suddenly understood what was going on and really wanted to tear the two into pieces however it was not the time to do so and the few hastily turned

and ran, cutting very sorry figures.

"Han Fei Yu! All of you are such good people……" Ye Fan and Pang Bo continued to flee as they gleefully said those words to Han Fei Yu and the rest who were trailing behind.

# Chapter 52: Deep And Immeasurable

Currently, Li Lin, Li Yun, Han Fei Yu and the others wished they could flay Ye Fan and Pang Bo alive, the smiles on their faces seemed so despicable and seemed to be asking for a beating. This was of course just their imagination. In reality, Ye Fan and Pang Bo felt that their smiles were indubitably carefree, they were feeling absolutely relaxed and comfortable.

"Pang Bo you are clearly looking for death! Don't think that I will ever spare you!" Li Lin cursed, her beautiful visage was cold and carried a baleful aura.

Li Yun was also beside himself in anger, this was an absolutely undeserving disaster. They were suddenly being chased by an old snake as he exclaimed: "Pang Bo you are forcing our hand! Although you are a celestial sprout from here on out we won't stop till you're dead! As for that useless person, you better watch out, I'm going to personally tear you apart!"

"Chi!"

The five coloured mist was once again spreading out like a colourful shirt that would cover them. Li Lin and Li Yun did not dare to continue speaking as they focused on running, afraid that they would be enveloped by the snake's poison.

"Aaahhhh....." At this moment, a wail could be heard as a person amongst them did not dodge in time and became a puddle of water. Even the bones had become strangely black, rotten to the point of

disintegration.

Everyone was filled with fear, this demonic snake was simply too terrifying and a spit of its toxic mist could turn a cultivator into dry bones, making one feel cold sweat. What made Li Lin, Li Yun and the group even more spiteful was that Pang Bo was faster than a rabbit as he continually ran and jumped, leaving them far behind to face the wrath of the snake.

As for Ye Fan who was but a useless person in their eyes, he was even faster as he was the foremost runner, making Han Fei Yu and the group feel frantic. Even a useless person could run faster than them, this made these disciples who had exceptional physiques feel angry at both Ye Fan and themselves for being slower.

“Chi!”

The old snake grew closer and closer as the jade horn on its head released a ferocious divine sword light, slicing across the sky like a bolt of lightning as it rushed forth. “Chi!”, a person was immediately split asunder and fresh blood spewed forth onto the few people by his side, leaving them petrified.

“Aaahhh……” A female cultivator shrieked in fright, the bloody and gore-filled reality left them feeling miniscule, the demonic snake was so enormous and they who had only just stepped on the path of cultivation simply could not match up.

“Kaboom!”

The ground trembled as the Jade Horned Snake slithered forcefully through the forest, eyes gleaming with a red light. Under the pressure of fear, someone cursed hatefully: “F***, how can that useless person run so fast? I can barely see him anymore!”

“That damned useless person, how can he run faster than us?” Several people were gritting their teeth in hatred, their hearts were unsettled as they saw the useless person in their eyes seem to fly across the grass, almost seeming to float.

“These two bastards, once there’s an opportunity I’ll definitely tear them into a million pieces!” Li Lin’s exquisite face was deathly cold and rage could be clearly seen mixed with fear, but they had no solutions at the moment.

Although Li Lin and Li Yun and unique physiques and their cultivation were exceptional it was far from enough to deal with the demonic snake as they had only been at the Ling Xu sanctuary for three years and even with their speedy advancement they had not cultivate a ‘Mystical Rainbow’ and could not fly through the air, thus they could only run on the ground.

While their cultivations were much stronger than Ye Fan and Pang Bo, their physical bodies had not undergone the nourishment of the divine fruit. Whereas Ye Fan and Pang Bo had shed their mortal bodies and exchanged their bones, their physiques were something that normal cultivators simply could not compare to and thus left these people far behind.

Li Lin and Li Yun and the group naturally knew that the Jade Horned Snake hated Ye Fan and Pang Bo the most and it was their

stealing of the spiritual medicine from the snake hole that resulted in this death chase from the demonic snake.

The few people felt as though their lungs were about to explode from anger, even Li Lin no longer cared about her image of a beautiful woman and threw down her facade, cursing: “F***! That person whose first name is Pang as well as that useless person, Li Lin will remember the two of you!”

Being relentlessly chased by the Jade Horned Snake, life and death was hanging in the balance. Now that he was constantly being cursed at, even a mud man would have felt some anger and Ye Fan angrily retaliated: “Your mother! The one whose first name is Li, I’ll remember you too! Not because I’m interested in you but because you’re flat like a washing board……”

Pang Bo turned back to fan the fire and continued: “The one whose surname is Li with a flat chest like a washboard, if you have the time to curse at us why not showcase your strength by dealing with that demonic snake.”

“They’re really infuriating me!” Li Lin was trembling in anger but could only use everything she had to run, not daring to be even the slightest distracted.

Li Yun angrily shouted from the back: “You two bastards! Too despicable, I curse you people to die a terrible death!”

“Your mother! Who’s the one lacking in morals? You people have always been trying to get rid of the two of us, now due to some

fortunate circumstances it's good that you guys have fallen ill on luck!"

Li Lin, Li Yun and Han Fei Yu were speechless in their anger, meeting these two people felt as though they had collected eight generations worth of bad luck and were living on the brink of death.

Besides Li Lin, Li Yun and Han Fei Yu, the rest of the people were clearly unable to hold on as some people cried while running forward: "My two dear junior brothers……"

"Who is your junior brother!" Ye Fan and Pang Bo were not satisfied with being called this way.

"Wrong, I mean two elder brothers……" The few people were crying as they desperately shouting: "Especially that useless person elder brother, you guys run so fast…… there's no need to keep running together with us. As a venerated elder you should run further away, I beg you!"

Ye Fan had been chased for such a long time with his life on the line, he did not have his usual calm composure and hearing these words he scolded: "Your grandmother, who's the useless person……"

Pang Bo turned back and shouted: "Didn't the few of you want to get rid of us? Now we're just giving you a taste of what it's like when your life is threatened." Having said this, he picked up his pace and like a rabbit within the blink of an eye he was already far

away.

"Plop Plop!"

Amongst Li Lin and the group, the cultivators who were trailing behind had ashen faces, they had breathed in some of the snake poison and their strength was failing as they fell to the ground. The Jade Horned Snake slithered past and crushed their bodies into meat pulp, blood splattered everywhere and the scene was bloody and gore-filled.

"Hissss"

The hissing sound of the snake could be heard and a disciple was pulled by an unknown force, flying through the air and entering into the wide open mouth of the Jade Horned Snake.

"Ah!"

He could only let out a short scream of fear before he was abruptly cut off. "Chi!", a splatter of blood flew out from between the old snakes chilling white teeth. Thereafter, the entire person was swallowed into the snake's stomach. During the process of swallowing, the body had already completely melted, this fearsome scene made everyone feel cold sweat roll down their backs as they felt all their hair stand on end.

The gap continued to close as the Jade Horned Snake stopped spitting out snake poison and the jade horn atop its head also

stopped giving off divine light. It only opened its huge mouth and with a hissing sound, sucked someone straight into its stomach with a terrifying force.

“Chi!”

Blood splattered everywhere as another person was swallowed, traces of blood could be seen flowing down from the snake’s teeth out of its mouth.

“Pang Bo and that useless person you guys just wait. My granduncle will make sure that the two of you would wish you were dead, he will grind your bones into dust!” Han Fei Yu was terrified as he angrily shouted. At this moment, he was running at the back and would be the snake’s next target.

The old snake spat out a two to three metre long forked tongue, leaving behind a large area of venom. The surface of the ground was corroded as traces of white smoke could be seen rising. A pair of blood red eyes were locked onto Han Fei Yu.

“No!” Han Fei Yu let out a terrified shout, he felt his body suddenly lighten as a formless force pulled him into the air straight towards the wide open mouth of the old snake.

At this critical juncture, Han Fei Yu took out the green wooden symbol and the treasure symbol that weighed ten thousand catties let out a green glow as wisps of green mist floated and heavily smashed down.

“Bang!”

The green wooden symbol firmly pressed onto the old snake and managed to sway it but did not manage to damage it even in the slightest. Its single horn let out a divine sword light and sent the green wooden symbol flying in an instant, heavily landing in the distance and crushing all the rocks in that area.

The green wooden symbol was not destroyed, it was a weapon that was personally forged by Han Fei Yu’s granduncle. There were several Dao markings within the wooden symbol and various strong “influences” were placed, making it very difficult to destroy. Han Fei Yu’s cultivation was simply insufficient and could not fully utilise the treasure symbol’s true power, thus failing to injure the Jade Horned Snake.

“Granduncle..... save me!” Han Fei Yu who was sucked into the air by the demonic snake let out a frightened yell and suddenly a jade pendant by his chest began to emit a glow, shrouding him in light and stopping him in the air, preventing the old snake from swallowing him.

Han Fei Yu suddenly recalled that this was the jade pendant that his granduncle had ordered him to keep it by his side at all times, it seemed that it was something that would preserve his life at a critical juncture.

Far away on top of a cliff, there was suddenly a green glow and a person could be seen flying over on a mystical rainbow arriving in the blink of an eye. The old snake seemed to be frightened as it hastily retreated giving up on Han Fei Yu who was suspended in mid air.

Li Lin and Li Yun immediately had expressions of relief as Han Fei Yu loudly shouted: “Granduncle save me!”

The divine rainbow stopped before them as a green light flashed, a stooped old man with disheveled hair stood there, grabbing Han Fei Yu out of the air and bringing him back to the ground. Li Lin and Li Yun hurriedly rushed forward to greet.

Far away, Ye fan and Pang Bo also stopped as they looked at each other feeling very uneasy and wanted to immediately run far far away. They then noticed that the old man’s gaze had swept to them and immediately ceased any ideas of getting away. An expert who could ride on a divine rainbow, if he had his sights on them there was simply no way to run away. The two people did not move an inch as they quietly stood there and watched.

The old man was not tall, skinny and emaciated together with his stooped body he was barely 1.5 metres tall. His disheveled hair was snow white and completely covered his face making it impossible to clearly see his face. Only his two emaciated hands could be seen, it was like wrinkled skin wrapping a bone like a jet-black bird’s claw.

“Elder Han it’s fortunate that you managed to rush over in time, otherwise we would have all died here……” Li Lin and Li Yun went forward to greet the elder and thereafter said these words. At the same time, they looked hatefully over at Ye Fan and Pang Bo and said: “This time you guys are surely dead!”

Han Fei Yu was gritting his teeth as he silently whispered some words to the elder, from his expression it was clear that he wanted to do something untoward to Ye Fan and Pang Bo and his eyes that looked over were cold and sinister, filled with hatred.

Elder Han who was emaciated like an old ghost did not bother about the three people before him as he looked at the Jade Horned Snake far away and continually nodded his head before speaking in a hoarse voice which seemed to be breathless: “Not bad, very good. The jade horn of a spiritual snake is good material for refining medicine.....”

The Jade Horned Snake had long felt the danger and hastily retreated, the forked tongue constantly flickered, it wanted to escape.

At the moment, the elder with his disheveled hair was like a ghost as he floated forward, not planning to let it leave. The old snake spat out a mouthful of toxic mist and drowned him within. A green light flashed and a mysterious glow appeared around elder Han, completely preventing the snake poison from reaching him.

“Chi!”

From the jade horn atop the old snake’s head burst forth a blazing divine glow as several dazzling divine sword lights rushed forth towards elder Han.

“Dang Dang Dang”

As though the sounds of divine weapons were in conflict, Elder Han held a green wooden ruler and dispersed all the divine sword lights. The Jade Horned Snake felt danger as it swiftly turned and attempted to flee. Elder Han would not give it such a chance as from his emaciated body twelve green lights suddenly shot forth, twelve green wooden swords speedily became big and stabbed into the ground forming a prison that trapped the Jade Horned Snake inside.

“Drop the jade horn on your own, if you wish to destroy it I’ll slice you up alive!” Elder Han’s words were cold and sinister as he stared at the Jade Horned Snake.

The old snake seemed to be enraged as there was a ferocious light from its eyes, its jade horn had a bright resplendent light that seemed to be gathering divine energy for a final attack.

It was obvious that Elder han would not allow it to make such an attack. Twelve green wooden words released a faint jade light as the engravings on them wriggled like worms, thereafter the green glow covering the twelve wooden swords expanded and killing intent poured out as they chopped towards the centre.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

Fresh blood was splattered everywhere as the twelve green wooden swords chopped the Jade Horned Snake into several portions, the huge snake began to spew forth fresh blood like a river and gurgled forth, a fishy stench assailed the nostrils and a bloody mist was instantly created together with a toxic mist.

Far away, Ye Fan and Pang Bo took a deep breath, Han Fei Yu's granduncle was simply too frightening. He could easily kill a spiritual snake, his profound cultivation level simply made one feel fear.

One must know that the old snake's body was extremely tough and could easily pulverize ancient trees, crush large rocks. The snake's body was hard like divine metal but could not withstand the assault from the twelve green wooden swords and had died in an instant. The fresh blood flowed like a river and the entire ground was stained with blood. This stooped elder Han with his disheveled hair simply made one feel enormous apprehension.

# Chapter 53: Elder Han

Green lights flashed as the twelve green wooden swords seemed to be alive as they sucked at the blood essence within the snake blood. The bodies of the green wooden swords became lustrous, simple and unadorned. The swords had a layer moist and seemingly became actual jade swords. The green light that was emitted seemed to be rather evil, a ghostly fire that was a faint jade colour. Finally with a “Shua Shua Shua” sound, it swiftly flew back into elder Han’s skinny frame.

He held a green wooden ruler as he walked forward into the blood soaked area and gently knocked, causing the jade horn to fall. Thereafter, he searched the corpse of the snake and retrieved an enormous gallbladder that was dripping in fresh blood. His fingers were like claws as his tore the gallbladder apart, dripping the juices into his mouth before placing the entire gallbladder into his mouth, chewing for awhile before swallowing.

“Ai, although it’s rather bitter it really is such great nourishment for my body which has lost most of its vitality. The gallbladder of a spiritual snake is afterall quite rare.” His words were faint and sounded sinister, even Li Lin and Li Yun felt their hair stand on end.

Thereafter, he began to refine the snake’s blood and poison with great familiarity without any waste and finally kept all the materials in a flash of green light which disappeared in the blink of an eye.

“The few of you are simply too daring actually venturing to these

depths.” Elder Han’s face was currently covered by his disheveled hair but his current forlorn look could be imagined. He coldly said: “Let’s not talk about you few, even those experts with a gurgling spring of divine energy would not easily enter into the depths of the ruins.”

“Granduncle, I recognise the error in my ways.” Han Fei Yu was looking down and did not dare to refute in the slightest, seemingly very afraid of elder Han. Li Lin and Li Yun were also looking down, afraid to look directly at the elder.

“Although the few of you are rather quick-witted wanting to take the chance while most of the beasts and birds have escaped from the depths of the ruins, you’re forgetting something, for everything in this world one needs power. Unless you’re an unparalleled expert, no matter how intricate your plans are they’ll still be useless.” Having said this, elder Han’s tone became calmer: “There has been a drastic change within the depths of the ruins, even if it were me I’d have to carefully progress, otherwise my life would be in danger. Alright, the few of you can immediately leave, make sure you don’t come back.”

“Yes!”

Although the three people agreed, they did not immediately leave but rather looked in Ye Fan and Pang Bo’s direction, killing intent clearly written on their faces.

“Why haven’t you left!” Although elder Han’s face was covered by his disheveled hair, two sharp rays of light seemed to shoot forth making the three fill the chills and they did not dare to tarry

any longer as they hurriedly ran towards the outskirts.

Elder Han began walking towards Ye Fan and Pang Bo. His body was crinkled like dried wood, his black clothes seemed to be hanging on a short bamboo pole with disheveled white hair on top painting a very eerie picture. He was like a spirit and moved without any sound, his feet did not touch the ground as he floated over and the smell of death hung in the air.

Ye Fan and Pang Bo immediately began to feel nervous, this bone-thin old man was simply too eerie and made one's hair stand on end. At this moment they were not within the Ling Xu sanctuary and if the other party wanted to refine them into medicine neither shouting to heaven or earth would help.

Elder Han continued forward with his feet never touching the ground, there was a cold laughter that could be heard which sounded like the wails of an owl, making one simply feel the shivers, this was not a sound that a living person could possibly emit.

"Able to escape from the Jade Horned Snake's jaws and also snatching it's Jade Snake Orchid, not bad!" He continually nodded as he stared at Ye Fan and Pang Bo, two tyrannical lights could been seen shooting forth from behind his white hair as he scrutinised the two.

Being praised by elder Han made their bodies feel extremely uncomfortable especially when he said "Not bad", it felt as though he were commenting about their bodies rather than their performance. Ye Fan and Pang Bo were filled with trepidation, this

elder Han was like a ghost and he was currently already knocking on death's door, he wanted to find a way to refine a Yang Returning Pill and as he stared at them, they simply felt the shivers.

"Greetings Elder Han."

The two went forward to pay their respects, under the current circumstances they simply had no way to get away, the other side could ride on mystical rainbows to travel and would catch up to them in an instant.

"You two seem to be rather afraid of me, don't be like that, I'm actually quite fond of young people especially those who are filled with vigor and vitality." Elder Han's voice was low and hoarse as he walked forward, looking at Pang Bo then sweeping his gaze to Ye Fan, his eyes seemed to be blazing as though he were measuring up the value of his own items.

Under the pressure, Ye Fan and Pang Bo nearly attacked but at this moment Elder Han lightly patted Ye Fan's shoulder before floating away like a ghost, leaving just like that.

"I look well on the two of you, from today onwards... cultivate well." The words were meek and filled with death, in the blink of an eye he had disappeared from view as he flew towards the depths of the ruins.

"What are the intentions of this old foggy?" Pang Bo had an expression of befuddlement, he actually thought that elder Han

would attack them but contrary to expectations he just left like that.

"This old foggy……" Ye Fan's face was currently very gloomy as he cursed: "That undisguised lust in his eyes without any scruples, as though we were his personal effects, damn, I curse him to die within the depths of the ruins!"

Pang Bo suggested: "Let's hurry and leave this place while that old foggy hasn't attacked, the further the better."

"Running away or not it'll be the same. The only reason why he didn't immediately attack is surely because of elder Wu Qing Feng. Seeing his attitude, it seems as though he feels that everything is within the palm of his hand. I really can't imagine what he plans to do……"

In the distant forest, Han Fei Yu was puzzled. He initially thought that his granduncle would immediately capture Ye Fan to refine medicine and could not understand why he had only stopped for a brief moment before floating away. Li Lin and Li Yun were gritting their teeth as they saw elder Han leaving the area, they silently discussed as though they wanted to go over and kill Ye Fan and Pang Bo.

"Pang Bo is a celestial sprout, it's likely that his body has an imprint from elder Wu Qing Feng. If we kill them, I'm afraid that it will only take a while before they discover that we were the culprits." Finally the three people grudgingly left as they reined in their killing intent.

At this moment, a mystical rainbow streaked through the air and headed to the depths of the ruins.

“It’s Elder Wu Qing Feng.” Ye Fan and Pang Bo glanced at each other with expressions of delight.

Currently, the depths of the ruins were undoubtedly very dangerous but Ye Fan and Pang Bo did not back away and chose to continue going forward.

“Without entering the innermost depths of the ruins to scour the area at least once would be such a waste. Who knows, maybe we’ll be able to find something as valuable as the Jade Snake Orchid.” The two people felt that although danger was present in the depths of the ruins and drastic changes were occurring there, the other areas should be considered relatively safe.

The forest was calm and serene and walking forward for over ten miles, the two saw several rubble and debris and even the vegetation could not completely cover the traces of these ruins.

During this process, they confirmed that it was not all the bird and beasts that had ran away. Within several areas they spotted some fearsome creatures that were even stronger than the Jade Horned Snake hiding in their lairs fretfully.

“Thump!”

The oppressive sound once again resounded from the depths of the ruins. The two felt their hearts tremble as though something had grabbed onto it and there was an intense pain. The two people had physiques that far exceeded those of normal people but still felt extreme discomfort as they backed away several steps before stabilising their bodies. Their faces were pale and filled with alarm.

“What exactly is that thing……”

“Do you notice that the interval between each sound is getting shorter and shorter.”

Besides this, the two also felt that there was an indescribably boundless amount of life force that seemed to originate from the depths of the ruins.

“What are your thoughts on the matter?” Pang Bo questioned.

Ye Fan shook his head: “I have a ridiculous hypothesis, I feel that there is some peerless creature that has been sleeping for untold years and is currently slowly waking up.”

Pang Bo had a stunned expression: “You can’t be saying that the oppressive sound is actually his heartbeat right?”

At this point, a sound pierced through the air that continued to linger on as over ten mystical rainbows streaked through the air rushing towards the depths of the ruins.

# Chapter 54: Ancient Palace Hall

“It seems that the Ling Xu sanctuary elders have been alarmed and are currently all headed to this area.”

Currently, the sky had already turned dark and the sky was filled with stars.

The two people continued advancing for several miles and unknowingly entered a ruined piece of land. The area was desolate with nary a grass in sight and could absolutely be considered a scorched earth. Only remains of broken rock and shattered debris lay everywhere with nothing else in sight.

In the night, this area was emitting a mysterious aura and there was a faint black mist that was circulating.

“It’s already been several thousand to tens of thousands of years, these ruins still don’t have any vegetation growing, it’s really strange. No wonder it’s been designated as a barren land where even birds don’t take a dump.” Pang Bo mumbled bitterly, he felt hungry and thirsty and had wanted to pick some fruits to quench his hunger.

He had just spoken when suddenly an immense force was felt, he stumbled before falling to the ground in the darkness. Ye Fan was speechless, he could not believe his eyes. Pang jumped up as he looked back and immediately felt shivers as he backed away.

Just up ahead, a cold body was floating there, bone was wrapped

in wrinkled skin as though it were dried up wood. There was actually a shrivelled corpse there!

"This..... what is going on? Where did this dry corpse come from?" Pang Bo felt his hair stand on end. A shrivelled corpse suddenly appeared for no reason, anyone would feel unsettled.

Ye Fan was also stupefied, he had not seen how the corpse appeared. They continued to survey their surroundings, this barren piece of ruins besides being full of debris there simply was not anything else. Being like this made one feel unsettled, this piece of land had been here since ancient times and some 'dirty things'* may exist here that caused this.

[T/N* 'dirty thing' in Chinese refers to evil spirits and ghosts]

The sky became darker and darker as even the lights from the stars grew dim. The surroundings of the ruins became pitch black as the faint mist continued to swirl.

"Why is it so eerie? It's actually getting colder and colder....." Pang Bo was nervous as he broke out in cold sweat: "Where did this corpse come from....."

"Let's hurry and leave this place." Ye Fan felt that something was amiss and wanted to immediately leave.

"What sort of nonsensical place is this? How can it be so strange and evil!" Pang Bo softly muttered, his back already drenched in

cold sweat.

"Bang!"

Suddenly, Pang Bo was once again flipped onto the ground and as he gingerly climbed back up there was another dried corpse by his side.

"Who..... who is so inconsiderate, randomly throwing around a corpse." This joke was simply not funny as the two people felt chills throughout their body as their goosebumps stood up while they continued to carefully stare at their surroundings.

Two dried up corpses laid on the ground, their bodies were covered with some clothing but upon lightly touching they would disintegrate. Who knew how long they had existed.

"What exactly are you! Come out!"

"Bang!"

Another corpse appeared once again knocking down Pang Bo.

"Your granddaddy, you think that I Pang Bo am easily bullied!" Pang Bo was terrified but incensed at the same time, Ye Fan who was beside him did not get hit by the corpses at all.

"What's out there, hurry and reveal yourself!" Ye Fan exclaimed.

“Boom!”

The ancient ruins seemed to violently tremble as Ye Fan was tossed into the air and Pang Bo cut a sorry figure as he tumbled into the distance.

“Bang!”, “Bang!”, “Bang!”

This time, it was not just Pang Bo but Ye Fan also had been hit several times as ancient corpse after ancient corpse fell from the sky and knocked the two around. If it were a normal physical body, their bones might have already been shattered. However, the two people had exceptional physiques and were not in any danger.

The ground was littered to tens of corpses and the entire area seemed eerie, cold that seemed to pierce the bone like one had been put into an icehouse permeated the area and the two people shivered, they simply did not know what was going on.

“Shuaaa”

At this moment, Ye Fan suddenly felt all the hairs on his back stand as though something was flying closer at high speeds. He did not bother to turn around as he hurriedly dashed forward while maneuvering his body to dodge, swift as lightning.

Two indistinct green lights had shot past his body and stopped several tens of metres away, it seemed like ghostly fire as it

continually jumped around. At the same time, within the ruins it was pitch black like black ink such that one could not even see their five fingers in front of them, the stars in the sky were complete shrouded making it impossible to see.

“This place is haunted!” Pang Bo unconsciously attempted to grab at something but it was a pity that his bronze plaque was not here with him.

At this instant, besides the two indistinct lights they could not see anything. A black mist had thoroughly shrouded the entire area. The two green lights were as big as a person’s face and seemed like two ghostly fires, eerily it also resembled two large eyes that seemed sinister in the dark mist.

“There really is some ‘dirty thing’!” Ye Fan and Pang Bo were beginning to feel more nervous.

“Shuaaaa”

This time, the speed of the two balls of green light were much faster and in the blink of an eye they had already gotten closer. They were still aimed at Ye Fan and although Pang Bo wanted to help, four to five corpses that fell down knocked him away.

The green lights moved faster and faster and had completely locked down on Ye Fan. The lights continually moved haphazardly and finally with a flash the two green balls disappeared and entered his body.

“Ye Fan!” Pang Bo shouted but had no way to prevent anything from happening.

At the same time, Ye Fan felt an icy coldness within his sea of bitterness, as though it had been frozen. He hurriedly tried to circulate the mystical arts recorded in the Dao Scripture and a golden light was emitted.

“Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!”

The sound of a howling sea exploded and Ye Fan’s sea of bitterness became a vast golden body of water, surging violently sending the two balls of green light spiraling to the sky.

“Boom!”

There was a loud rumbling noise and the two balls of green light seemed to be frightened as they rushed out of Ye Fan’s sea of bitterness, moving speedily away. At the same time, Ye Fan’s sea of bitterness immediately regained its calm and the soybean sized golden light hung there like a divine lamp.

“Shuaaa”

The green lights were exceptionally fast and upon rushing out of Ye fan’s sea of bitterness they immediately rushed towards Pang Bo, speedily entering his body. Pang Bo cursed before falling like a stick to the ground, leaving Ye Fan shocked as he rushed over.

“Pang Bo, what’s the matter?”

Before Ye Fan even got close, Pang Bo suddenly sat up. In his eyes a faint green light could be seen as he stood up letting out a low growl like a wild beast as he coldly stared at Ye Fan for several minutes before shifting his gaze.

“What are you? Leave his body!” Ye Fan shouted.

‘Boom!”

At this moment, turbulent winds began to bellow as the sand and rock flew into the sky, the black mist surged up as Pang Bo stood there, his messy hair was flying about as he suddenly took big strides and left, the surrounding tens of corpses all floated and followed him into the depths of the ruins.

The area suddenly became calm as the stars in the sky appeared once again and in the distance Pang Bo could be seen flying with black mist surrounding him, sand was flying all around and tens of corpses were moving together with him.

“Pang Bo!” Ye Fan shouted as he began to chase.

Pang Bo’s current speed was simply too fast and could compare to the speed of those elders riding mystical rainbows, swift like the wind he disappeared from Ye Fan’s view in no time at all.

Pang Bo was currently possessed and his life and death were

hanging in the balance, Ye Fan was anxious but he could not keep up with the speed.

The area ahead was vast and endless but Ye Fan had no other option but to continue deeper, he could not be bothered about what dangers were possibly there.

Late into the night, Ye Fan had travelled for many miles and finally seemed to be reaching the innermost depths of the ruins. The oppressive sound was even more forceful here and after a period of time it would resound. Each time it felt as though someone were beating on his heart and Ye Fan's countenance was pale as he stumbled along. With his exceptional physique he was barely able to hold on and if it were a normal person their heart would likely have already burst.

The vegetation here gradually thinned and the disintegrated remains of old constructions became more abundant. The spiritual qi was dense and thriving with vitality, such that it was much thicker, it was simply a better treasured land than that of the Ling Xu sanctuary.

"Dong!"

An oppressive sound resounded again as Ye Fan scaled a mountain and looked into the distance. The innermost depths of the ruins were just up ahead, ancient constructions were clustered together and although they were dilapidated and mostly ruined, one could imagine the majesty of the area back in its heyday.

What was most shocking was that the endless amounts of ancient constructions were actually surrounding a volcano and the lights from the fire shot to the sky, lava could be seen gurgling within the volcano and although it did not flow out, the scene was stupefying and half the sky was painted in red.

Endless majestic ancient constructions surrounded a volcano and made one feel mystified.

At this moment, Ye Fan was shocked because he saw an unbelievable scene. Following the bubbling of the lava, there was a translucent majestic ancient palace that seemed to be bobbing up and down within the lava.

“Dong!”

The oppressive sound actually originated from within the volcano, or more accurately, from the ancient palace within the lava. It was bright and translucent, emitting an aura of timeless age as divine clouds seemed to float around it.

A 1.5 metre tall divine bird could be seen amongst the cluster of ancient constructions below the volcano, its entire body was flashing with golden light as electricity snaked around its body. This was the Lightning Bird that had fought with the ape king two days ago. It seemed to be completely unscathed and the outcome of the ape king was rather clear.

The Lightning Bird was a supreme species of fierce birds and elder Wu Qing Feng had mentioned that even if he were to meet it

he would only be able to avoid it. It controlled the entire region there and no living thing dared to go near it.

Of course, it was not the only existence there. Within the cluster of constructions, there were over twenty fierce birds and barbaric beasts, all unique and a majority of them had never been heard or seen before, absolutely mystifying.

Examples of such: A grasshopper with silver wings that were as thick as arms, spanning two metres, its entire body flashing as though made of white gold. It silently lay there and no other creature dared to go near it.

A body of a bull and head of a lion, its entire body covered in green scales, over ten metres in height like a small mountain as it stood there, holding its own territory.

Over twenty terrifying creatures were enough to show how frightening the depths ruins. At this moment they were all gathered around the volcano and seemed to be nervously looking at the ancient palace floating within the lava.

At this point, Ye Fan had finally found Pang Bo sitting under the volcano within a patch of the ruins as he finally let loose a sigh of relief. Elder Wu Qing Feng and the other elders had surrounded him and thoroughly trapped him within.

There were over twenty elders from Ling Xu sanctuary and their numbers almost matched the number of birds and beasts, it could be said that the strengths of the two factions were rather equal.

“That’s……”

Ye Fan realised that he had miscounted, there were some living things atop the volcano. A two metre tall being whose arms were covered in scales appeared majestic under the glow of the lava. By his side there was a young female, she did not have arms but had two golden wings and her hair was like golden silk that flashed with light. There was also a python that was with them, it horns on its head and claws under its belly, it had transcended the level of a snake and had already become a river dragon from legends.

Ye Fan felt shivers in his heart as he recalled that these were the great demons from legends that could turn into human beings.

“There’s more…..” Ye Fan was in shock, he realised that on another side of the volcano, there were another three great demons there of which one was a giant being, extremely stalwart exceeding 3 metres and although he had a complete human body, there were two bull horns atop his head.

At the same time, Ye Fan noticed that there were four to five genuine humans, one of which was the Ling Xu sanctuary sect leader who he had seen in the distance. By his side were four old man with white hair and mustaches, they were the closest humans to the volcano.

It was clear that positions were decided based on strength and the several birds and beasts were below the volcano together with the Ling Xu elders . Atop the volcano were existences on a higher

level, their objectives in coming here were the same and it had something to do with the ancient palace.

All the experts were nervously looking towards the opening of the volcano, the lava was bubbling and a divine glow was emitted from the ancient palace, as though the power of time were flowing and made one feel a timeless ancient aura.

# Chapter 55: Demon Emperor's Burial Mound

The few elders from Ling Xu sanctuary began to work on Pang Bo as one of the elder's shot forth a red light that became a scarlet web, each strand was sparkling, translucent and was flashing with a fresh red glow, it was like a carnelian being refined as it flew towards Pang Bo, enveloping him.

The current Pang Bo was lifeless and had a dazed expression, only his pair of eyes were flickering with green rays of light. As he stretched out both hands, his gestures made him appear to be entrusted by the heavens as he raised his hands up to open up the large red web and tear it apart.

Another elder was emitting rays of purple light as he held a violet eight trigrams mirror in his hand and directed it towards Pang Bo, mists of purple could be seen, resplendent and dazzling as it shrouded Pang Bo, keeping him in place as the dense purple aura circulated.

"Shuaaa"

The red web successfully landed and trapped Pang Bo securely. Elder Wu Qing Feng stepped forward and his finger was like a sword as lights shot forth, divine energy sealed Pang Bo making him unable to move a single finger.

Ye Fan was most concerned about Pang Bo and seeing the few elders act in this way together with their expressions when doing

so, he had a smiling expression as he let loose a sigh of relief. It seemed that things would be alright.

“Dong!”

An oppressive sound was once again transmitted from within the volcano and Ye Fan had long anticipated this as he executed the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture. The golden coloured dot within his sea of bitterness immediately released wisps of divine light that flowed towards his heart, instantly making him feel more comfortable unlike the previous times where there was the acute pain.

Ye Fan carefully scrutinised and realised that the supreme birds and beasts could not help but tremble and even the ten odd elders from Ling Xu sanctuary shuddered, all affected by the sound. This made him surprised, having eaten the divine fruit and drinking from the divine spring really allowed one to shed their mortal body and exchange the bones. When comparing only their physiques, it seemed that he was not much worse off compared to the elders.

“Dong!”, “Dong!”, “Dong!”

Three successive sounds rang out in a very short interval, the lava within the volcano surged up as streaks of blazing light rushed towards the sky, night had seemingly turned to day.

The lava was gurgling as it flowed from the volcano, the bright and dazzling ancient palace floated upwards and released a strong aura of life.

Atop the volcano, the Ling Xu sect leader as well as the four grand elders released golden light that shrouded their bodies as they steadily advanced closer. On the other side, the great demons that had turned to human form also advanced, unafraid of the flowing lava as they stared unblinkingly at the ancient palace. Only when they were right before the opening of the volcano did their eyes sweep over to look at the few human cultivators.

Amongst them, the man whose arms were covered in scales shouted: “Humans, you are all simply too much! The primitive ruins have already been split into two and you people already have the Ling Xu immortal sanctuary, now you actually have the cheek to enter our territory to contest for the immortal depository, could it be that you want to create a conflict between us?”

Not far away, the huge man that had bull horns and was almost three metres tall shouted in a deep voice: “If you want to fight, go ahead and try taking a piece of the pie of this ancient palace!”

The sect leader of the Ling Xu sanctuary and the four grand elders were not afraid as one amongst them stood forth and said: “This piece of ruins is something inherited from our human ancestors, now that a precious treasure has emerged us coming here to look for an opportunity is well justified. What seems to be wrong about this?”

“This primitive ruins is precisely where we live in and we naturally cannot tolerate you coming here to steal our treasure!” The young woman with wings in place of hands and a head full of golden hair shouted: “If you people really want a piece of the pie,

don’t blame us for being discourteous!”

“This area is an inheritance left behind by our human ancestors, the few of you have merely borrowed the area to stay in. How can you claim it as your territory?” The sect leader of Ling Xu sanctuary was unperturbed as he calmly spoke, but at the same time he exuded an intimidating and imposing presence.

“The last words left behind from my river dragon ancestors was that this place is not the native homeland of you humans, rather, it was the imperial capital of the demon race back in their golden age and has no connection to your people whatsoever.” The river dragon whose head had a solitary horn and claws under his belly spoke human words although he had not transformed into a human. His strength was clearly not weaker than the others but it is just that he was not adept at transforming from his beast form.

“Impossible, the constructions in this place have all the makings of the human race, how could it possibly have anything to do with the demon race?” A grand elder within the Ling Xu sanctuary questioned. Both sides bickered with neither giving an inch, it seemed they were all really interested in obtaining the ancient palace.

“Dong!”

The oppressive sound continued to resound from within the ancient palace and even the few great demons and the group with the Ling Xu sect elder seemed to be unable to bear it as their faces began to turn ugly.

The frothing lava was abnormally red and lascivious as it continued to flow, seemingly like fresh blood. The bright and dazzling ancient palace continued to rise as it gradually seemed to be spilling out from the volcanic crater.

A great demon wanted to stand forth but was held back by the old river dragon: “We have already waited for several days, why can’t we wait for a while longer. We will let it break through the seal from the ancient times on it’s own. Let’s not meddle with it, in the event that anything untoward occurs.”

“Demonic writing, it’s the demonic words from our demon race!” At this moment the big man with two bull horns on his head shouted excitedly: “Quick look! Those are the emperor writings of our demon race and must certainly have been left behind by a demon emperor!”

The entire ancient palace was formed from five coloured divine jade and was sparkling and translucent, its brilliance was dazzling. What was mystical was that there were several ancient words that were carved onto it, some seemed akin to dragons and phoenixes, others were akin to the black turtle or unicorn, it was certainly the demon race’s emperor writing from the ancient times.

“What else do you have to say? Hurry and leave. This is clearly something that was left behind by a great emperor from our demon race and has no connection to any of you.”

At this moment, the ancient palace was emitting a divine glow and a boundless aura that could terrify one’s heart, a five coloured divine glow was swirling clearly extraordinary.

Hearing these words, the sect leader's face changed as he stared carefully at the ancient palace before he had an agitated expression as though he had remembered something: "I know! This is the burial ground of the last great emperor of the eastern badlands demon race!"

The few great demons heard this and their expressions revealed shock as they all stared at the ancient five coloured palace, earnestly and carefully scrutinised, they were stunned.

The old river dragon stood up tall as it stretched forth the top half of its body, with a serious expression it said in a trembling voice: "It is indeed the tomb of the great emperor of our demon race, exactly as described by our ancestors!"

No one could have imagined that this ancient palace that was formed from five coloured divine jade was the burial mound of the last emperor of the demon race. It was actually hidden deep within the volcano and the seal had only recently loosened causing it to float upwards with the lava, once again seeing the light of day.

"The last great emperor of the demon race from eastern badlands, it's him, it must be him!" The sect leader of the Ling Xu sanctuary continually muttered as he seemed rather dazed.

The few great demons were very bold and confident with justice on their side as the old river dragon said: "It's good that you know. This place is the burial mound of the final divine emperor from our demon race and has nothing to do with you humans. Hurry

and leave.” The other great demons exploded forth with an immense pressure as the entire area overflowed with demonic qi that seemed to shroud the very stars, permeating the air and resulting in a sombre atmosphere.

The sect elder came back to his senses and seemed more agitated than the few great demons as he said in a trembling voice: “Although this place is the burial mound of a great emperor from your demon race, it contains a precious treasure from our human race. Today is a fitting day for its retrieval.”

“Nonsense! The burial mound of a divine emperor from our demon race, why would it have a precious treasure from your human race? It’s clear that you want to rob the burial mound of the great emperor from our demon race!”

The few great demons were clearly incensed as they moved forward to block the people from Ling Xu sanctuary, seemingly ready to act at any time.

The sect elder regained his calm as he said: “What I said was all truth. Back then the final great emperor of the eastern badlands demon race, had through hard work and serendipity, managed to unite the entire demon race that had been divided for tens of thousands of years and posed a huge threat to the human race of eastern badlands. The most valuable treasure from the eastern badlands of the human race was lost at that time and it was rumoured to have been taken by the demon emperor. The immortal canon that shocked the entire eastern badlands.

The Dao Scripture was also separated by somebody at that time

and an important part of it was lost. Later on, there was evidence that this was the doings of the Demon Emperor. Thinking about it, it's clear that the most valuable treasure of the eastern badlands as well as the most important part of the Dao Scripture are here and should once again see the light of day!"

Once these words were said, the few great demons were in a daze as their eyes were filled with intense desire. Although the demon race could not cultivate the Dao Scripture which was the most profound of the immortal canon of the human race, they had already decided to keep it with them. As for the most valuable treasure of the human race, if it really existed, they were certainly not going to just let it go.

The sect leader of Ling Xu sanctuary had no fear as he strode forward with large strides while he was in a confrontation with the few great demons.

"Dong!"

The ancient palace that was formed from five coloured jade once again let out an oppressive sound and the energy of the seal was fast depleting. The ancient palace was nearly level with the mouth of the volcano, the shining red clouds were moving about as multi-coloured divine rays of light were flickering. The burial mound of the final great emperor of the eastern badlands demon race would once again emerge onto the world.

At the base of the volcano, among the cluster of palace ruins, the lightning bird and other exceptional birds and beasts as well as the ten odd elders from the Ling Xu sanctuary could not control themselves any longer as they slowly made their way up the

volcano.

In the distance, Ye Fan personally witnessed everything and his heart was palpitating however he did not have to strength to contest and could only silently observe.

# Chapter 56: Emotionally Moved

A mystical rainbow suddenly streaked through the sky from within the cluster of ancient constructions, dazzling as it lit up the night sky and flew towards the mountain that Ye Fan was currently perched on. This made him shocked as he thought that the expert had spotted him, he held his breath and hid motionlessly behind a large boulder.

“Shuaaa”

The mystical rainbow streaked through the sky and landed atop the mountain. Elder Wu Qing Feng placed Pang Bo in a hidden area before dashing off and rejoining the others to advance towards the top of the volcano.

Ye Fan quickly ran out from behind the large boulder and hastily moved forward. At this moment Pang Bo was already sealed by the few elders from Ling Xu sanctuary and his eyes were shut, body rigid as he lay there motionless. His body seemed to be shrouded in a light green aura and the colour of his face looked abnormal, the faint green glow seemed to be gently swirling around his body.

“Exactly what thing has entered into his body?” Ye Fan did not dare to carelessly touch Pang Bo’s body, it had been sealed by several of the elders and divine energy was undulating.

At this moment, the atmosphere at the mouth of the volcano was very tense, human cultivators faced the demon race and both sides seemed to be on a knife’s edge, neither giving an inch as though a

big battle could ensue at any time.

The body of the old river dragon that was covered in scarlet red scales stood tall like a blood coloured great wall there, giving one immense pressure as he loudly shouted: “The people from Ling Xu sanctuary, do you really want to break the peace of several hundred years and start a war with us?”

The sect elder argued strongly without giving an inch: “The most valuable treasure of the human race of eastern badlands has to be retrieved no matter what. How can it remain it hands of the demon race. As for the most important part of the immortal canon: Dao Scripture, it should once again see the light of day. It has already been lost for tens of thousands of years and should naturally be in the hands of the human race once again.”

The young woman that had a pair of golden wings was beautiful and moving, her voice was sultry and seductive but filled with strength and killing intent as she said: “This is the burial mound of the great demon emperor but you humans claim that the human race’s most valuable treasure as well as the Dao Scripture is located here. It’s clear that you guys are merely finding an excuse to raid the tomb. If you people really want a fight, please go ahead!”

The Ling Xu sect leader was not the least bit guilty and firmly said: “Whether it is or isn’t, once we open the ancient palace we will know. If there isn’t the eastern badlands human race’s most valuable treasure or the Dao Scripture, we are willing to immediately admit our mistake and face any consequences. However, if the two items are really there we should be able to leave with them. How’s that? In this way we can avoid a war and

both sides would stand to gain.”

The large man with two horns on his head spoke with a rumbling voice like that of a large bell: “If there isn’t the precious treasure or the Dao Scripture, I’m sure the few of you will definitely not be able to control yourselves and take some of the items left behind by the demon emperor while claiming that they are the items. I understand you humans the best, saying a deer is a horse, confusing right and wrong, even black can become white, these are the strengths of your humans. The burial mound of the great demon emperor should not be profaned by the likes of you!”

The atmosphere became more and more intense with neither side giving an inch, it seemed as though this fight was unavoidable.

“The few of you great demons are too overbearing, no matter what we will be retrieving the sacred object of our eastern badlands human race.” The sect leader had a firm attitude as he once again moved towards the ancient palace.

“You have forced our hand!” The beautiful young woman with a head full of golden hair expanded her wings and thousands upon thousands of golden divine feathers seemed like golden divine arrows as they shot towards the sect leader.

The Ling Xu sect leader’s robes were fluttering as a purple aura emanated out, thereafter it seemed as though an angry sea were surging violently blocking the endless rain of divine feathers.

“Kill!” The young woman of the demon race said in a cold voice, a

divine glow shrouded her body as more divine feathers covered the sky, numerous and densely packed, bright and resplendent as they appeared to form one body like a giant golden web that covered everything. It forced its way through the purple mist and enveloped the sect leader.

From within the Ling Xu Sanctuary sect leader's body, a purple copper furnace appeared as a purple qi filled the air, its splendor radiated all around and the purple glow shot forth and shattered all the divine feathers. Finally, with a "Bang!" it formed into a golden light that blazed in the sky that was simply piercing to the eye.

The golden haired young woman was cold as her wings spread and a pair of golden divine swords shot forth, sparkling and translucent, dazzling and brilliant swirling with a divine glow just like the sun as they flew towards the sect leader with killing intent.

The Ling Xu sect leader lightly pointed his finger and the purple copper furnace by his side shot to the sky, spewing forth endless amounts of purple flame and enveloped the divine swords, blazing with an intense heat attempting to melt the swords.

"Boom!"

Two divine swords were like two flashes of lightning, flying through the purple coloured sky and trembling with such power that even the sky seemed to shake.

"Kill!'

“Block them!”

At this moment the few great demons all acted in unison, demonic qi filled the air and killing intent abounded as the demonic energy surged like a roaring sea, raging waves that continually surged engulfing the sky.

At the same time, the four honoured elders of Ling Xu sanctuary also moved forward and the spring of divine energy within their sea of bitterness flared as divine lights shone and lit the entire sky, dispersing the demonic qi as the four experts acted together.

The place was brimming with demonic qi as the mysterious splendor filled the air. Several Great Demons and humans experts continued to wage war as red lights were being radiated all over. All kinds of weapons filled the skies, causing the night sky to light up as if it was daytime.

Mystical Drums, Immortal Lamps, Copper Furnaces, Golden Swords, Eight Trigrams Mirror, Blood Blades, Curling Dragon’s Scale Blade and so on. It was as if they were living things, they were taking in and sending out large amounts of divine lights, crowding together and colliding unceasingly. The resounding sound continued to linger on and with every collision of divine energy, the skies trembled.

At this moment, the Lightning Bird with it’s golden glittering body with sparks of electricity flickering about, a silver centipede that was flowing like molten silver and other outstanding

terrifying and vicious beasts have all arrived at the volcanic crater.

In the distance, Ye Fan could not calm down as he looked from afar, the big battle at the volcanic crater left him dazed and filled him with endless yearning.

If one were to say that Ye Fan had no thoughts about the burial mound of the great demon emperor, that would be impossible. It was simply that he did not have the strength to do so. He really wanted to obtain that section of the Dao Scripture, its name resounded across the eastern badlands and was the most important section that even the great demon emperor viewed it with great importance. It would certainly be exceptional and was something that he really needed as he lacked a cultivation mystical art to progress with.

As for the most valuable treasure of the human race of eastern badlands, Ye Fan did not know what it was and thus did not have much desire for it. As a result the Dao Scripture section created an incomparable longing within Ye Fan.

Although he had obtained an ancient scripture from within the bronze coffin, the engravings within his heart did not seem like a cultivation art but rather a summary of something that he currently had no way to comprehend.

The Dao Scripture was known throughout the heavens and was an immortal canon of legends. In the tens of thousands of years within the vast eastern badlands, few ancient scriptures could match up to it and none of them could surpass it. It recorded many mystifying and mysterious cultivation arts and from the

cultivating of the wheel of life as well as establishing of the sea of bitterness, it was what Ye Fan desperately needed.

“Dong!”, “Dong!”, “Dong!”

At this moment, the oppressive sound continually resounded like a heart that was beating violently, five coloured lights shot to the heavens from the mouth of the volcano and all the demonic qi as well as divine energy in the area was dispersed.

The lava that was scarlet red like fresh blood began to flare as it continually flowed from the mouth of the volcano dyeing the entire sky in red. The majestic ancient palace bobbed within the lava, bright and resplendent, sparkling and translucent and filled with an aura of timeless age.

“Boom!”

There was a final rumbling noise as the ancient palace slowly floated from within the lava, lines of complicated demonic writing flashed but they could no longer seal the ancient palace as it continued to float upwards.

“Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!”

The volcano trembled as the majestic ancient palace rushed out of the volcanic crater, dazzling lights lit the entire area as though it were daytime, the stars in the sky seemed dim in contrast as the five coloured divine light swirled.

The few great demons as well as the experts from Ling Xu sanctuary stopped fighting as they all rushed towards the ancient palace, all wanting to be the first to open the palace doors and enter to obtain the great demon emperor’s inheritance as well as any other hidden treasures.

# *Chapter 57: The Golden Book With A Single Page*

When it came to speed, the golden haired young woman of the demon race was undoubtedly the fastest of the experts. Her wings flapped and the sky seemed to have two golden flashes of lightning that streaked across as she became the first to reach the ancient palace, stretching forth her wings to push open the multi-coloured jade door.

“Shmm”

However, contrary to their expectations, a five coloured divine glow shot out and sent her flying. Even an expert great demon like her was also sent tumbling five six times through the air. The others had a sharp intake of breath as they became wary and took out their weapons, continuing forward in a bid to open the tomb of the demon emperor.

The entire ancient palace was formed from multi-coloured divine jade and seemed to have been transported here from ancient times, giving one a feeling of the weight of time as well as historic vibes. The translucent and sparkling ancient palace had many ancient words engraved on its foundations. The dragon-shaped wordings were forceful, phoenix-shaped ones graceful, black tortoise ones were steady and the qilin ones vibrant. Like dragons and phoenixes, tortoises and qilins, they were like iron hooks with silver strokes of writing, simply majestic and forceful. This was the writings of the demon race emperor from the ancient times.

[T/N: Qilin is a Chinese mythological animal]

These writings seemed to have a mysterious energy and the few times the group rushed forth they were knocked away by the five coloured divine glow, making it difficult to even get close and attempt to close the big doors of the ancient palace.

“Boom!”

The few great demons together with the experts from Ling Xu sanctuary cooperated to launch an attack, violet coloured copper furnace, golden sword, eight trigrams mirror, curling dragon’s scale blade and so on all struck towards the ancient palace’s main door, finally managing to shake it up and with a rumbling noise, managed to open up a small crack.

An ancient aura was emitted and strong fluctuations filled with life like the vastness of the ocean surging violently, sent the all the people present flying backwards.

“Dong!’

That oppressive and forceful sound resounded again and the faces of the people in the surroundings changed as they felt an acute pain in their hearts. After stabilising themselves, nobody stopped but rather continued rushing towards the magnificent ancient palace.

“Shmm, Shmm, Shmm”

Lights flashed and a myriad of different weapons flashed with divine lights, constantly exchanging attacks giving off loud rings as the experts from both the demon race as well as human cultivators began to battle in front of the five coloured ancient palace. Nobody wanted the other side to enter first and each wanted to be the first to enter.

Before the majestic ancient palace, the lights were dazzling and demonic qi filled the air. Both sides were fully engaged in the battle, life and death hinged in the balance and everyone was using their full abilities, the burial mound of the demon emperor was simply too important.

Blazing lights flashed and the entire sky seemed to be shaking as various weapons continued to spew forth divine lights, weaving about to attack, an aura of death pierced the skies as the mystical forces rushed forth. The area around the ancient palace was flaring up.

The big battle was extremely intense and thirty seconds had barely passed before a grand elder was beaten back as he could no longer hold on and had his chest subsequently pierced through by a great demon, a severed heart could be seen beating in his hands, fresh blood pumping out and splashing onto the great demon's body making him seem even more savage.

The sect leader's countenance grew colder and his hands seemed to move in a strange trajectory in the air, causing the violet copper furnace to tremble and release endless amounts of purple mist, causing two great demons to be sucked into the copper furnace in no time at all.

“Boom!”

A purple divine fire could be seen bellowing towards the sky and heart wrenching cries could be heard from the copper furnace, the two great demons had been burnt alive and only two wisps of smoke could be seen floating out.

Far away, Ye Fan was feeling apprehensive, this level of desperate killing was simply terrifying and being a modern man he found it hard to accept. He started to seriously contemplate whether there was any meaning in becoming a cultivator and was it worth it to do so.

At this point, the few beasts and birds as well as the Ling Xu sanctuary elders also began to battle ferociously. A beast that had a human form with a broad mouth and long fangs, covered in fur that was roughly half an inch thick, seemingly extremely vicious, ripped an elder into two halves causing blood to fly everywhere and his dismembered body fell, it was a spectacle too horrible to endure. By the side, an elder from the Ling Xu sanctuary chopped down with a demon cleaving blade and severed a ferocious bird in two, over ten metres were covered in cold light as the glow from the chopping blade shot forth, fresh blood stained the ground and the smell of blood permeated the area.

Amongst the ten over extraordinary beasts and birds, the Lightning Bird was the most fearsome. It was extremely fast as it rushed to the sky, using its golden claws to rend an elder’s divine drums apart as hundreds of lightning and thunder seemed to accompany it, numerous and densely packed as thunder resounded

and lightning flashed as though several ten metre long blades of light were hurtling forward.

"Crack!"

The elder attempted to dodge by riding a mystical rainbow but simply could not evade the hundreds of lightning that rained on him, burning his body black as he trembled before falling into the volcano crater and was engulfed by the surging magma.

This battle was bloody, filled with injuries and deaths as humans and demons alike pitted their lives in an attempt to be the first to enter the demon emperor burial mound.

"Is this the life of a cultivator……" Ye Fan muttered, his heart was restless as the scene in front of him was totally in conflict with his thoughts of a carefree life, journeying through the world and riding a mystical rainbow.

"It's possible that different cultivators will have different roads they traverse." Having said this, his vision seemed to clear and his gaze became firm: "Since I've already chosen my path, I should walk on it step by step. My fate should not be placed into another's hands, I need to become strong……"

Suddenly, a soft sound knocking sound broke Ye Fan out of his reverie. A green mist was shrouding Pang Bo's body and there seemed to be a green glow that was slowly getting brighter from within his body.

“Chi Chi Chi”

Streak after streak of light came shooting from within Pang Bo’s body, those were the Dao writings that elder Wu Qing Feng had used to seal Pang Bo but the energy had all rushed out and the seal was no longer effective!

At the same time, a faint green light was released from Pang Bo’s sea of bitterness, his body began to tremble as his eyes opened and two green lights could be seen, it extremely demonic.

Besides this, symbols also began to appear on Pang Bo’s forehead and face, some seemed to be meaningless stripes while others seemed like words.

The symbols that were akin to words seemed like dragons or phoenixes or perhaps the black tortoise, sometimes it looked like a snaking flying dragon serpent

Ye Fan was stunned, although he could not understand the meaning of the symbols, he had heard the description of these symbols and they were clearly similar to the demon

race’s writing.

There was a dim green light within Pang Bo’s eyes as he rigidly sat up then soundlessly stood up, coldly glaring at Ye Fan as though he wanted to attack. Pang Bo slowly raised his fist but it was trembling, as though it did not want to listen to his order.

“Pang Bo!” Ye Fan loudly called, he realised that Pang Bo’s consciousness was not completely asleep and was clearly fighting whatever was controlling his body.

Hearing this shout, the body began to sway as the demon writings on Pang Bo’s forehead and face began to dim. However, a low pitched growl was emitted and Pang Bo’s entire body began to tremble violently as the green glow expanded, his forehead and face was filled with demonic writings before everything became calm once again.

This time, he did not even look towards Ye Fan but rather turned to face the volcano and a hoarse voice could be heard: “It was only that I intentionally let you guys seal me……”

Ye Fan was shocked, it seemed that this unknown entity that controlled Pang Bo’s body was very frightening.

At this point, the battle before the ancient palace was even more intense and the palace doors had already been shoved open. Both sides were in an extreme struggle and the Ling Xu sect elder as well as two great demons already had one foot inside the palace.

Suddenly, Pang Bo turned to look at Ye Fan before flying into the air, turning into a green light and rushing towards the ancient palace in the volcanic crater.

The intense fight in front of the ancient palace seemed to be deadlocked as both sides had injuries and casualties. It was now that Pang Bo suddenly appeared shocking the Ling Xu elders and the few great demons that saw the demon writings on his face were

filled with bewilderment.

Under the current circumstances, no one could extricate themselves from the battle to care about him. As the Ling Xu sect leader and two great demons entered into the ancient palace, Pang Bo left a mirage in the air as he closely rushed in after the three experts.

The sky was dazzling as the remaining two grand elders as well as great demons rushed into the palace one after another. Below, the Lightning Bird as well as other extraordinary beasts and birds together with the normal elders all flew into the air as they also rushed towards the ancient palace.

“Dong!”

At this moment, an oppressive sound resounded from within the palace and it was by far the most violent and powerful.

“Chi!”

Two elders from the Ling Xu sanctuary immediately spat out two big mouthfuls of blood as they staggered and stumbled backwards. The body of a silver centipede that was as thick as an arm began to crack and finally the body that seemed to be cast from silver began to fully break down before the ancient palace.

The ferocious beast who was like a small mountain, towering over ten metres with the body of a bull and head of a lion whose

entire body was covered in green scales, was flying towards the ancient palace when the sound resounded and he spit forth a large mouthful of blood together with a shattered heart.

“Dong!”, “Dong!”, “Dong!”

The oppressive sound continued to resound and the extraordinary birds and beasts as well as elders who had first entered the ancient palace all began to retreat, their seven orifices were leaking blood and bodies were badly hurt. The few people and birds and beasts that were weaker had died on the spot inside as their chests split open and fresh blood gurgled forth without any chance for them to retreat.

In the distance, Ye Fan was petrified. This burial mound of the demonic emperor seemed to contain some energy that was incredibly frightening. Although he was far away, he could still feel the growing strength of the energy and he felt as though he would not be able to endure the oppressive sound much longer.

The majestic ancient palace swayed as the people inside began to battle fiercely, the few great demons were excoriating while the sect elder as well as grand elders were constantly shouting.

“Bang!”

There was a flash of green light as Pang Bo’s figure could once again be seen before the door of the ancient palace, as though he had charged out by killing. His face was pale as he caused the several corpses on the ground to violently fly into the sky, filled

with untold amounts of strength as they all flew towards the mountain that Ye Fan was on before heavily landing on the ground.

Ye Fan felt shivers as he saw Pang Bo's face which had green mist swirling around it sweep a gaze over before letting out an angry howl and rushed into the ancient palace again.

Ye Fan carefully turned the corpses over and began to carefully scrutinise and found a strange occurrence on one of the bodies of the fierce beasts. There seemed to be very faint wisps of golden light that were flowing out from their wounds, without closely inspecting it would be simply impossible for one to notice.

"What's going on……" Ye Fan stretched forth his fingers to inspect the wound and felt something as he used his fingers to pinch it out.

Immediately, streaks of dazzling light burst out and Ye Fan could not even open his eyes. This was a golden piece of paper and an endless divine glow was flowing on its surface, it was brilliant and dazzling.

This golden page was heavier than gold and there were numerous densely packed ancient words engraved on it, so small that they were nearly illegible as each ancient word seemed to be a star that was flashing, bright and resplendent.

Ye Fan's heart began to beat faster and he felt that his mouth was dry, he was dazzled by the divine glow from the golden page and

his eyes were squinted as he stared.

# *Chapter 58: Golden Book Sways The Sea Of Bitterness*

Ye Fan's heart began to beat faster due to his agitation, he immediately thought of the Dao Scripture, the Ling Xu sect leader as well as the few great demons were engaged in a life and death battle and the main reason for their conflict was the Dao Scripture as well as the most valuable treasure from the eastern badlands.

This golden paper was certainly not ordinary, as though the essence of a rainbow had coalesced to form it, bright and resplendent, dazzling to the point where one could not keep their eyes open. It was heavy when held and seemed many times heavier than gold.

"It's only a single piece of paper yet there seem to be over ten thousand words....." Ye Fan squinted as he carefully perused the golden paper. Even with his careful scrutiny he could barely see blurry outlines as the words were simply too tiny. Both sides of the paper were filled with words, numerous and densely packed and every word seemed to be a star as they released a dazzling divine glow.

Ye Fan could not not maintain his composure, if his guess was correct this was certainly the Dao Scripture and was something that he had been pining for. He did not expect to obtain it in this way and he had a feeling of surreality. Tightly pinching the paper within his fingers, he gradually calmed down after a long period of time had passed. At this moment, he thought of Pang Bo and his face covered in a greenish aura. He sent those corpses flying over and was looking here as though he had some deeper intentions.

“Could it be that he purposefully sent it over here?” Ye Fan suddenly realised. However, the unknown entity that was possessing Pang Bo could not possibly be so nice as to allow him to obtain his heart’s desire.

“It’s…… Pang Bo!” Ye Fan quickly thought of a possibility.

Pang Bo was clearly struggling for control of his body and it may have been that he managed to wrest back control of his body for a brief period of time. Ye Fan immediately dismissed this thought with a shake of his head, the likelihood of this occurring was extremely low and at best Pang Bo would only be able to interfere with the unknown entity’s actions, it was unlikely that he would ever gain the upper hand.

“In those life and death struggles, any disturbance could create a life threatening situation……” Ye Fan continued to contemplate. He felt that it was more likely that the unknown entity had come to a compromise with Pang Bo and they had made an agreement to smuggle the golden Dao Scripture out without anyone noticing.

The more Ye Fan contemplated the more he felt that this was a possibility. Pang Bo had granted his heart’s desire and sent the Dao Scripture over, he muttered: “Please let Pang Bo make it out here in one piece……”

Thinking back to the demonic writing that had appeared on Pang Bo’s face, Ye Fan felt gloomy as that unknown entity was likely from the demon race and in contrast to those great demons, it was

not interested in the human race's Dao Scripture and was probably contesting for the inheritance of the demon emperor.

Ye Fan calmed his nerves as he carefully inspected the other corpses but found nothing else. The golden paper had only one page, bright, resplendent and heavy as though he were lugging a treasury around. This gave him an immense pressure as this single-paged golden book was clearly more valuable than any hidden treasury.

Ye Fan wanted to at least gain a small insight into the page as he focused, connecting with his golden sea of bitterness and maximising his visual power to try and see what was written on the golden book. Wisps of gold flowed from his sea of bitterness and gathered at his eyes, making his eyes seem to flash with a golden light.

"Wheel and Sea Volume!"

In the beginning of the golden book, there were three ancient characters that were slightly bigger and could be seen like three bright and round moons being suspended there, their moonlight dazzled with splendor. Looking further down, the words were much smaller and he could barely make out the form of the words, causing one to feel an intense pain in both eyes. The ancient words released a divine glow and were like golden needles piercing out, the more one wanted to see clearly the harder it was and his eyes were stinging to the point of swelling, unbearably painful.

It was only a short period of time but Ye Fan's eyes were already red, strained as tears formed involuntarily. He hurriedly looked

away as the golden lights flashing within his pupils receded, after a short while his vision became normal. He felt stupefied, looking normally one could not clearly see the ancient words but it would not be stinging to the eyes. When he gathered the divine energy to his eyes and could barely make out the words, he almost injured his eyes, making him flabbergasted.

"This page of the Dao Scripture is certainly extraordinary……"

Ye Fan did not give up and after resting for awhile he focused again, connecting with his sea of bitterness as he once again maximised his visual power. This time, he attempted to see the last few words on the other side rather than the beginning few.

"End of Wheel and Sea Volume!"

The last four ancient characters on the flip side were akin to the first three characters as they were clearly much larger and easier to be seen, like a moon above the sea, it's glow spilling out.

Similarly, besides these four words, the words on the other side were similarly hard to make out because each ancient character was like a sun, blinding to the eye and the streaks of divine glow were like golden needles flying out, piercing to one's pupils, burning and difficult to bear.

Ye Fan once again hastily looked off to the side, his heart was palpitating as he could confirm that this golden book was clearly the most important introductory volume of the Dao Scripture!

The Wheel and Sea indicated were clearly the wheel of life as well as the sea of bitterness, where the spring of divine energy originated and was the foundations of any cultivator. It was no wonder that the Ling Xu sect leader said that this was the most important volume of the Dao Scripture, it was the introductory chapter of the immortal canon and the foundations of an impossibly tall skyscraper.

Elder Wu Qing Feng had once mentioned that a cultivator only needed to cultivate their wheel of life and sea of bitterness to their limits and they would be able to benefit from it for the rest of their lives becoming a truly peerless expert. the importance of the Wheel and Sea volume could thus be imagined.

The Ling Xu sanctuary had the introductory section of this first volume and it could only be considered an incomplete piece within an incomplete piece, the amount it detailed was not even ten percent and could only help celestial sprouts that had just joined to connect with their sea of bitterness without any techniques to follow through. This was actually a point that Ye Fan felt deeply regretful. At this moment, having obtained the full Wheel and Sea volume of the Dao Scripture, he was elated and knew that he would benefit from this for the rest of his life. This was a complete volume that one could continually use to cultivate down the road of cultivation.

Ye Fan carefully kept the golden book, he knew that the news of him obtaining the book could never be leaked otherwise he would be certainly be hunted down. Even if it were the Ling Xu sect leader who had obtained it, it was likely that he would have to request backing from one of the Sacred Grounds otherwise the sect would face potential disaster. This volume of the Dao Scripture

could be considered a priceless treasure but it was also a volcano that could erupt at any moment, something that brought with it such immense benefits also bore equal amounts of danger in keeping it.

It was a godsend that he had obtained the golden book and Ye Fan had no reason to remain any longer. He did not have the strength to compete for anything and retreating out was the best option.

He hastily rushed down the mountain, utilising the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture, golden wisps of light were emitted from his sea of bitterness flowing throughout his body, nourishing his blood and bone causing his speed to increase several times.

At this moment, Ye Fan felt a strange change as though the golden page stored within his bosom was trembling. Initially, he did not really care about it but he suddenly felt his body go ice-cold as the golden page seemed to come into contact with his skin.

“What’s going on? I didn’t place the golden chest near my skin……” He hurriedly stopped to check and what left Ye Fan shocked was that the golden page that was stored within his bosom had disappeared.

“How could this be?!” Ye Fan found the truth before his eyes difficult to believe. Even if it were the Ling Xu sect leader who came it would be difficult to retrieve it without him noticing, how could it suddenly disappear?

At the same time, he felt that the qi essence of life in his body was flaring up, the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture began to uncontrollably circulate causing the golden glow of his sea of bitterness to expand.

“Ai!”

Ye Fan was stunned, he felt that his sea of bitterness was very strange as though there were something additional within it as he hurriedly inspected. The scene before him left him speechless, within that soybean sized golden sea of bitterness, there was actually a single-paged golden book!

The golden page had become smaller and stunningly entered into his golden sea of bitterness. This made Ye Fan dazed for almost half a day before he came to his senses as he struggled to understand what was going on.

The mystical arts within the Dao Scripture finally stopped circulating and everything became calm once again. However, Ye Fan’s golden sea of bitterness had an additional mini golden book and no matter how hard he tried, he had no way to interact with it and bring it back out.

Ye Fan was in a stupor and he continued contemplating for a long time, he did not understand why this was happening. He only felt a small relief that the golden sea of bitterness did not have any discomfort.

Upon calming down, he decided to resume his retreat.

“Boom!’

Suddenly, a violent sound was transmitted from behind him and in the distance the ancient palace seemed to be shaking as it shot forth countless streaks of multicoloured sunlight, causing the surrounding extraordinary birds and beasts as well as Ling Xu elders flying into the air.

“No, I cannot leave!” Ye Fan was simply too concerned about Pang Bo and although he knew that remaining here was useless he could not leave with a peace of mind without confirming Pang Bo’s safety first.

Ye Fan was not rash in his decision and he chose a mountain peak that was even further away to watch the scene unfold.

“Chi Chi Chi”

In the distant horizon, a sound of the sky being traversed could be heard as streaks of mystical rainbows flew in this direction, there were several tens of them.

“Kaboom!”

Thereafter, it seemed as though an army with thousands of man and horses were galloping, behind the tens of mystical rainbows came the roars of several beasts as a fog roiled on and the clouds

shrouded the sky. Tens of beasts rode on clouds and fog to chase and on each of their backs was a cultivator. Although they were traversing through the sky, sounds of thunder continually resounded as though a ten thousand strong army were attacking.

Those ferocious beasts were all unique types whose roots stemmed from ancient times, covered in dense scales and unbelievably fierce. The cultivator that was sitting atop one of the ferocious beasts situated in the centre carried a big banner and it fluttered in the wind, its might overpowering. There were four words written on it: Alkaid Sacred Ground!*

[T/N: 摇光圣地 ]

# Chapter 59: Heart Of The Demon Emperor

It was a majestic and overwhelming scene as thirty six mystical rainbows flew in the lead while twenty seven expert cultivators rode on twenty seven ferocious beasts in the back. Although there were only tens of people it seemed as though an army of thousands of man and horses were galloping, the sky was trembling as though an untold number of celestial troops were attacking.

The sky was filled with the shouts of men and roars of beasts, the clouds roiled violently, killing intent surged through the sky like a vast body of water surging up. Ye Fan was stunned, there were so many experts and the numbers exceeded those of Ling Xu sanctuary by almost double.

“Alkaid Sacred Ground, is that the nearest Sacred Ground that Ling Xu sanctuary is dependent on?” Ye Fan muttered. Whether it be back in ancient china or in this part of the universe on the other side of the stars, the word Alkaid had a very deep meaning.

“The Alkaid Sacred Ground is indeed impressive!” At this moment, from a different direction a cold voice could be heard, the sky there was transmitting rumbling noises as eighteen ancient war vehicles were charging over, killing intent filled the sky and the repressed firmament seemed to be shuddering from all the rumbling.

“An ancient aristocratic family that has lived since ancient times, the Ji Clan!” When the people from the Alkaid Sacred Ground saw the eighteen ancient war vehicles, their eyes narrowed as they prepared to engage, killing intent surged and they seemed even

more imposing.

Both sides stopped as they each occupied a region of the sky, staring in confrontation from a distance.

“Each and every person shall seize based on their own strength!”

Both sides seemed to come to an agreement as the confrontation ended without any battle and they rushed towards the mouth of the volcano where the majestic ancient palace was situated.

Ye Fan’s heart was trembling, an aristocratic family and a sacred grounds from legends had rushed over, it seemed that the burial mound of a demon emperor was instead earth shattering news and once the two powerful entities caught wind of the news they had immediately rushed over to Yan State and gotten involved.

“The Ji family, an ancient aristocratic family that has been around since ancient times……” Ye Fan had a contemplative expression, the surname Ji could be considered one of the oldest surnames in china and had a long history, spanning multiple legends in ancient china. It was inconceivable that one the other side of the stars, the same surname would be an existence as powerful as a sacred grounds.

“Rumble, Rumble, Rumble……”

The sky seemed to be filled with the sounds of rushing rapids as the two powerhouses Alkaid Sacred Ground and Ji family rushed

over to the majestic ancient palace.

In the surrounding area, all the birds and beasts hastily retreated. Although they could not turn into human form, they had long since gained spiritual sense and felt a sense of danger, thus retreating instantly.

On the other side, the Ling Xu sanctuary elders had ugly expressions, although they had ties with the Alkaid Sacred Ground, the appearance of the demon emperor's burial mound was too sudden and they did not inform them before coming. At this moment seeing them here, they were certainly left unsettled. Also, the Ji family which was the closest ancient aristocratic family to the Yan state had also gotten wind of the news and rushed over. With the advent of these two superpowers, the people from Ling Xu sanctuary had bitter expressions. They knew that it would now be difficult to obtain anything of worth.

The majestic ancient palace was trembling constantly as the few great demons and grand elders from Ling Xu sanctuary were engaged in fierce conflict, the oppressive sound from the interior grew gradually louder and even at a distance one would feel acute pain in their heart.

The people from Alkaid Sacred Ground were fast and had surrounded the ancient palace in no time at all. The tens of ferocious beasts nodded their heads and wagged their tails* as they spat forth a mist that bore down on the skies, causing the surrounding area to shudder repeatedly. The people of the Ji family did not back down as the eighteen ancient war vehicles formed into a battle formation, sealing up the sky as they faced

Alkaid Sacred Ground in confrontation while preventing the demon emperor's burial mound from suddenly rushing to the sky.

[idiom: To be well pleased with one's self]

At this moment, eight to nine elders from the group that came from the Alkaid Sacred Ground started to walk through the skies and with a flash, disappeared into the ancient palace.

"Boom!'

The demon emperor's burial mound began to tremble more violently as the battle within intensified, rays of divine light that were released from weapons could be seen shooting forth from the palace.

The participation of the ancient aristocratic family seemed to break the impasse and many seals were broken as multicoloured light could occasionally be seen streaking out.

The people in the surrounding area began to move as they rode on mystical rainbows, fighting to reach the lights that were shooting forth. On close inspection, those lights were actually weapons with lights shrouding them and it was clear that they were extraordinary.

"Thump!"

Suddenly there was a loud trembling noise as the faces of the

people surrounding the ancient palace turned pale, explosively retreating as a vast unknown energy rushed out from the ancient palace, like an angry ocean that was violently hissing as it sent the eighteen war vehicles of the Ji family flying and the cultivators riding on beasts tumbling away.

A blazing light was emitted from within the demon emperor's burial mound, blindingly dazzling as a vast unknown energy surged violently as though it could topple mountains and overturn seas. A small crystal coffin of barely one Chinese foot long shot forth, a powerful energy as well as dazzling light were being emitted from it.

[Chinese Foot = ⅓ of a meter]

"Thump!", "Thump!", "Thump!"……

It gently trembled as though a heart were beating, with a steady cadence that was filled with a boundless aura of life as the vast energy flooded out in all directions.

"Block it!"

Nervous shouting could be heard from within the burial mound as over ten people rushed out with Pang Bo in the lead. At this moment a green energy was circulating over his entire body as the dragon and phoenix markings on his face seemed even more dense. Even his hands had the black tortoise as well as qilin shaped words appearing on them as both his eyes shot forth several metre long stream of light. His demonic aura engulfed the area and it was even

stronger than the great demons behind him. At this instant, there was nothing else in his line of sight as he stared at the one chinese foot long crystal coffin and chased it.

The experts from the Alkaid Sacred Ground as well as Ji family had ugly expressions since the crystal coffin rushed out and they loudly commanded the surrounding people to block the crystal coffin. The sect leader as well as grand elders of Ling Xu sanctuary had finally rushed out and although there were so many people around, they did not wish to give up and wanted to compete for it, otherwise all their efforts would have been for naught.

As for the few great demons, they were incensed as unwillingness was written all over their faces. However, faced with so many experts from the human race, they had the heart but not the strength as they rushed out of the encirclement and prepared themselves for any opportunity to act.

The eighteen ancient war vehicles of the Ji family were in a battle formation blocking the sky as they sealed the area and blocked the advancement of the crystal coffin. As for the cultivators of the Alkaid Sacred Ground, they also acted swiftly and rode on beasts or mystical rainbows as they rushed over.

The crystal coffin that was nary a chinese foot long was trapped and the experts that had rushed out of the burial mound had all reached as they stretched forth their hands almost simultaneously in an attempt to grab it.

“Bang!”

Over ten pairs of hands shot forth and grabbed the crystal coffin, these hands were coalesced from light and not the real hands of any member of the group. They were all engaged in battle as they struggled to obtain the crystal coffin.

The eighteen war vehicles of the Ji family surrounded the area as the people from Alkaid Sacred Ground also rushed in headlong. At this moment the sect leader as well as the two fortunate grand elders that managed to retain their lives had unsightly expressions, although they were very strong individually, faced with so many people their power seemed insignificant.

Pang Bo was also alone but he did not give up as his demonic aura surged, the green lights that shot forth from his eyes were already tens of metres long and his aura seemed even stronger.

“Crack, Crack”

The crystal coffin could not bear the force from so many experts as it slowly began to crack and finally broke apart with a loud bang.

“Boom!’

A demonic power seemed to cover the skies as it exploded forth sending everyone flying, no one could withstand the violent energy that was emitted.

As for the ancient war vehicles of the Ji family, the four that were blocking the front immediately disintegrated and the twelve cultivators atop it seemed to be made of sand as they were reduced to fine powder.

The casualties from the Alkaid Sacred Ground were also heavy as over ten people were

pulverized by the demonic power that shrouded the sky, both man and beast turned into a bloody mist, dying in a violent manner.

The sect leader as well as two gran elders of the Ling Xu sanctuary were knocked several hundred metres away before finally stabilising themselves. Even they who were so powerful had almost suffered injuries.

In the distance, Ye Fan's heart constricted as he feared that something untoward might have happened to Pang Bo. Although the unknown entity was in control of the body, it was still that of Pang Bo's.

A demonic aura surged through the skies as Pang Bo was completely unharmed. He had retreated further than anyone else as though he had long anticipated such an outcome.

At this moment, the aura of life that exploded from the crystal coffin could be compared to a vast body of water as even the added life energies of all the people present seemed inferior to it.

At the birth of the endless demonic power was a fresh red heart that was only the size of a palm, sparkling and translucent like a

carnelian, an intense vigorous blood coloured divine glow shrouded it and the endless demonic power as well as a strong life aura were emitted from it.

“Thump!”, “Thump!”, “Thump!”……

The sound of heart beats was transmitted as it pumped with each beat, it was a heart that was alive and filled with a strong energy of life!

At this moment, no one could get near as the translucent and fresh red heart continued to beat, making the surrounding people feel their blood vessels swell and their veins seemed like they could explode. Everybody felt an acute pain in their hearts and many people spat out mouthfuls of blood as they found it difficult to bear and hastily retreated.

A frightening heart that people found difficult to bear simply with its beating!

“The heart of a great emperor…… It’s the sacred heart of a great emperor from our demonic race!” The few great demons that were in the sky were stunned as they exclaimed.

The translucent heart of the demon emperor continued to beat as it suddenly rushed into the sky and turned into a blood red divine glow as it rushed into the distance.

“Block it! Don’t let it leave no matter what!” An elder from the

Alkaid Sacred Ground loudly shouted with a face filled with anxiety.

“Stop it at all costs! Confine it!”An expert from the Ji family shouted: “That’s the heart of a great emperor from the demon race, it’s the origin of all his power. If any great demon were to obtain it, it would likely result in another great emperor within the demon race!”

While they were giving out orders, the few great demons had already rushed forth however there was a shadow that had moved faster than them and it was Pang Bo. He seemed to be one with heaven and earth as he transformed into a green light, disappearing in the blink of an eye as he followed the heart of the demon race’s great emperor into the distance.

The Ji family sent forth eight war vehicles to chase while the Alkaid Sacred Ground sent half their forces to hastily give chase. Each of them had left half their forces here to continue surrounding the burial mound of the demon emperor.

“If we knew that this was the resurgence of the demonic emperor’s burial mound we would have already reported this matter to the higher ups. In our rush to come here our strength is simply insufficient!” An elder from the Alkaid Sacred Ground sighed.

“Thinking it was just an ordinary cave dwelling but who knew that it would actually be the tomb of the great demon emperor! This is simply too inconceivable and this news will shake the entire eastern badlands!” An expert of the Ji family was also regretful

that they had not reported this matter to their higher ups and instead immediately rushed over.

In the distance, Ye Fan was stupefied. Amongst these people, there were at least ten people who were not weaker than the Ling Xu sect leader however from their words it was easy to understand that there were not the true experts of Alkaid Sacred ground or the Ji family. This was simply too unsettling.

The few Sacred Grounds as well as ancient aristocratic families were certainly colossal figures!

“Sect leader Li, have you people already obtained the volume of the Dao Scripture from legends?” An elder from the Alkaid Sacred Ground questioned the sect leader. Ever since they realised that this was the demon emperor’s burial mound, they immediately understood what important sacred objects were buried here.

Besides the demon race treasures that the great demon emperor had used while he was alive, there should be three other hidden divine treasures: the Dao Scripture, the most precious treasure of the human race of eastern badlands and the remains of the great demon emperor.

Amongst them, the origin of the demonic power of the great demon emperor, his heart, had already streaked away and it was difficult to say if it could be caught. Tossing aside the precious treasures of the great demon emperor, the other other sacred objects of the human race of eastern badlands were something that the Alkaid Sacred ground as well as the Ji family simply had to get their hands on.

The Ling Xu sect leader was feeling bitter, although he had not given an early notification to the Alkaid Sacred Ground, he had still returned empty handed. If he had known earlier, he would have done a big favor for them instead. He hurriedly tried to explain: “The first hidden divine treasure ‘Dao Scripture’ flew away leaving behind an empty case and no one had the time to see the actual text. After accidentally opening the third hidden divine treasure, the heart of the demon emperor took flight and flew away. Now only the second hidden divine treasure remains and currently half the seal has been broken. I think the most precious treasure of the human race of the eastern badlands should still be there. Besides this, there should still be a few of the precious treasures that were once used by the great demon emperor.

“That volume of the Dao Scripture actually flew away on its own, how could this be?!” The expert from Alkaid Sacred ground as well the people from the Ji family stared unblinkingly at the Ling Xu sect leader as though they could not believe him.

The Ling Xu sect leader felt sour, there were several other ancient scriptures that were comparable to the Dao scripture and they were in the hands of the Sacred Ground as well as ancient aristocratic families. They had immortal canons that were not inferior to the Dao Scripture yet still wanted to snatch this volume of the ancient scripture. The Ling Xu sect leader could only sigh in his heart as he helplessly shook his head: “We really did not manage to see it……”

At this moment, far away in the horizon came the melodious sounds of heavenly music as over ten ladies flew over as they passed over Ye Fan leaving him in shock.

These ten over ladies were dressed entirely in white and although they could not be considered peerless beauties they each seemed to be elegant and otherworldly without being contaminated by the aura of the mortal world. They were lithe and graceful as they flew through the air like beautiful fairies yet also like dancing sprites that were not part of the mortal world and transcendental.

There were people who played bamboo flutes, the sounds were soft and rang out. It was very pleasant to listen to. There were also others who were smiling lightly, causing one to feel the springtime wind. These ladies that had features akin to drawings were all like exiled immortals, each of them were emanating auras that were free from the constraints of the earth.

Ye Fan was amazed and felt that these were what he had imagined cultivators to be, seemingly free and graceful, riding on rainbows to traverse, otherworldly, free and unfettered within heaven and earth.

“It’s hard to believe that even the Jade Lake Sacred Ground that hasn’t been around for long has been tipped off. It’s easy to guess that it won’t be long before the other sects within the eastern badlands also come to contest.”

“The Jade Lake Sacred Ground has always stayed away from worldly affairs, could it be that this time you’re actually here to vie for the inheritance of the great demon emperor?”

The people of the Alkaid Sacred Ground as well as the Ji family

spoke up at the same time as they seemed to be greeting the ten over elegant ladies while also trying to sound them out.

“The few of us were only passing by and found that the demonic power here was vast like the ocean, thus resulting in us coming over to investigate but we did not expect to meet all of you.” A lady dressed in white had a soft smile as she then took on a serious expression: “Who would have thought that the tomb of the great demon emperor would once again see the light of day. In the next few days this news will surely shake up the entire eastern badlands and endless sects will send their people over.”

Far away, Ye Fan was stunned. Alkaid, the Ji clan as well as Jade Lake, these names were not simple especially Jade Lake, in the legends of ancient china it had a vast history and it was shocking to see that on the other side of the stars they had such a big influence as well.

# *Chapter 60: Clouds Come From All Directions*

The State of Yan was merely in the corner of an area and within the eastern badlands it was just a drop in the ocean. If the news of this were to spread, this area of ruins would surely be drowning with cultivators.

At this moment, the most disappointed would surely be the Ling Xu sect leader. With the appearance of the Sacred Grounds as well as an ancient aristocratic family, he knew that it would be difficult to obtain anything as there was simply no way to vie with such colossal figures.

An ancient war vehicle of the Ji family could be seen rumbling away into the distance. The faces of the people of Alkaid Sacred Ground changed upon seeing this and an elder hurriedly ordered the two cultivators by his side: “Hurry and go back to the Sacred Ground to inform them of this news and get help from our experts!”

The emergence of the demon emperor burial mound could no longer be buried and this would surely shock the entirety of the vast eastern badlands, in no time at all there would be more and more sects gathering here. Amongst them would likely be powerhouses that could stand toe to toe with them and they had no choice but to seek for assistance.

“The few of us should work together to break the seal on the demon emperor’s burial mound and retrieve all the precious treasure from within. What do you think?” An elder from the

Alkaid Sacred Ground looked towards the experts from the Ji family before looking towards the ladies from Jade Lake and finally the Ling Xu sect leader.

“Alright, we should have done this right from the start.” The expert atop an ancient war vehicle immediately nodded his head in agreement.

The few ladies from the Jade Lake Sacred Ground were lithe and free as each appeared otherworldly, they seemed to not want to participate in the struggle as they started to back away and the lady that was in the forefront gently said: “The few of us are merely passing through and we do not wish to vie for the inheritance of the great demon emperor.”

“Since that’s the case the few of us will not pressure you to do so. Our two families can work together to break the tomb of the great demon emperor.” The people of the Alkaid Sacred Ground and Ji family were eagerly waiting for the people from Jade Lake to back away. Although there were many precious treasures within the demon emperor’s burial mound, no one would complain about receiving too many treasures and the fewer who participated the better.

“Sect leader Li, you can also bring you people over.” An elder from the Alkaid Sacred Ground coolly swept his gaze over.

The Ling Xu sect leader was bitter as he said: “We will definitely do our utmost.”

The elder from Alkaid Sacred Ground nodded and continued: “The few of you from Ling Xu sanctuary have already contributed plenty, when we open the demon emperor’s burial mound we will definitely give you a satisfactory compensation.”

Twenty over experts then proceeded to enter the demon emperor’s burial mound as they wanted to open up this ancient tomb completely.

“Boom!’

The ancient palace made of five coloured jade continued to shake uncontrollably as streaks of dazzling lights were released causing the entire sky to tremble.

“It seems like something is wrong……” The ladies of Jake Lake Sacred Ground were looking over from a distance and there were strange expressions on their faces.

“The demonic writings on the ancient palace seem to be getting brighter and brighter.”

“Those ancient words seem to be alive as they tremble, as though they could come out from the walls at any time.”

The demonic writings on the ancient palace were all emitting various colours, the dragon-like words were like little dragons twisting, phoenix-like words were expanding their wings to fly out, black tortoise-like writings seemed to be endlessly rolling……

There was a mysterious aura that was emitted from the demon emperor's burial mound as a strong demonic energy began to slowly gather, shrouding the ancient tomb in a layer of blurry mist.

"Not good, the tomb of the great demon emperor seems to be out of sorts……"

The ladies from Jade Lake Sacred Ground had expressions of shock on their faces. They could feel the growing demonic power and it felt like a vast body of water that was gradually surging up.

Not everyone from the Alkaid Sacred Ground and Ji family entered the tomb, the few people who were guarding the exterior felt the changes as their faces fell and immediately rushed forward shouting: "Not good! There are changes occurring to the tomb! Hurry and retreat!"

The people inside were already frantic even without the shouting as the people who were walking in the forefront suddenly turned into a bloody mist, everything happened so fast that it was simply incomprehensible.

"Shuaaa Shuaaa Shuaaa"

Everyone hastily retreated as they turned into mystical rainbows and rushed out.

“Boom!”

The demon emperor’s burial mound suddenly released endless streaks of light that immediately ignited the stragglers and after a ferocious struggle they all turned to ash.

“Hurry up and leave!”

The Ling Xu sect leader as well as two grand elders managed to barely make it out, while four to five people respectively from Alkaid Sacred Ground and the Ji family also made it out. The rest of the people were all sealed within.

At this moment, the large doors of the ancient palace were slowly closing and one could see past the ajar doors to witness the scenes within. Brilliant and resplendent, the people within seemed to be motionless as their bodies became transparent and their blood was burning, five viscera and six bowels were all burnt as their flesh and bone also turned to dust in an instant.

Their terrified expressions as they died left everyone feeling petrified, especially those who had barely made it out felt their hearts shiver as they thought about how they had come so close to meeting such an end.

“How could it be like this? What has happened to suddenly make the tomb become so fearsome……” An elder from the Alkaid Sacred Ground was pale-faced as he said this with an ugly expression. They had not obtained any precious treasures but already lost so many people, this was clearly a bad omen.

“This is likely something that was left behind by the great demon emperor, if there are no great demons present, this ancient palace is a place occupied by sinister forces that would kill any human cultivators!” An expert of the Ji family hypothesized.

The group thought about it and felt that this was a reasonable conjecture. Earlier when the few great demons were present, nothing strange happened and only when they left did the ancient palace suddenly become mysterious and frightening.

“It could very likely be as you said. The great demon emperor would certainly not wish for the experts of the human race to attain his inheritance.”

“What should we do then? Should we go capture some great demons and bring them over? By then it would simply be too late. Many of the other sects must already be on their way here.”

The people from Alkaid Sacred Ground and the Ji family began to discuss fervently as they decided to forcefully open the ancient palace from the outside, otherwise, no one knew who would attain the precious treasures when the other sects arrived.

“We must grab the opportunity to open it first!”

When the Alkaid Sacred Ground and Ji family worked together, they were sufficient to handle most sects. Only if a really powerful large sect, other Sacred Grounds or ancient aristocratic families arrived would there be trouble, those people would be able to

contest without fear of any consequences.

The eastern badlands was simply too vast and there was simply an innumerable amount of expert cultivators, even the number of countries within was an impossibly large number and not one Sacred Ground could shake up the entire eastern badlands.

“Chi Chi Chi”

All sorts of weapons were shrouded in glows as they attacked the tomb, exploding with violent energy. Even so, what made them shocked was that the tomb was completely unharmed and the demonic writings atop the tomb became even more resplendent.

“Those demonic writings are squirming about!”

At this moment, all the cultivators were stunned. Small dragons were snaking their way upwards from the foundations of the tomb, phoenixes were spreading their wings and soaring, black tortoises were slowly climbing.....

The demonic writings were all moving upwards from the foundations of the ancient palace, densely packed and numerous as they covered the entire ancient palace, as though it were engraved with countless runes, seemingly extremely mysterious as demonic energy circulated.

The few forceful attacks from the Alkaid Sacred Ground as well as the Ji family were all unsuccessful and two ancient war vehicles

as well as seven to eight beasts were lost. The writings on the tomb had a mysterious energy that continually shot forth divine light and pierced anything it touched.

"It's over, those are the emperor's writing of the demonic race. It must have been left behind by the final great demon emperor!" The elder of the Alkaid Sacred Ground was pale as he tightly clenched his fist to the extent that even his fingernails had turned white as he said: "The few of us simply don't have the ability to open it up, we can only wait for the experts of our Sacred Ground to arrive. By then who knows how many sects would have rushed over."

The experts of the Ji family were on their ancient war vehicles with ugly expressions, the demon emperor's burial mound was so nefariously strange that they could only patiently wait for their experts to arrive and help.

"Chi Chi Chi"

Sounds of air being traversed continually resounded as tens of rainbows could be seen from the horizon, the first batch of cultivators since the leaking of the news had arrived. However, when they saw that it was only the people from the five other immortal sanctuaries of the Yan state, the people in the area all let out a sigh of relief that it was not any supreme large sect.

"Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!"

Far away cloud and mist roiled as divine lights shot forth, a

mystical boat made from divine jade streaked through the air as it speedily neared. The people of Alkaid Sacred Ground and the Ji family had ugly expressions as what they most feared had arrived, a supreme large sect had rushed over.

However, what made them shocked was something that occurred thereafter. At this moment, there was the sound of a tsunami that carried frightening fluctuations as it was transmitted over from afar.

In another direction, tens of divine mystical rainbows were opening a pathway, nine ancient ferocious beasts whose forms seemed to be that of a qilin were pulling a jade carriage that had divine red mist swirling around it, soaring through the clouds and riding on mist as it let out loud thunderous noises and speedily neared.

The experts of Alkaid Sacred Ground and the Ji family all turned pale, this was definitely an extremely fearsome character otherwise there would not be such an ostentatious entrance.

“A personage of this status actually personally rushed here.....”

# *Chapter 61: Lady Of Perfection*

Qilins were a legendary existence that was on the same level of dragons. It has always been written and talked about through word of mouth, since ancient times no one has ever seen them before. Like the dragons of legends, only impure lineages of them lived in the mortal world and were often mistaken as real dragons, for example the river dragon. Qilins were also like this and their real bodies were not existent within the mortal world, only the lineages that were impure lived on from ancient times and only looked similar but were not real Qilin, thus addressed as Qilin beasts.

Although the divine blood within this ancient beast of an impure blood lineage had long become thin, it was still extremely strong and its might could be compared to that of a great demon. The personage that was coming had a nine Qilin beasts pulling his carriage, such an ostentatious entrance simply left one stunned.

“Chi Chi Chi”

Tens of mystical rainbows opened a path while the nine Qilin beasts galloped and finally stopped before the demon emperor’s burial mound. The jade carriage was bright and resplendent, simply propitious as mystical red clouds drifted about. This was nothing short of ordinary.

The elder from Alkaid Sacred ground said in a small voice: “There is a powerful figure within the Ji family that rides on a carriage pulled by nine river dragons, by comparison it is clear that the person within the carriage certainly has an extraordinary status.”

An expert of the Ji family heard this and bitterly laughed: “The person who rides on a car pulled by nine river dragons is the uncle of our family head. This person has such an ostentatious entourage that even if he weren’t the family head of an ancient aristocratic family, he would certainly be of similar status.”

The cultivators of Alkaid Sacred Ground and the Ji family were all apprehensive and did not dare to go forward to give their greetings as they were all stupefied by this mysterious powerful figure that they knew nothing of. The few ladies from the Jade Lake Sacred Ground were softly discussing but had not figured out who the powerful figure was.

The nine Qilin beasts came to a complete halt but there was no movement from within the jade carriage. The powerful figure from within the carriage did not come out as though he were quietly waiting for something. On the other side, the mystical boat that was made of divine jade hovered in the air without coming closer as though it were afraid of the jade carriage.

It was clear that this was just the forward party and more of the sect would follow. It was obvious that before the morning comes, this area would already be packed with close to a thousand people and when the news thoroughly spreads, this place would be bubbling with activity as the demon emperor’s burial mound would attract the attention of all the cultivators in the eastern badlands.

“The tomb of a great demon emperor emerging, this is simply too important and even those Sacred Grounds that are far away would

surely have their sects lay down ‘Dao Inscriptions’ to gather ‘Heavenly Might’ and establish the ‘Ancient Pathway’ and travel through space to arrive in the state of Yan.

As the lights from the demon emperor’s burial mound shot to the sky, there were more and more people in the surrounding area with the sounds of soft discussion everywhere. Although they knew that they had no chance of obtaining any precious treasures, they had rushed here to witness such a big event.

Ye Fan did not turn back after leaving as there was nothing here for him to pine for. After a long period of time had passed, Pang Bo did not return and thus Ye Fan simply could not wait any longer.

“Please let Pang Bo be alright…….”

Ye Fan scaled mountains and crossed ridges with a blazing speed and speedily left the lands of the ancient ground behind. He continued to run but even till the sun came up he did not have any findings.

This piece of primitive ancient land continually had mystical rainbows streaking through the sky as cultivators continued to fly over from all directions, it was clear that they were headed towards the tomb of the demon emperor.

“Where could he have gone? Could it be that I’m searching in the wrong direction…….” Ye Fan continued to search but did find any clues. He did not relent but continued to search till the afternoon when he suddenly felt a strange fluctuation.

“It’s……. the beating of the demon emperor’s heart! I’ve finally found the right direction!” Ye Fan sped up and barely an hour later he found that he had arrived at the exact same location as though he had not moved.

°

Up ahead, five large mountains stood side by side, up then down and steep like the fingers on a human’s hand.

“What’s going on……” Ye Fan was confused but he did not think too much as he assumed that he had merely lost his bearings earlier. He stood there and carefully analysed the direction before once again chasing, he believed that this time he would not circle back here. However, an hour later he was speechless as he found himself back where he started.

“How could it be like this?” Arriving back where he started, Ye Fan knew that something unusual was going on and this field was hundreds of miles away from the tomb of the demon emperor. This was still within the area of the ancient land and seemed to have some sort strange phenomenon.

Initially, he did not pay much attention to the surroundings of this area but upon closer inspection, Ye Fan was shocked to realise that the five mountains that were lined up seemed to be the divine hand of god, five mountains erected there like five fingers.

“Could it be that this mountainous region has ‘Dao Inscriptions’ carved on it creating a mysterious ‘influence’ that interfered with one’s five senses……” Ye Fan muttered as he came to such a

conclusion. He shut his eyes as he followed his instinct while walking forward, using his heart to feel the strong beats of the demon emperor's heart and after an unknown period of time he suddenly felt a spiritual qi bearing down on him.

Ye Fan opened his eyes and realised that he had entered into a world with the fragrance of flowers and the chirping of birds. This was like the sacred pure land of legends, a poetic and picturesque landscape, simply beautiful.

At this moment, he could truly feel the beating of the demon emperor's heart, it made his heart feel a stinging pain and it originated from the depths of this pure land, to be more accurate the sound was coming from the back of those beautiful mountains.

A celestial mist was faintly discernible and some pavilions and palaces could be seen in the depths of the mountains occasionally as Ye Fan hastily moved forward. Suddenly, he discovered a slender figure that was standing atop the cliff ahead, the surrounding mist swirled and the lady was dressed in white, pristine like snow as she floated in the wind like a fairy that was riding on the wind.

This was an exquisitely beautiful lady, like a graceful orchid with a valley*, extremely otherworldly with a kind of tranquil beauty that blended as one with the beautiful scenery, as though she was part of this beautiful heaven and earth.

[Idiom*: Metaphor for elegance and looks]

Ye Fan had never believed that there was perfection in the world but the lady atop the cliff gave him such a feeling, not only were her looks capable of overturning and ruining states, even her presence was so transcendental and free from vulgarities. As though she was above the common populace, causing a perception of feeling ashamed of one's inferiority. It was as if everything beautiful in this world would pale in comparison to her.

This lady with exceptional good looks appeared to be about eighteen or nineteen years old. Black hair that gently dances about, trembling long eyelashes, eyes that appeared misty, red lips and jade teeth sparkling with luster. Her neckline was delicate and elegant, skin that was clean and smooth, exquisite facial features, perfect complexion with a jade body that outlines her faint curves. One would get the feeling of perfection from her.

Ye Fan was a firm and self confident person and had never been affected by much, after losing his senses for a while he quickly calmed down and took big strides forward.

At this moment, the lady atop the cliff gazed over and softly smiled, like the petals of a celestial flower blossoming, extremely captivating, even causing even the sun in the sky to lose some of its colour.

Ye Fan was simply stupefied by this beauty as a strange feeling welled up from within his heart, this lady was simply too surreal like a dream or an illusion, faultless without any imperfections, beautiful to the point that it could be called evil.

"Please don't take another step forward otherwise you will lose

your life.” A sound that was like the sound of nature transmitted over and it was very captivating but it gave Ye Fan a feeling of coldness as he felt that this perfect lady was certainly not joking.

“Chi Chi Chi”

The sound of the air being traversed could be heard and not long after a few of the great demons that had disappeared rushed out from the depths of the mountains to appear by the lady’s side. The golden haired woman with two wings, the old river dragon, the muscular man whose arms were covered with scales all respectfully stood there as they gazed at Ye Fan with killing intent.

“Let him..... leave!”

At this moment, from the back of the cliff where clouds and mists were swirling, came the voice of Pang Bo, he seemed to be in extreme agony as he grit his teeth and spat out those four words.

“Kill him and all our problems will be solved!” At this instant the old river dragon began to draw closer.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, a demonic aura filled the air surging violently like a vast ocean. In an instant, the sky had one more figure and it was Pang Bo with his black hair flying wildly, his entire person seemed like a profound ocean as he gave one the feeling of an endless immense pressure, as though ten thousand large mountains were

pressing down, making it difficult to even breathe.

Currently, not all was the face and forehead of Pang Bo filled with demonic writings, even his bare chest and arms will filled with dense dragon and phoenix symbols as his entire body was covered in ancient characters, the green aura swirled and his eyes shot forth green lights that extended several tens of metres.

“I SAID, LET HIM GO!” His expression was cold as he stared at the old river dragon.

The old river dragon as well as the other great demons simultaneously looked over at the near perfect lady atop the cliff as though they were waiting for her orders. This perfect lady lightly laughed: “Don’t harm him, send him away from here.”

“Pang Bo!” Ye Fan loudly shouted as he gazed at that figure whose demonic aura filled the heavens and whose presence was like a mountain. He continued to shout that name but the current Pang Bo was familiar yet distant with a cold expression as he looked at Ye Fan without speaking. Thereafter with a “Shuaaa” he disappeared from the sky and in the blink of an eye no trace of him could be found. The demonic aura that was like a vast ocean also receded like the tide.

Thereafter, Ye Fan felt his body become light as that beautiful golden haired woman with a pair of golden wings used a beam of light to bind him before flying off into the sky.

Ye Fan continually shouted: “Pang Bo!”

The rushing air entered his mouth and impeded his shouting as the golden haired woman flew swiftly, the sky was filled with indignant ‘Wu Wu’ sounds as he was speedily brought away.

“Shuaaa”

It did not take long before the golden haired woman brought Ye Fan to the ground and after releasing him she looked deeply into his eyes and said: “You better take care of yourself and leave as soon as possible.” Having said this, she transformed into a golden light as she flew into the sky.

Ye Fan loudly shouted to the heavens: “Let Pang Bo come back!” But there was no one there to respond to him and the streaks of golden light disappeared in an instant.

His current location was only several miles away from the demon emperor’s burial mound and one could clearly see the dazzling lights from that direction. An ancient palace was floating in the sky and many cultivators were gathered there. Ye Fan had been transported back to the primitive ruins.

# *Chapter 62: Fracturing Of The Demon Emperor's Tomb*

"Chi Chi Chi"

The sound of mystical rainbows streaking through the air continually resounded as cultivators could be seen flying in from the horizon, rushing towards the demon emperor's burial mound. Ye Fan saw this but did not feel any excitement as he turned and ran off into the distance, slowly leaving the ruins and following the previous path. He came before the region where the five finger mountains were located.

"What's going on……" Ye Fan felt extremely shocked, it was the same piece of land but the verdant and lush landscape filled with vigor and life had completely disappeared. Up ahead, there were five bare stone mountains with nary a grass in sight, totally barren. They were no longer big and had suddenly become much smaller, like five large boulders that were stacked together and placed there.

Moving past the five stone mountains and continuing forward, he did not lose his sense of direction nor did he see the otherworldly pure land. There was only loose rock and sand, barren and silent, the scene had become very unfamiliar and was filled with desolation.

"I did not walk in the wrong direction……" Ye Fan was sure that this was that plot of land however the scene before his eyes had completely changed and that piece of pure land had totally disappeared.

Ye Fan thought that he had entered an illusion as he closed his eyes and tried to use his own heartbeat to feel the beating heart of the demon emperor. However, he did not manage to detect anything and there only deathly silence, this was certainly a barren piece of land that lived up to its looks.

He carefully looked through the area and came to a helpless conclusion, everything was real and this area did not have an inch of pure land. Only sand and rock within the ten miles, devoid of life as a dead atmosphere hangs in the air.

“How could it be like this……” Ye Fan frowned as he once again came before the five stone mountains. Suddenly, he noticed a piece of fabric on the ground.

“It’s Pang Bo’s…….”

Ye Fan continued scrutinising the area carefully but was left disappointed. This barren piece of land had nothing and all traces of Pang Bo and the great demons were thoroughly gone.

After looking through the area for an unknown number of times, Ye Fan lethargically lay on the sandy ground as he carefully thought and hypothesized before finally sighing. With his current strength, he simply had no way of finding Pang Bo and even if he really found traces, he did not have the ability to save him.

Finally, Ye Fan chose to leave. He was unsure if he left today would he ever see Pang Bo again.

Arriving at the other side of the stars, the two people had shared life and death together as they supported one another. Now that they were split up in this manner, Ye Fan felt crestfallen as he walked away step by step.

Walking for several hundred miles, Ye Fan walked past the ancient ruins and was barely several miles away from the demon emperor's burial mound. There were now many cultivators gathered there in the sky above, the tomb was floating about ponderously as lights shot into the sky.

At this moment, a rumbling sound could be heard as the sky seemed to quake.

An ancient war vehicle filled with an austere presence that was cast from molten gold and carved with dense and numerous Dao Inscriptions was being pulled by nine azure river dragons, giving off thunderous rumbling noises as it seemed to suppress the heavens as it charged forward, there was a strong fighting intent like a howling ocean as it surged.

In the distance, many cultivators took in a breath of cold air. Another impressive figure had arrived and several had their faces change colour, only the Ji family had expressions of glee.

Nine azure river dragons pulled an ancient golden war vehicle, roiling clouds and riding the mist as it hastily moved and stopped before the Ji family, it was absolutely silent thereafter.

No one had fully come to their senses before celestial music that had the sounds of nature drew closer, petals began to sprinkle down from the sky, sparkling and translucent with hints of fragrance as beautiful figures that looked like fairies drifting through the skies, their dresses were fluttering about and were seemingly otherworldly.

They had a fragrant carriage that was weaved together with divine flowers, it had brightly coloured decorations*. As it moved gracefully, flowers were raining from the sky, flickering and translucent making the entire ruins seem exceptionally beautiful.

[Idiom*: splendid]

Before the demon emperor's burial mound, all the cultivators were shocked. Another fearsome individual had arrived, this ancient palace certainly enticed many strong cultivators to the extent that they all personally rushed over.

Ye Fan had already calmed down and although he had not found Pang Bo, he firmly believed that Pang Bo would not die and there would come a day when they would reunite.

"Become stronger, I will continue to become stronger and not let others control our fate!"

Ye Fan was frustrated but within his eyes a divine light could be seen that was exuding a firm and self confident radiance. Since he had already stepped on the path of cultivators, the current goal was to get himself stronger and only in this way would he be able

to save Pang Bo.

He did not leave but rather chose to retreat several miles away and gazed from a high mountain that was eight or nine miles from the tomb. With his current cultivation, he simply did not have the strength to contest for anything and even the weakest person there could easily kill him. Choosing to observe from afar was only to increase his knowledge and experience.

At this moment, there were already countless cultivators and many people had acted but no one was able to open up the demon emperor's burial mound. There were many cultivators that were already injured or killed.

The majestic ancient palace that was forged from multi-coloured jade was covered in numerous and densely packed demonic writing, a five coloured glow was being released as dragon, phoenix, black tortoise formed words seemed to be alive.

"A celestial killing energy that was laid down by the final great demonic emperor, under the weathering of time it has weakened considerably and the pulse that rules it is already in our grasp, it is almost time for us to act." Before the demon emperor's tomb, the jade carriage that was pulled by nine Qilin beasts had a cold voice that was being transmitted from it, it was not very loud and was somewhat deep yet the clear enough for it to spread out to all corners. This had actually caused most of the cultivators to feel a shivering feeling within them.

This supreme big figure was finally going to act!

“That’s right, it’s certainly possible to now open the demon emperor’s tomb.” A gentle voice could be heard as the nobody in the crowd noticed this lady’s presence. However, no one doubted that someone who dared to speak with the big figure within the jade carriage would certainly be an existence on a similar level.

“Our few families have the natural geographical advantage and opening the tomb would allow us to obtain much!” At this moment, on the other side of the sky an imposing voice could be heard, each word was like thunderous strikes as the ears of most of the people were ringing.

Below the firmament where the flowers were raining down, a lady’s voice transmitted from the fragrant car formed from divine flowers, clear and moving as she said: “Since it’s like this, let us act.”

“The few of us will forcefully open the demon emperor’s tomb. To avoid the harming of any innocents, everyone back away!” An archaic voice filled with an imposing presence transmitted from the ancient golden war vehicle of the Ji family, like a tsunami that was unleashed, trembling the heavens with an unspeakable pressure.

The five figures of impressive standing spoke one after the other, their voices seemingly linking together and shocking the hearts of the cultivators. Like the rumbling of thunder, all the cultivators felt shaken as they bodies swayed and retreated involuntarily.

The five mysterious figures did not wait any longer as they knew that other extremely strong individuals would arrive soon. The five decided to work together to forcefully open the demon emperor's burial mound and obtain the treasures first.

From a distance of eight to nine miles away, Ye Fan still felt a frightening undulation as his heart shivered. Without any hesitation, he hastily retreated several miles further from this region.

"Boom!"

Not long after, a world-shaking sound transmitted from the direction of the demon emperor's burial mound that made one's soul shudder, resplendent divine lights shot through the clouds and pierced through heaven and earth. Like a volcano that had erupted, endless amounts of demonic energy surged out, dazzling lights surged forth and rushed out in all directions like a tsunami. Many cultivators were like duckweed as they were sent flying by the waves of energy, they had already backed a large distance away but were still affected by the tremors.

In the distance, Ye Fan was dumbstruck. He was so far away yet the undulations could still be felt, much of the vegetation was being destroyed and plenty of rocks were sent flying as he hid behind a stone mountain, his heart palpitating.

This tomb was simply too frightening, although countless years had passed and the celestial killing energy laid down by the great demonic emperor had weakened considerably, when assaulted by an external force it had suddenly exploded with a fearsome

demonic might and it could only be imagined how powerful the great demonic emperor that had ruled the entire race of demons in the eastern badlands was.

“The demonic emperor certainly lives up to his reputation as the expert that could look down disdainfully at all of the eastern badlands, the seal laid down while he was alive has such frightening might and his majesty back in the day could only be imagined!”

Before that majestic ancient palace, only five people remained and their figures could not be clearly seen as five dazzling balls of light floated there that made everyone sigh.

“The frightening talent of the great emperor of the demonic race, he certainly was an unparalleled existence within his generation!”

“The amount of demonic energy currently contained within this tomb is probably not even ten percent of his strength back in the day. Such a frightening might, simply thinking about it would make one feel shudders.”

Although the five important figures spoke like this, they did not stop as they continued to gather their divine energy and began to execute even thicker and more aggressive attacks.

“Boom!”

Like a divine ocean that overflowed to the sky or spillage from

the Milky way, the world was filled with boundless dazzling lights as endless divine lights attacked, the vast demonic energy surged as the area around the demonic emperor's burial mound seemed to boil over.

All the cultivators hurried to leave the area and nobody dared to tarry.

The five important figures continued to attack as they sacrificed their weapons and doggedly shook up the tomb to the extent that the everyday stars in the sky seemed dull and the entire world was trembling.

Endless amounts of divine lights and frightening demonic energy continued to shoot forth in all directions.

A long period of time passed and the five important figures had already attacked an innumerable amount of times but had only caused a corner of the tomb to have a crack.

"Boom!"

Once again working together and attacking strongly, the five used their powerful weapons that were spewing forth divine glows and combined the spiritual qi and energy of the five, finally causing a corner of the tomb to tear.

"Chi Chi Chi"

At this moment, streaks of multi-coloured sunlight flew out from the torn corner as they flew away in all directions, weapons that had their attained spiritual sense had escaped on their own!

The important figures reached forth with their big hands as they grabbed at the sky but several multi-coloured lights still managed to escape their net and either rushed past the horizon or deeper into the forest.

The cultivators who were looking on from a distance began to move as they hastily flew in all directions, towards the horizon or towards the deeper parts of the dense forest as they each chased the different streaks of multicolored lights.

“Chi”

A green streak landed at the location of the stone mountain where Ye Fan was located as it easily pierced into the cliff wall. Ye Fan was stunned, he had never thought that he could obtain something even though he hid so far away.

“Boom!”

At this time, the five important figures once again acted together as they wielded their five powerful weapons and attacked the tomb!

# Chapter 63 Unscrupulous Dao Practitioner

A gold light spilled from Ye Fan's fingers as he sliced the cliff face open. A greenish light could be seen immediately as half a knife was exposed as he grabbed it and pulled, a green glow promptly shrouded the area, causing him to squint his eyes.

"Ting!"

This was a azure coloured dagger, when pulled out it made a clear ringing metallic noise, green mist swirled as it was incomparably sharp. It was merely half a Chinese foot long and resembled a pond of green jade water, translucent and sparkling with wisps of cold air being emanated.

Ye Fan knew that this was certainly no ordinary item and if it had been collected by the great demon emperor as a weapon, it would certainly be extraordinary.

"Ha Ha……" At this moment, a fat cultivator who seemed to be enveloped in red light rode over on a mystical rainbow, although his body was obese, his actions were very nimble like a leaf that made no sound as it fell. He laughed: "Quite lucky, never did i expect to really chase down and find a spiritual weapon." Having said this, he reached forth his big hands towards the dagger in the Ye Fan's hands as he had a benevolent smile on his face: "Kid, this is a vicious weapon. You won't be able to subdue it. Come, let grandpa force it to yield."

Ye Fan really wanted to punch that smiling fat face which was

shrouded in red light, this fat cultivator was simply too fake and really thought that he was naive like a child. He then dodged by retreating backwards. The fat cultivator was very nimble as his fat hands moved with a “Shuaaa” and actually grabbed the dagger. He laughed loudly: “Kid, I’ll remember this favour. It’s a small world, the next time we meet, grandpa will properly return the favour.”

Having said these words, he immediately left with a “Chi!” sound and rode a mystical rainbow to the sky.

“Damned fatty, I’ll remember you!” Ye Fan cursed softly as he punched a fist into the air. A spiritual weapon had been stolen from him and this made him feel indignant.

“Your grandpa isn’t that fat, just a bit stout.” The fat cultivator who was over thirty years of age had very sensitive ears and although he had already flown several hundred metres away he still managed to hear Ye Fan’s soft mutterings. He looked back and exposed a mouth full of pristine white teeth as he laughed full of mirth: “The next time we meet, grandpa will give you good fortune.”

Ye Fan seeing his alertness and keenness, did not dare to utter a sound as he rolled his eyes and watched the fat cultivator saunter away into the distance.

The demonic emperor’s burial mound, many spiritual weapons had flown out with multicoloured lights flying in all directions. Many cultivators rode on mystical rainbows as they continually chased, the sky of the primitive ruins was filled with countless flashing lights.

“Chi!”

Barely half a minute had passed and another mystical rainbow came shooting towards Ye Fan’s direction, shocking him as he hurriedly dodged. A scarlet cloud that seemed to be a hot cloud of volcanic ash coalesced together speedily rushed over and impaled itself into the cliff face in front.

Ye Fan’s heart jumped, he felt that he was simply too lucky as he felt excitement fill his heart. Earlier the fat cultivator had snatched the dagger from him but there was actually another weapon that appeared before his eyes. He cautiously eyed his surroundings and saw that no one was nearby as a light once again flashed from his fingers as he cut the stone cliff and dug a scarlet red pearl out, as streaks of scarlet multicoloured lights shot in all directions.

“Ha Ha Ha…….” A loud laughter could be heard as a fat cultivator had a wide grin on his face and rode a mystical rainbow as he rushed over.

“Damn!” Ye Fan cursed in his heart as he grabbed the pearl that had scarlet light swirling around it and turned to run.

“This humble Daoist really has some fate with this young friend, I didn’t expect to meet you so soon.” The fat cultivator chuckled in his happiness with a “Shuaaa” as he appeared before Ye Fan, blocking his path. Reaching forth his big hands, he laughed and said: “This treasure and humble Daoist is brought together by fate, young friend lend it to me.”

“Daoist priest you’re simply bullying.” Ye Fen was indignant and gripped the pearl as he backed away: “You’ve already taken a spiritual weapon from me, I can’t hand this over to you.”

“A demon transformed into this pill, young friend you won’t be able to subdue it. Humble Daoist is doing this for your own good and came here just to subdue it.” The fat cultivator was all smiles and he laughed and stretched his fat hands, there was a “Shuaaa” as the red pearl was taken away.

Ye Fan was indignant to the point that the back of his teeth were ticklish: “Daoist priest, didn’t you say that if we met again you would bring me good luck. You also mentioned that you would return the favour. Why are you snatching my stuff? You’ve already obtained the dagger, give the pearl back to me.”

“That sort of saying is not right, young friend don’t you understand?” The fat cultivator had a happy smile on his face, boasting shamelessly with spirited expression as he said: “It’s precisely because of the favour that you did for me during the first meeting that during our second meeting, I immediately rushed over to subdue this pearl that a demon had transformed into, helping you to avoid a tragedy. This is the fortune that you gained from the favour that you gave on our first meeting.”

“@#$*&^” Ye Fan felt the impulse to hit him and really wanted to leave a shoe print on his face but thinking of the unfathomable cultivation level of this fat cultivator, he could only resist this urge.

“The Gods are unfathomable, young friend if it is fated we’ll meet again. This humble Daoist will be going!” The fat cultivator twisted his butt as he rode on a mystical rainbow and rushed to the sky. “Schhwaff” and he was already gone.

“Damned fatty! I hope we don’t meet within this lifetime!” Ye Fan was incensed and he felt burning resentment. This cultivator was simply too unscrupulous and lacking in morals.

“Boom!”

In the distance, the five important figures once again acted together as they used the mighty weapons within their hands to strike, managing to destroy another corner of the demonic emperor’s tomb as multicoloured sunlight shot forth in all directions again, even more spiritual weapons had rushed out. Although the five great experts were mighty and peerless, they could not stop all the multicoloured lights that were shooting to the sky and many of the weapons managed to escape their grasp. The surrounding cultivators had expressions of glee as they rode on mystical rainbows, flying in all directions as they followed the multicoloured lights.

Ye Fan was moodily sitting atop the stone mountain as he watched the multicoloured lights shoot in all directions once again. He was helpless as he muttered: “That damned fatty, really unscrupulous and evil. I curse him to have his stuff snatched and not even his personal bag will be left behind for him!”

“Chi!”

In the distant sky, a purple coloured light rushed over, like a falling star it hastily impaled itself into the cliff face before him. Ye Fan's eyes were wide in disbelief, there was actually a third spiritual weapon that deposited itself here. This was certainly very strange.

"This place……" He could sense that there was something special about this stone cliff face and there must certainly be something extraordinary here. There could not be such a miraculous coincidence that two to three spiritual weapons all embedded themselves into the same cliff face.

This time, Ye Fan did not act rashly but rather chose to wait for a very long period of time. He saw that no other person passed by the area and slowly made his way over as he mumbled: "That damned fatty won't appear this time right……"

He carefully dug into the cliff face again, immediately streaks of intoxicating purple light shot forth, shining on his hand and making it seem sparkling and translucent. The purple qi pervaded the air and made one feel extremely comfortable, it was actually a purple thumb ring, streaks of purple light could be seen like numerous brightly coloured strips, one look and immediately one would fall in love with it.

"That damned endlessly greedy fatty, snatching my two precious treasures otherwise I would already have collected three of them." Ye Fan was still indignant as he said: "This time I finally managed to avoid his notice."

“Humble Daoist is here!” Ye Fan had barely finished muttering to himself when a fat figure appeared once again, his face was filled with a mirthful expression and wrinkles could be seen on his forehead. His mouth was currently in a wide green as even his molars could be seen as he loudly laughed: “I really do have some affinity with you young friend.”

“My (#!@&(#!@&*!……” Ye Fan’s face was red, he had never imagined that this fat cultivator would be as sticky as a dogskin plaster* that stuck to him as he angrily said: “Only a ghost would have affinity with you!”

[Idiom*: used in TCM and also known as quack medicine or sham goods]

“You and I really fated to meet.” The fat cultivators face was calm and had a honourable expression as he seemed to count his fingers: “Look, in such a short period of time, we have already met thrice. How can you say that we don’t have any affinity. This is heaven’s will!”

“Heaven’s will your grandfather!” Ye Fan stood up on both legs and really wanted to stomp on his fat buttocks but after considering the difference in his strength, he finally managed to swallow his anger as he walked to the side rushing away as he shouted: “Spiritual weapon……”

He used all his strength to throw the thumb ring away, even if he let others steal it, he did not want this endlessly greedy cultivator to obtain it. Otherwise, he would be angry to the point of spitting out blood, a purple glow streaked through the sky.

The reaction speed of the fat cultivator was in complete contrast to his build and with a “Woosh” he had already rushed forth and the purple thumb ring had flown for barely hundred metres before it had already been caught. Thereafter he laughed happily as he landed and said: “Heaven’s will! This is definitely heaven’s will!”

Ye Fan really felt that he might spit out blood at any moment, this fatso was really to despicable and thick-skinned, purposefully antagonising people.

“Daoist priest, don’t you think you’re going too far?” Veins could be seen bulging on Ye Fan’s forehead as he continued: “Monks should have some strength of character, as humans we shouldn’t be too greedy.”

“This humble Daoist has always been self-disciplined, worldly objects seldom move my heart. Constantly brushing away all desires, my heart is still like the divine moon which shines down on us.”

”Seeing his spirited expression, Ye Fan’s face was dark as he said: “Since you are so self-disciplined, return that item to me!”

“A monk embraces mercy. Because you and I have fate, humble Daoist will not fear exhaustion and help you to avert three disasters, tackling this difficult task and using my own mortal flesh to subdue these three great demons.” The fat cultivator had a merciful expression on his face, seemingly very honest and straightforward as he read line after line of scriptures as though he

were an accomplished monk.

“You damned exuberant..... I denounce you!” Ye Fan grit his teeth as he said: “Daoist priest what’s your name?”

“Knowing my name is for free, surnamed Duan named De, my name is Duan De.

“No wonder you’re so lacking in morals, Duan De, broken morals*, clearly you’ve broken all your moral integrity!”

[T/N* Author does a play on words, 段德 is his name while 断德 means broken morals. Both words sound the same when read.]

# Chapter 64: Most Precious Treasure Of The Scheming Demonic Race

Ye Fan turned around and walked to the side as he cursed in a low tone that almost no one would be able to hear: “Damned fatty surnamed Duan, I curse that your future sons will have no ass!”

“Humble Daoist is a monk and will not marry or have kids.”

“You can even hear that?” Ye Fan was really a little frightened of him as he continued: “Old Daoist Duan you better be on your way, stealing three of my spiritual treasures, are you still unsatisfied?”

“I still have some affinity with little friend……” The fat cultivator mirthfully replied.

“Surnamed Duan you spirited fellow, you are bullying intolerably!” Ye Fan’s face was dark as he strode big steps towards the bottom of the mountain. He could not afford to offend this unscrupulous Daoist and could only leave.

“Karma gathers then dissipates, it seems that this humble Daoist and little friend’s karma ends here today. In the future it will be difficult to say, we may have the fortune to meet again.” The fat cultivator laughed and did not leave as he continued: “Now, humble Daoist feels that this stone cliff has some affinity with me and have decided to stay here and explore.”

Ye Fan was shocked, he did not expect the unscrupulous fatty to

be so perceptive. He had also realised that the stone cliff was certainly extraordinary, Ye Fan understanding this immediately halted his footsteps.

"Little friend since you've decided to stay, I guarantee that you will have some gains. However, spiritual treasures that are too dazzling, my advise would be for you to avoid them. This is really for your benefit, with your current cultivation there is no way for you to protect a spiritual weapon. If found out, the situation would be dire. Not everyone is as merciful as this humble Daoist, many people when snatching spiritual weapons they will also kill, by then even your life would be forfeit."

"Boom!"

At this moment, five experts were launching an earth shattering attack as the vast and immeasurable divine energy was like the galaxy in the highest of the heavens that collapsed and leaked, a vast body of energy that surged like waves and engulfed the sky.

All the cultivators were trembling and many people lost control of their mystical rainbows as they fell from the sky. An indescribable palpitation filled their hearts as they found it difficult to breathe, the boundless pressure was simply impossible to defend against and the souls of many of the cultivators began to tremble involuntarily.

This was the might of the five important figures, when their divine might was used it could shock the world, any living thing would be filled with fear as their hearts quivered.

“Kaboom!”

The final strike from the five peerless experts finally shattered the demon emperor’s burial mound as an explosion of demonic qi filled the sky, wreaking havoc in all directions.

The majestic ancient palace was making rumbling noises as it thoroughly fell apart.

At the same time, endless amounts of multicoloured sunlight shot forth in all directions, All the spiritual weapons that had been buried here had all rushed forth. Amongst them were some streaks of light that were more dazzling than the others, uniquely eye-catching and filled with lustre, illuminating the sky and glaring to the eyes, as though a mini sun were there, one did not need to think to understand that this was the strongest spiritual treasure.

The five peerless experts each executed their remarkable abilities as they stretched forth their big hands and each managed to grab one, glee clearly written on each of their faces. However, there were still a few of the spiritual weapons which were like mini suns that had escaped their grasp as they dashed to the sky, fleeing into the distance.

The few peerless experts did not chase, but rather chose to guard the area, using their powerful divine sense to sweep in all directions as though they were searching for something, allowing the different kinds of spiritual sense weapons to turn into multicoloured lights and escape.

The vast and immeasurable energy wave surged to the distant sky as all the cultivators seemed to become mad, ignoring the danger as they chased within the brilliant light, acquiring the spiritual sense weapons.

The demon emperor's tomb had thoroughly fallen apart and rubble shot forth in all directions. All that was left was a wave of dazzling energy.

"The most precious treasure of the eastern badlands' human race, why hasn't it appeared?"

"The great demon emperor's weapon, it's rumoured to not be inferior to our most precious treasure, why hasn't it appeared either?"

The five peerless experts had puzzled expressions on their faces as their powerful divine sense continued to sweep.

"Boom!"

At this moment, from within the ball of dazzling light that had not scattered, a flash of light that could make the sky seem dim in comparison suddenly rushed out.

It was simply too dazzling, as though the sun had suddenly exploded!

Even the five extraordinary experts had difficulty keeping their eyes open as their eyes were pierced to the point of feeling pain. Their reactions were insanely fast as they all immediately stretched forth their large hands.

“Chi!”

The divine light streaked through the sky, it had an incomparably strong energy and the entire sky seemed to tremble, the frightening fluctuations were vast and immeasurable as it forced the five experts to retreat, causing even the weapons in their hands to become dull and lose all their glow!

The resplendent divine light streaked through the sky, causing a frightening energy fluctuation that caused many of the cultivators in the surroundings to fall from the sky. It was releasing an incomparably strong demonic energy as though an entire world were combusting and nothing could stop it.

“It’s the weapon previously used by the great demon emperor! Comparable to the most precious treasure of the eastern badlands’ human race!”

The five experts came to their senses as three of them immediately began to chase. Two of them did not leave as they wanted to continue searching for the most precious treasure of legends.

In the distance, Ye Fan was speechless because he noticed that the resplendent light was currently racing towards this stone

mountain.

The fat cultivator by the side began to rub his hands together as he laughed uncontrollably: “This humble Daoist really has good luck, the weapon of the great demon emperor that isn’t one whit inferior to the most precious treasure of the human race of the eastern badlands, if it’s obtained by me……”

“Can you catch it?” Ye fan frantically questioned, the demon emperor’s greatest treasure was currently speeding over and if the fat cultivator had no way to catch it, it would grind them into fine powder, that would be too tragic.

“You’re right, this humble Daoist doesn’t have that much good fortune, even if I’m able to catch it, the three peerless experts who are chasing it would definitely kill me, let’s go!” Having said this, he pulled Ye Fan, faster than a rabbit, “whoosh” as he dashed to another mountain.

Tens of thousands of divine lights shot forth from the weapon of the great demon emperor, dazzling and brilliant as nothing could be clearly seen. The blazing light made it difficult for one to keep their eyes open, as though billions of stars were exploding at the same time causing the entire world to violently trembled as it smashed into the stone mountain with a “Boom!”

“It’s over……” The fat cultivator continued to rub his hands: “This complicates matters, there is certainly an extraordinary treasure under the stone mountain however it definitely won’t be able to handle the impact from the most valuable treasure causing it to turn into dust, it’s such a pity.”

The entire area was drowned by the light as it became a vast body of energy, boundless as it undulated, causing all the surrounding cultivators to be flung away, some cultivators that were too near instantly disintegrated, forming into clouds of bloody mist.

At this point, something happened that caused everyone to be shocked. The stone mountain crumbled as an incomparably gentle green light was emitted, streaks of green shot towards the sky.

An extremely gentle and pristine multicoloured light that made one feel calm, indistinct green that was filled with the vigor of life, as though an oasis were floating in the sky.

A large green treasure pot came flying from the ground as it sucked the great demon emperor's weapon within.

"Limitless, that that that..... That god!" At this moment, the fat cultivator was also at a loss for words as he breathed heavily before calming down as he loudly shouted: "It's the demonic race's treasure gathering pot!"

"Someone prepared the treasure gathering pot and hid it there, what great planning to scheme to take the most valuable treasure of the demon emperor!" The fat cultivator immediately understood why so many spiritual sense weapons were attracted to the stone cliff. There was actually a treasure gathering pot of legends there. Although the person had been suppressing the power of the treasure pot, it had still attracted many spiritual weapons here.

The treasure gathering pot seemed to be carved from green agate, astonishingly green, bright and dazzling, pure and holy green light filled the sky that was endlessly gentle and made one feel comfortable all over.

At this moment, a glaring light was flashing from within the treasure gathering pot, it was precisely the most valuable treasure of the demonic race, lights flashed, extremely piercing as it was simply impossible to see exactly how it looked like. It continued to rotate within the treasure pot, as though the stars in the universe were rotating, vast and immeasurable demonic energy often shot out together with blazing divine lights.

Ye Fan's heart was trembling, standing in front of the treasure gathering pot was a person, a magnificent style unmatched in his or her generation, splendid and above the land under heaven , it was actually the perfect woman whom he had seen earlier.

At this moment, she appeared leisurely and pure. Perfect and without any blemish as before, simply exceptional looks. She put away the treasure gathering bowl hastily and became a flash of light and disappeared in the distance. Only leaving behind echoes of laughter that resembled the sounds of nature: "Many thanks for the aid, seniors. If not even if the descendants of the Demon Emperor had arrived in person, it would be hard to genuinely receive the great emperor's treasure……"

The three peerless experts who had chased it here had cold expressions on their faces, they had carved several 'Dao Inscriptions' outside the demon emperor's tomb and formed

extremely power ‘Heavenly Influences’ and although it had not stopped the most valuable treasure of the demon emperor, it had been of great use in reducing the force that could seemingly overcome any obstacle. In the end, a person had been quietly waiting in the dark like a fisherman and used the treasure gathering pot to obtain the most valuable treasure.

The three peerless experts acted at the same time as they bombarded towards the light that had nearly disappeared into the horizon. This attack was so strong that even deities or demons would find it difficult to block, even if they themselves were faced with it they would find it difficult to bear. An energy fluctuation like a tsunami surged forward and the entire sky seemed to blaze with a blinding light, the surrounding cultivators were all terrified as they hurriedly dodged.

Even so, this strong attack seemed to miss as nothing was hit. Multicoloured lights filled the sky in front and the girl dived in a flash, rushing into the gentle light as she disappeared.

“This little demon girl had long made preparations and carved ‘Dao Inscriptions’ forming ‘Heavenly Influences’, traversing through the void. I’m afraid she already more than several thousand miles away.”

The three peerless experts spoke coldly, there was someone who actually schemed against them, stealing food from the tiger’s mouth as they took away the most valuable treasure of the demon emperor, making it difficult for them to bear.

“It’s easy to open the demonic emperor’s tomb however

obstructing the most valuable treasure is simply too difficult. It seems that we actually helped her accomplish her aims……”

Lights flashed as the three peerless experts disappeared as they hastily sped towards the heart of region of the demon emperor’s tomb. The most valuable treasure of the human race of the eastern badlands had not appeared and this was the item that was most sought after.

“Why hasn’t the most valuable treasure of the human race of the eastern badlands appeared…..” The fat cultivator softly muttered.

Ye Fan was also very curious, he had continually heard people speaking of the legendary precious treasure but till now he did not know what the item was. It seemed that even the supreme experts like the important figures were all thirsting for it as they seemed to be willing to use any means to obtain it.

# Chapter 65: The Mysterious Aurichalcite

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

Sounds of streaking could be heard as divine lights continued to rush towards the stone mountain, as though there were a meteor shower passing by.

Earlier, the treasure gathering pot lithely appeared before disappearing into the distance, it had released endless amounts of light that attracted all the nearby spiritual weapons.

“Karma, just karma!” The fat cultivator had a big smile on his face as he threw Ye Fan while nimbly rushing towards that rain of light.

At the same time, streaks of mystical rainbows could be seen as all the cultivators in this region rushed to gather spiritual weapons from the rain of light.

“Aaaahh!”

However, this was not a bountiful feast as the swiftly flying spiritual weapons were simply vicious, causing tens of people to be pierced as they went by, leaving behind a bloody trail of over ten corpses.

The fat cultivator shrieked miserably as he scuttled and bounced backwards, a golden short sword pierced into his buttocks and his

hands were firmly grasping a blood red shield.

Although he was grimacing in pain, there were no wounds on his body. After pulling the sword out from his buttocks, there was no blood flowing and he talked as though nothing had happened: “Weapons that gained spiritual awareness, if they don’t stop on their own, they are really hard to capture.”

In comparison to the other cultivators, he was considered lucky as many people were pierced to death by the rain of light.

“Shuaaa”

The fat cultivator once again chased forward, the other cultivators also rode on mystical rainbows as they closely chased, unwilling to give up the chance of obtaining more treasures.

At this moment, even more lights flashed over, of which many landed near the mountain peak, there were several lights that landed where Ye Fan was. However, when he saw what these things were, he immediately lost all interest, most of it were just rubble from the destroyed demon emperor’s tomb.

Several cultivators rushed over to search the mountaintop as they took measure of Ye Fan with their eyes.

“Dong!”

At this moment, an object fell from the sky and heavily smashed

into the ground. Ye Fan had just picked it up when he was surrounded by several cultivators. This made him feel exasperated, it seemed that he would not have any other gains today, even if he was lucky to obtain one hundred spiritual weapons, he would not have the ability to retain them.

"Whoever wants it, please go ahead." He immediately threw the item on the ground.

"A lump of aurichalcite, who would want that!"

"I was wondering what treasure it was, it's only a piece of useless aurichalcite."

Although the cultivators said this, they still picked up the aurichalcite to carefully inspect it before tossing it at Ye Fan.

"I think it's better if you keep it for yourself."

"Which family's child is this, so young yet running around already. Simply tired of living."

The few cultivators were disappointed as they left, rushing towards the other mountains.

Ye Fan picked up the aurichalcite chunk that was the size of a palm as he carefully inspected it, it was very heavy and seemed to have been broken off from some weapon.

“Shuaaa, Shuaaa, Shuaaa”

Another group of over ten cultivators landed as they carefully inspected every corner of the mountain before requesting for the useless aurichalcite in Ye Fan’s hand, using their divine sense to inspect it before tossing it back to him and leaving.

In this manner, several tens of cultivators continually appeared on the mountain as they all inspected the useless aurichalcite within his possession before throwing it back to him. Ye Fan was speechless, this group of people must be itching to dig deep into the ground for treasures as they thoroughly inspected the aurichalcite, if he wanted to obtain a spiritual weapon today it would be harder than ascending to heaven.

Finally, the fat cultivator flew over with a wide smile on his face as he laughed, it seemed that he had made quite a bit of gains.

“Ai, young lad what are you hiding, don’t run and let this humble Daoist see it. Could there be some demon that is harassing you, let this humble Daoist help you subdue it.”

The treasure this time around, no matter what I won’t give it to you.” Ye Fan put on an act as he hugged the useless aurichalcite within his bosom.

Hearing this, the fat cultivator laughed: “Humble Daoist really has affinity with young friend, I’m able to help you subdue a fourth demon.”

“Don’t try that on me again! If you want this treasure it isn’t impossible but you must take something to exchange for it.” Ye Fan stretched a hand out in demand, he felt that although this fat cultivator was very unscrupulous and hateable, he was not violent or evil, it was unlikely that he would just suddenly kill him and that was why Ye Fan was not that afraid of him.

“You and I have repeatedly come across each other, it seems we really have an affinity to meet, alright, I’ll give you a piece of the legendary most precious treasure.” Having said this, the fat cultivator fished something out of his bosom.

“Who has affinity with you, we better not meet again within this lifetime.” Seeing the jade pendant that the fat cultivator passed over, Ye Fan felt even more indignant, this piece of jade was dim without light, calling it a piece of jade was too much. It was similar to a broken rock and even more frustrating was that a corner of it was also missing.

Ye Fan wanted to immediately throw it away but was stopped by the fat cultivator as he forced it into his bosom: “Keep it, this is something good. It may be enough to save your life when the time comes.” Having said this, the fat cultivator very nimbly took the useless aurichalcite over.

“God dammit, this is the treasure that you were speaking about, isn’t it just a piece of useless aurichalcite!” The fat cultivator glanced over at Ye Fan but did not have the slightest amount of sloppiness as he kept turning it around constantly as he earnestly and carefully looked at it for a full fifteen minutes before finally

using his divine sense to inspect it again.

"Klang!

In the end, the fat cultivator threw the aurichalcite piece onto the ground, his face filled with disappointment as he said: "It seems that I've thought too much, you can keep this treasure of yours."

Ye Fan looked down on this unscrupulous cultivator, he had never seen someone so greedy, even a piece of aurichalcite chunk that had rust on it, he had inspected it for so long.

"Pearls covered in dust are not recognised by people, since it's like this I'll keep it for myself." Ye Fan picked up the aurichalcite piece, so many cultivators had inspected this useless aurichalcite and he did not think that this was some treasure, he only did this to spite the fat cultivator.

At this point, he no longer had any mood to stay within this ruins and wanted to leave.

The unscrupulous cultivator did not stop him as he constantly muttered: "The most precious treasure of the human race of the eastern badlands, where could it be....." His hands were clasped behind his back as he walked to and fro atop the mountain.

In no time at all, Ye Fan had already left the region far behind, there were no cultivators in the surroundings as he circulated the

mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture, speedily flying out of the ruins.

Wisps of golden light were emitted from his golden sea of bitterness, flowing through his entire body, nourishing his organs and bones, making him feel full of energy as he speedily advanced.

“Ai!”

At this moment, Ye Fan looked down and was shocked to see that the useless aurichalcite had gone through a mysterious change, losing the layer of rust on it as it suddenly exuded an ancient and imposing atmosphere.

At a glance the aurichalcite did seem ordinary as though it were the broken fragment of some weapon however on close inspection, it was currently releasing an implicit charm, giving one a feeling of endless ancientness and an imposing feeling.

Circulating the mystical arts within the Dao Scripture, wisps of gold shot forth from his fingertips towards the aurichalcite piece. Even so, no matter how much golden energy he transmitted to the aurichalcite, it remained the same, ancient and silent.

“This item doesn’t seem ordinary……”

Ye Fan placed the aurichalcite back within his bosom as he continued running, the golden sea of bitterness continually emitted golden wisps which provided him with endless spiritual qi, allowing him to run faster and faster.

“Siiii!”

Suddenly, Ye Fan was shocked as he felt that there was a cold just below his navel, thereafter his sea of bitterness seemed to have something additional within it. He hurriedly stopped as he found that the aurichalcite within his bosom had disappeared as he immediately thought of something as he inspected within.

“This……” The aurichalcite had actually appeared within his sea of bitterness, quietly sitting there without any movement, like a boulder from ancient times, steady and imposing.

The soybean sized gold sea of bitterness was like a brilliant moon in the darkness, besides the page of the extremely small golden book, there was now an ancient aurichalcite within, it was located in the centre and actually pushed the page of golden book to the side.

Although the golden paper was circulating streaks of divine radiance, dazzling and bright, it simply could not affect the aurichalcite as it was pushed aside.

“What exactly is this aurichalcite…..” Ye Fan felt shock within his heart as he carefully observed his golden sea of bitterness, finally noticing that there were many mysterious ‘Dao Inscriptions’ that had appeared on the aurichalcite.

# Chapter 66: Yang Tomb And Yin Grave

Ye Fan had a limited understanding of ‘Dao Inscriptions’ and had only heard Elder Wu Qing Feng brushed through on the subject, really strong weapons would have ‘Dao Inscriptions’ carved on them and they could be said to be the life and spirit of the weapon.

Of course the usage of ‘Dao Inscriptions’ was certainly not limited to this, being used on weapons was only one aspect, it also had a myriad of endless uses in other aspects. For example: It could be carved into a mountain’s ley lines, forming various different ‘Influence’ gathering mysterious energies to allow the area to become a mysterious ‘Domain’.

The profound ‘Dao Inscriptions’ are truly extraordinary, containing unimaginable energy, after engraving it, it can change the characteristics and type of the item, reconciling life and death. To the point where after some strange divine ‘Dao Inscriptions’ are carved, it can even affect the flow of time within a fixed area, really achieving the concept of ‘Seizing time is but a thought away’.

Then there are those abstruse ‘Dao Inscriptions’ which can only be carved onto rare ingredients, after going through a series of intricate and zero-margin for error arrangement, it can provide a strong divine energy which enables one to travel through the world, crossing the void and appearing from one place to another in an instant.

There are also those numerous and complication ‘Dao Inscriptions’ which can form ‘Heavenly Influences’, containing an

unimaginable amount of energy and transformation within them.

Needless to say, many of the strong ‘Dao Inscriptions’ were not passed on through the world but rather in the hands of the Sacred Grounds or ancient aristocratic family, withholding this information, outsiders simply do not have an inkling on how powerful they are and can only guess from some rumours and legends.

In reality, the profundity of ‘Dao Inscriptions’ covers a very large area. It is rumoured that ‘Dao Inscriptions were formed from almighty individuals in ancient times, after understanding heaven and earth, copying it down and passing it to the world, forming the current ‘Dao Inscriptions’.

The normal cultivator would simply have no chance to come in contact with domains, only when their strength reached a certain level would they be able to practice ‘Dao Inscriptions’. From a certain perspective, ‘Dao Inscriptions’ are the understandings of heaven and earth that the almighty individuals of ancient times copied down, the stronger the cultivator the more he would be keen to research these ‘Dao Inscriptions’ that have been spread through the world.

The surface of the mysterious aurichalcite did not have any ‘Dao Inscriptions’, only the broken off part showed numerous and densely packed Dao Inscriptions, very complicated and profound, simply impossible for a normal person to understand. Although it was so profound, it had a natural aura of the Dao and one look at it made one’s emotions deeply stir up.

“It seems like something that was formed naturally……” Ye Fan muttered. Elder Wu Qing Feng had once said that there were some precious treasures that had naturally occurring ‘Dao Inscriptions’ within them, not carved by humans and extraordinary, simply impossible to copy and is the basis for it being so formidable.

“Could it really be naturally occurring Dao Inscriptions……” Ye Fan was unsure as his understanding of Dao Inscriptions was limited, he only had some faint suspicions.

Suddenly, Ye Fan felt a strange fluctuation, he noticed that the road in front of him had been cut off, misty without end, as wisps of strange mist shrouded the entire front area.

At the same time, he could hear the roaring of an azure dragon that was shaking the sky, The important figure from the ancient aristocratic Ji family was sitting on a gold war vehicle as he rushed by, an austere atmosphere filled this entire mountainous region.

“Temporarily seal up the ruins, no one is allowed to leave!” Nine river dragons were dragging a car, blocking the forward path, the important figure of the Ji family was leaving endless amounts of Dao Inscriptions on the mountain’s ley lines, blocking the forward path.

In another direction, nine Qilin beasts were pulling a jade carriage, soaring on clouds, riding on mist, divine might overflowing to the sky as they blocked off the east side. At the same time, in the other directions, there were the sounds of similar exclamations as the few important figures sealed the entire ruins, preventing anyone from leaving.

Ye Fan's heart was in shock, he felt that something was amiss as he hurriedly stopped. Stopping his circulating of the mystical arts recorded in the Dao Scripture as his golden sea of bitterness regained its calm before disappearing.

The entire ruins was in a clamor as many of the cultivators did not know what was happening and actually imagined that the important figures were planning to massacre all of them.

"What's going on?"

"Why aren't we allowed to leave?"

Many of the loose cultivators were nervous, only the cultivators of the larger sects were calm, without expressions of panic.

"The most valuable treasure of the eastern badland's human race has not shown itself, the few important figures are panicking!"

"That's right, they're blocking the path out in fear that someone might bring it away."

"These five important figures were unable to find the most valuable treasure of the eastern badland's human race, is it possible for others to obtain it?"

The cultivators were all in a heated discussion, when they

realised that they were trapped here because of the most valuable treasure, a majority of them calmed down as they never held any hopes of obtaining it.

The five important figures carved Dao Inscriptions onto the mountain's ley lines, sealing the four directions before returning to the devastated tomb of the demon emperor as they began to thoroughly search anew.

"How can there be no sign whatsoever of the most valuable treasure of the eastern badland's human race? After the destruction of the demon emperor's tomb it should explode forth with an earth-shattering pressure."

The five important figures spoke softly but did not hide their words, they simply did not have a reason to do so.

"Where could the Desolate Pagoda possibly be, why hasn't it appeared yet……"

"Missing for over ten thousand years, the Desolate Pagoda should see the light of day once more, why isn't there a single trace of it."

In the distance, many cultivators were apprehensive, the few important figures clearly wanted to get the most valuable treasure at all costs, if they did not find it, who knew how long they would be trapped here.

Ye Fan was surprised, it was only now that he realised the most valuable treasure was actually called 'Desolate Pagoda', just the name alone made one feel that it would certainly be extraordinary.

Several cultivators from the larger sects were in discussion, discussing the past of this most valuable treasure.

“It’s rumoured that the Desolate Pagoda has existed for countless years, exactly which era it was handed down is simply impossible to fathom.”

“It’s rumoured that it existed the same instance where the Eastern badlands came to be, when this vast and endless land gained spiritual sense, the Desolate Pagoda was there.”

“What exactly does the Desolate Pagoda look like?” Many cultivators were not clear on this.

“As the name implies, clearly it is a Pagoda, the nine layered Desolate pagoda possesses a boundless amount of might that none can measure since time immemorial. It is able to suppress all the strong cultivators in the world!”

“Is it that frightening?”

“Even if you were a peerless existence that could look down on all existences within the eastern badlands, you cannot block the suppression of the Desolate Pagoda, otherwise how would it have come to be the most valuable treasure of the eastern badland’s human race.”

“Since ancient times, it is unknown how many peerless experts

bear a grudge against the Desolate Pagoda, no one can possibly block its suppression."

The front path was blocked and Ye Fan had no way to leave, returning to the depths of the ruins, he heard the discussions of the cultivators and was fascinated, the Desolate Pagoda was simply heaven-defying, arousing one's desire.

At this moment, the unscrupulous cultivator Duan De appeared as he speedily rushed over to where Ye Fan was. His entire being seemed to be blazing as his speed was phenomenal, in a blink he had appeared before him with an excited expression as he asked: "Where's that piece of useless aurichalcite?"

"I threw it into the pond already."

"What?!" The unscrupulous cultivator had shock written all over his face followed by panic as he grabbed Ye Fan's shoulders and shook him: "Where is the pond, hurry bring me there!"

Ye Fan's heart was moved, could it be that the aurichalcite had some great background? Initially he had thought that it had something to do with the most precious treasure, when he found out that the Desolate Pagoda was in the form of a nine storey pagoda, he immediately understood that the aurichalcite could not possibly be the most valuable treasure, it was totally different from that of a pagoda.

"The ruins is so big, dense forest and mountains everywhere, I've long lost my sense of direction and forgotten where I've been to."

“No! You must remember!” The face of the unscrupulous cultivator was fearsome, both his eyes were red as he grabbed onto Ye Fan tightly.

“Isn’t it just a piece of useless aurichalcite? You tossed and turned it for a full fifteen minutes before throwing it to the ground, why are you looking for it now. Could that useless piece of aurichalcite actually have some background?”

“Even if I say it you won’t understand, now hurry and find it for me!” The unscrupulous cultivator did not smile and had a stern face as he dragged Ye Fan along.

Ye Fan immediately understood that the mysterious aurichalcite was certainly extraordinary and seemed to be very important.

“God dammit, this humble Daoist actually threw away something that I had already obtained.....” The fat cultivators face was pale as he was filled with frustration and regret, totally different from his earlier expression of mirth and happiness.

Ye Fan was apprehensive, he could feel that the unscrupulous cultivator seemed to be willing to kill and he did not want to bang himself onto the knife’s edge as he earnestly walked forward.

“Young friend, you must carefully think, if we are able to find that piece of aurichalcite, whatever you want I will hand it over to you!” The fat cultivators face was stern as he emphasised: “You must carefully recall!”

“What exactly is that thing?”

“Stop asking questions, if you ask anymore questions, this humble Daoist will become angry!” The fat cultivator viciously slapped his right hand as he said: “How could I be so muddle headed, a lifetime of looking for treasures but in the end still failed to see it when it was right in front of me.” It could be seen that he was very regretful and blamed himself to the point where he wanted to cut off that hand of his.

“Our paths diverged from here, thereafter I saw you running towards the distance……” The fat cultivator had brought Ye Fan to the mountain where they had split paths.

“That’s right, it’s here. Let me think which direction did I take off in……” Ye Fan walked at a normal pace towards the bottom of the mountain, the unscrupulous cultivator followed close, not rushing him as he wanted him to slowly recall.

Ye Fan walked very slowly as he thought about how to get rid of the fat cultivator. Unknowingly, the two had already walked past three mountains and when climbing the fourth one, Ye Fan had an expression of glee as he said: “It’s here.”

Seeing where his finger was pointed, the fat cultivator’s face became ugly, atop this mountain ridge was a dark and deep naturally occurring pool, silent like a rock without any waves, emitting a cold air that made one’s heart shiver.

“Don’t tell me that you threw it into this deep pool!” A demonic light seemed to be flashing from the fat cultivator’s eyes which immediately made Ye Fan panic, he could faintly feel that something was amiss, as though the fat cultivator could see through his intentions.

At this moment, Ye Fan was extremely nervous as he hurriedly gathered his wits about him as he worked hard to reenact a scene of him standing by the dark deep pool and throwing the piece of useless aurichalcite in.

The fat cultivator’s eyes returned to normal as he grit his teeth and said: “You wastrel! I..... I am of a mind to throw you in as well!”

“Isn’t it just a piece of useless metal?” Ye Fan’s face seemed to be indifferent.

“Splash”

The fat cultivator abruptly leapt into the deep pool, initially a divine glow could be seen flashing beneath the surface of the water however after a while it became dull, without light as the dark waters of the deep pool regained calm.

Ye Fan waited for a full two minutes but the unscrupulous cultivator had not come back as he muttered: “This fatty who is so lacking in morals couldn’t have gotten his just desserts inside right?”

Another minute passed and the surface of the water broke as the

fat cultivator rushed out, his entire body covered in a thick layer of black ice.

"Bang!"

Within the back mystical ice, lights continually flashed and ten breaths worth of time passed before the divine lights from the unscrupulous cultivator finally broke through the ice, causing the ground to be littered with pieces of ice. His face was currently very pale as his lips were even shivering.

"God dammit, almost freezed this humble Daoist to death." His entire body was trembling, quivering and shaking uncontrollably as his body continually released a divine glow expel the cold air, black wisps could be seen emitting from his body as the surrounding vegetation was immediately frozen by the black mist, thereafter turning into dust.

In the distance, Ye Fan took a sharp intake of cold air, he had chosen this dark pool as he felt that it was deep enough. He never expected it to be this frightening. Those sturdy ice pieces that fell to the ground caused the area of over ten metres around it to be frozen as many boulders shattered, even Ye Fan who was far away could feel the bone piercing cold.

"Daoist have you managed to find it?"

"I actually went down several thousand metres and saw a broken plaque along the way, there were two words 'Deep Pool' carved on it, unfathomably deep, I have no idea how deep this dark pool is!"

“Daoist why did you toss it away initially, you’re regretting it now right……”

“Don’t talk about it anymore!”

Seeing the flustered and exasperated expression on the fat cultivator’s face, Ye Fan almost laughed, he was feeling tremendously good but an expression of nervousness was on his face as he said: “Could it really have been a treasure?”

The fat cultivator’s face was pale as he angrily walked to and fro: “I don’t have a common language with you!”

Ye Fan tactfully walked to the side as he plucked two wild fruits and began to feast.

Seeing his indifference as he even had the mood to eat wild fruits, the fat cultivator had a gloomy expression as he said: “You damned wastrel! You actually tossed it into the deep pool, I…… I really want to kill you!”

“Old Daoist, you were the one who threw it away, why are you blaming me now? Didn’t you also treat it like garbage initially……”

“I…… I hate myself!” The unscrupulous cultivator really wanted to slap himself as he once again jumped into the deep pool.

This time, he went for over two hours before finally breaking the surface, he was already a big block of ice as black lights flashed with a piercing cold that chilled the bone.

Ye Fan hid far away, the unscrupulous cultivator took a full minute before finally breaking through the ice, his entire body was black and purple, all the pores on his body were releasing a black mist as the entire region atop the mountain became covered with black ice, vegetation withered and many boulders were frozen and shattered.

After a long period of time, the unscrupulous cultivator finally recovered as he disappointedly walked out of the icy region, sitting on the ground with his buttocks he muttered: “I really hate myself……”

By the side, Ye Fan was secretly feeling schadenfreude, seeing the crestfallen expression on the fatty who was lacking in morals made him feel an indescribable sense of pleasure.

Suddenly, the unscrupulous cultivator seemed to think of something as he suddenly jumped up and looked to the distant volcano before gazing back at the black deep pool as he exclaimed: “I understand! The demon emperor has two burial mounds, one is a Yang tomb while the other is a Ying grave!”

Ye Fan was shocked by his actions as he questioned: “Daoist what are you saying?”

The fat cultivator ignored him as he earnestly began carving on

the ground. The active volcano and the dark deep pool was marked out on the ground. Afterwards, he continued to mark down the topography of the surrounding area in scale.

“God dammit, it’s really like that! One Yang and one Ying, forming a Tai Chi symbol, the heart which is the source of the divine spring of energy is buried in the Yang tomb while the real icy cold corpse is buried in the Ying grave.” The fat cultivator’s face seemed to glow in comprehension.

# Chapter 67: Desolate Pagoda And Aurichalcite

Note that we have changed the name of orichalcum to aurichalcite.

The unscrupulous cultivator had his hands clasped behind his back as he frowned and walked to and fro while muttering: “The demon emperor has a fully justified reputation, he actually set up a yang tomb and a ying grave, this area..... is a gap that he purposefully left behind?”

The fat cultivator was bewildered as he stared at the distant active volcano before looking back at the profound black pond, his eyebrows were scrunched together as he said: “If I didn’t guess wrongly, this ying grave isn’t that simple, whoever goes in will perish.....”

“Daoist, aren’t you still alive and well?” Ye Fan stood by the side and interrupted.

“Agitating me on purpose?” The unscrupulous cultivator now found Ye Fan an eye sore as he said: “You wastrel, might as well just go down and accompany the demon emperor!”

“Don’t, Daoist don’t vent your anger on me. This really has nothing to do with me.”

“Ai!” The unscrupulous cultivator sat on the ground as he

seemed dejected: “Although I found such a heaven-defying secret, I have no way to open the ying grave, thinking about it there will certainly be a sure kill formation down below. Earlier, if I had continued to the depths of the black pond and entered the ying palace, i’m afraid that I would have no longer existed in this world.”

“You mean to say that the most valuable treasure of the eastern badland’s human race, the Desolate Pagoda is actually under the black pond within the ying grave?” Ye Fan sat atop a boulder in the distance, not daring to go too near for fear of being unlucky: “No wonder the five important figures did not manage to find the Desolate Pagoda, it was actually sealed here.”

The unscrupulous cultivator ignored him as he had an expression of thoughtfulness, thereafter he began to scratch the ground, as though he were deducing the different connections between the yang tomb and the ying grave. Finally, he let out a sigh as he had an expression of helplessness: “Losing the most precious treasure but actually finding the ying grave, however I am unable to enter it. This is really making me regretful and distressed!”

“Aren’t there a few important figures there?” Ye Fan pointed at the five peerless experts above the active volcano.

“Even if they were to go in, I’m afraid that they would not be able to leave in one piece. This is a sure-kill formation! The yang tomb was something the demon emperor purposefully left behind with a gap, allowing the demon race’s most valuable treasure as well as his spring of divine energy to pass on to his descendants. This is the place where he really rests, where he will not permit anyone to

disturb. Exposing the yang tomb is also for hiding the ying grave! Maybe there are also other uses, one yang and one ying, forming a Tai Chi symbol, simply profound." Having said this, the unscrupulous cultivator had a disappointed and frustrated expression: "Unless we have the most valuable treasure of the eastern badland's human race, even if peerless experts could break the sure-kill formation, they would have no way to subdue the ying grave, it would rush into the ground beneath the eastern badlands, like a dragon returning to the ocean, without a trace to follow."

"The Desolate Pagoda is so miraculous that it can even subdue the demon emperor's ying grave? Even stronger than peerless experts?" Ye Fan had an expression of astonishment.

"Of course!" The unscrupulous cultivator had a yearning look: "It's rumoured that the Desolate Pagoda has existed for an endless amount of time, exactly which era it was passed down from is simply unfathomable. There is nothing within this world, human or object that it cannot subdue!"

"Is it really that fearsome?"

The fat cultivator's thoughts seemed to be wandering far away as he continued: "Since ancient times, whether immortals actually exist has never been confirmed. No one can possibly confirm this. However, every legend regarding immortals within the eastern badlands has something to do with the Desolate Pagoda."

"What relation would they have with the Desolate Pagoda?" Ye Fan had an expression of astonishment.

“It’s rumoured that within the endless years, the eastern badlands did have an immortal before, it’s been recorded down in ancient text, the few times this happened all these ‘immortals’ were subdued and killed by the Desolate Pagoda!”

“No way, the Desolate Pagoda is that frightening?!” Ye Fan felt shocked, whether immortals existed even now there was no confirmation on this. It could be imagined that if immortals really existed, they would certainly be existences above all cultivators! Strong to that extent yet unable to block the Desolate Pagoda from subduing them, this was simply too astonishing.

“Naturally it’s frightening, otherwise why would so many important figures come here! I think it won’t be too long before the leader of a Sacred Ground personally arrives, the eastern badlands is simply too large and some people will receive the news much later than others. Once they find out, they will definitely form ‘Dao Inscriptions’ and pass through the void to arrive here.

“What background does this Desolate Pagoda have to be so extraordinary and strong?” Ye Fan’s heart was currently racing.

“It’s rumoured that even before the eastern badlands gained spiritual awareness, the Desolate Pagoda was already in existence. No one truly knows where it came from.”

“It’s such a pity, a treasure that you had actually gotten was thrown away by Daoist. Treating the most precious treasure as a useless piece of aurichalcite.” Ye Fan shook his head as he sighed,

purposefully showing such an attitude.

Hearing this, the face of the unscrupulous cultivator grew ugly, even more green than the colour of the aurichalcite as he angrily said: “If it weren’t for you I’d already have it in my grasp.”

“Daoist, you can’t say it like that. You were the one who threw it away in the first place. It’s such a pity, that Desolate Pagoda.”

“Who told you that it’s the Desolate Pagoda? Which sentence of mine said that it was the most precious treasure of the eastern badland’s human race?”

Ye Fan was shocked: “Since it isn’t the Desolate Pagoda, why are you getting so frantic? Isn’t it just a useless piece of aurichalcite? I feel that it has nothing to do with the Desolate Pagoda.”

“What do you know? Stupid child, I can’t be bothered with you!” The unscrupulous cultivator had a fire in his belly, he was unwilling to carry on talking about the aurichalcite.

Although Ye Fan seemed barely eleven to twelve years old, he was actually already past twenty and being called a stupid child he was indignant as he softly said: “F***!”

[T/N* : 告非 is a slang for F*** but the first word can be used as tell/report/inform/sue]

“You’re going to inform who?” The unscrupulous cultivator was

shocked as he questioned.

“I F*** you!” Ye Fan’s heart did not feel good as he answered in this manner.

“You F*** me? What nonsense are you speaking, I don’t have time to be bothered with you.” Having said this, the unscrupulous cultivator turned and looked into the black pond with a contemplative look.

“Daoist, since you don’t dare to enter deeply into the ying grave, why don’t you talk about the aurichalcite, let me know it’s history since it was me who threw it in……”

“You…… still have the cheek to say it!” Hearing these words, the fat cultivator was incensed as his eyes turned red.

“It seems that it really isn’t ordinary, my guess that it’s only slightly less powerful than the Desolate Pagoda…..” Ye Fan clearly had bad intentions as he purposefully riled the unscrupulous cultivator’s emotions, of course he knew that he could not go too overboard with this.

“Stupid child, actually trying to provoke me. I’ll stifle you to death! I won’t tell you anything.” The fat cultivator turned and ignored him once again.

“Daoist you’re simply too lacking in morals, stealing three spiritual weapons from me and now that I ask you some simple

questions, you actually show such an attitude.....”

Seeing Ye Fan being all smug over there, the unscrupulous cultivator really wanted to strangle him: “Even if there were ten, one hundred or even a thousand spiritual weapons, they would not be able to exchange for the aurichalcite that you threw away!”

“Daoist, don’t be so angry. I only conveniently threw it into the black pond, it’s your fault for not telling me that it’s a precious treasure.....”

Looking at this young child of barely eleven to twelve years of age whining constantly, incessantly cocky, the unscrupulous cultivator felt even more upset to the point where he wanted to cry but no tears came out. He wanted to cut off his two hands, how could he have been so useless not to keep that aurichalcite earlier?

“God dammit!” He breathed out heavily: “Stop whining and be more honest!”

“Ai!” Ye Fan shook his head as he pretended to sigh, his heart was feeling good. In this short period of time, he had already made the unscrupulous cultivator extremely regretful and successful riled his emotions, it could be said that he had taken his revenge.

Seeing that Ye Fan was no longer talking, the fat cultivator spoke up as though he was regretting: “Who says that the aurichalcite can’t compare to the Desolate Pagoda, endless years ago, the eastern badlands was almost overturned because of this aurichalcite.”

“Something like that actually occurred?” Ye Fan had a curious expression.

“That’s right, back then when the Desolate Pagoda went missing there wasn’t such an uproar. However, this piece of aurichalcite caused turmoil within the entire eastern badlands.”

“The Desolate Pagoda can suppress and kill immortals, it’s might unblockable. It is already considered the most valuable treasure within the eastern badlands, could the aurichalcite be more impressive than it?”

The fat cultivator was dispirited and downcast as he said: “The aurichalcite is something from the central continent, the year it went missing, all the peerless experts from the central province flooded out as they turned the entire eastern badlands, southern mountains, western desert and northern plains inside out. That caused such a huge uproar!”

Hearing this, Ye Fan took a deep breath of cold air.

He knew that the central province was even more vast than the eastern badlands, cultivators who rode on mystical rainbows would find it hard to traverse the entirety of it, if one wanted to travel from one area to the other, they would have to carve ‘Dao Inscriptions’ into mountains, rivers and earth. Forming ‘Heavenly Influences’ and pass through the void to travel.

It’s rumoured that the central province has many places of

historical interest, with illustrious heroes, where experts come forth in large numbers, an extremely mysterious and prosperous piece of ancient land.

“Who would have the gall to incense all the peerless experts of the central province to act……”

“Naturally it’s the last demon emperor that united the demonic race of the eastern badlands, creating great trouble for the human race of the eastern badlands!”

“It seems that the demon emperor was really strong, able to stir up chaos in all places, certainly an exceptional person.”

The unscrupulous cultivator seemed to be in a bad mood as he looked at him: “Needless to say, if he weren’t strong, how would he have been able to unite the demonic race of the eastern badlands, achieving a status known as the immortal emperor.”

Ye Fan contemplated a while before asking: “Why are you so sure that the aurichalcite comes from the central province? What exactly is it?”

# Chapter 68: Obsidian Gold Ape

“I can definitely confirm that the aurichalcite comes from the central province.” The unscrupulous cultivator sighed as he continued: “Back then everything was messy and the rumour that spread like wildfire was that the demon emperor had snatched the Desolate Pagoda to be his funerary object when his time came. The Desolate Pagoda did indeed go missing and many people believed that it was done by him. Besides this, there was a more hidden rumour that said that the Desolate Pagoda was not stolen by the demon emperor, he was certainly looking for funerary objects but he had actually stolen the central province’s mysterious object. Regarding this aurichalcite, it was mysterious and unfathomable, few people within the eastern badlands knew of it and even if they had heard of it before, they would not understand it clearly.”

“You’re making your judgements based on all this?” Ye Fan had an expression of befuddlement.

“The demon emperor’s burial mound, no Desolate Pagoda ever appeared, refuting the first legend. I immediately thought of the aurichalcite.” Having said this, the unscrupulous cultivator slapped himself: “I never imaged that after hunting treasures for my entire lifetime, I would be fooled by the seemingly mundane aurichalcite and miss my greatest chance.”

“How did you manage to realise that something was mysterious about the aurichalcite?”

“Because it was ordinary to a fault, without a single lapse in plainness, using all methods to test it still yielded no results.

Thinking back, this was certainly the greatest lapse, because even the most useless aurichalcite could not be that ‘ordinary’……”

Ye Fan sighed on purpose as he continued: “Can’t believe that I’m so exceptional, with a simple wave of my hand I actually tossed an object of a similar level to the Desolate Pagoda as though it were an old shoe. It’s a pity that no one saw it, I think the me at that point must have seemed like an immortal descended on earth, suave and exceptional all the way from ancient times till now.”

“Purposefully antagonising people? Are you looking for a beating!” The unscrupulous cultivator was fuming to the point that his nose was going crooked.

Although Ye Fan felt that the fat cultivator was certainly lacking in morals, he was not a vicious and evil person and was thus not quite scared of him as he said: “Daoist please calm down, under the current circumstances the most important thing for you to do is think of a way to fish that piece of aurichalcite out. Who knows, maybe the Desolate Pagoda is also at the bottom within the yin grave. Maybe you didn’t miss out on a precious treasure but rather you can obtain both items at once.”

“It’s impossible for the Desolate Pagoda to be within the yin palace!” Although he said this, the fat cultivator still gave up on dealing with Ye Fan as he seriously contemplated on his next moves.

“I’m going all in, I’ll try again!” The fat cultivator made his way to the deep pond once more, he was simply unable to extricate himself from the temptation of acquiring the mysterious

aurichalcite.

"Boom!"

At this moment, within the black and cold pond a large whirlpool suddenly appeared, a sinister evil beast was bobbing in the waters, when it appeared, it could be seen that its body was entirely black as though it were forged from black gold, releasing a strong demonic aura.

Its shape was very weird, it had three heads, the centremost head looked like an orangutan, the ones to the left and right of it were a bird head and a snakehead respectively. Its body was like an underworld horse forged from black gold, there were no feathers or hairs on its body as it was covered with black scales, glinting with a golden light appearing exceptionally strong.

This was an immense beast that was over ten metres long, it roared in the water as it let out low-pitched shouts, making Ye Fan feel as though his soul were shaking as though it would leave his body at any moment.

"Calm yourself and focus!" The fat cultivator shouted: "There really is such a thing, dwelling within places of extreme yin, its roars can shatter a person's soul. It is an extremely strong unique beast known as the Obsidian Gold Ape……"

This beast with its body glinting with black light, ferocious and yet immense, although it had three heads, it seemed as though only the centre one was perceptive and astute, the left bird head as

well as the right snake head could utilise divine abilities but did not have any thoughts of their own, relying on the orangutan head as the lead, thus coming to be known as the Obsidian Gold Ape.

There have been legends however, that the bird head and snake head can also gain consciousness and become intelligent, when the Obsidian Gold Ape advances to such a stage, it can be said to be extremely frightening and other than a peerless expert, there would be simply no way to kill it and its magical power would surge through the heavens.

Ye Fan heard his words as he noted it down and calmed his heart as he gathered his focus. He was shrouded in the light released by the fat cultivator and his soul soon stabilised, no longer having the feeling of instability.

“Boom!’

At this moment, the Obsidian Gold Ape suddenly floated above the black water, stirring up an endless black wave as it rushed towards the fat cultivator and Ye Fan.

“Chi!”

The fat cultivator reacted swiftly as he drew a circle with a single hand, an azure multicoloured sunlight shot forth like fireworks being released, dazzling and filling the area with mist, shrouding himself and Ye Fan within. The black mist and cold water that could shatter boulders were completely blocked as he continued to draw within the sky, writing a big ‘Seal’ word.

“Execute!”

The fat cultivator lightly exclaimed as the ‘Seal’ word within the air became dazzling, as if it were sculpted from a jade rock, tangible with substance as it flew forward with a “Shuaaa”

“Bang!”

It firmly imprinted onto the Obsidian Gold Ape’s body as it emitted “Siii, Siii” sounds, the wisps of cold black mist in the air slowly gathered as they seemed to want to enter into the Obsidian Gold Ape’s body.

“ROAR!”

The Obsidian Gold Ape viciously shook its body as the two heads that were drooping by the side slowly lifted up, the bird head opened its mouth as it spat out a blazing lightning, the snake head hissed as it spat out a black flame causing the entire space to seem to burn.

“Extreme Yin Lightning and Deathfire!”

The fat cultivator was shocked as he hurriedly pulled Ye Fan and retreated, spitting out a blood coloured small shield from his mouth, lights flashing as it fluttered in the wind growing to four to five feet tall as it blocked in front of them.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Snakes of lightning flew about and the black fire blazed as they all rushed onto the shield that was scarlet red like blood, streaks of translucent and sparkling red lights flashed outwards.

“This Obsidian Gold Ape certainly isn’t simple, the left bird head and right snakehead seem to have gained consciousness before but have been pierced and lost their consciousness!” The fat cultivator had a serious expression on his face, if the three heads of the Obsidian Gold Ape simultaneously gained consciousness, even if a strong cultivator were to meet it they would only be left with the option to run.

“It’s fortunate that the two heads aren’t in their best states.....” He softly muttered, the strong attack from the Obsidian Gold Ape made the red jade shield tremble but it eventually managed to block it.

“Chop!”

At this moment, from within the sea of bitterness of the fat cultivator shot forth a dazzling light, that seemed like a brilliant moon as it rushed towards the Obsidian Gold Ape.

“Bang!”

The Orangutan head that was in the centre shot forth two streaks of golden lights from its eyes that collided with the dazzling jade pan that seemed like the moon as the lights shuddered.

The fat cultivator had an expression of surprise as he said: “All three heads seem to have been heavily injured by someone previously, there is a frightening scar there and back then it must certainly have successfully gained consciousness in all three heads, if we met it then I would only have the option to run.”

Not only had the left and right heads of the Obsidian Gold Ape lost their consciousness, the centre head had been severely injured and did not have the demonic might of its peak as it was slowly suppressed by the fat cultivator.

“Bang!”

When the fat cultivator finally wanted to subdue it, the Obsidian Gold Ape viciously struggled as an eye-piercing black-gold glow exploded from its entire body, immediately breaking free from its restraints as it sunk back into the depths of the black pond.

“This thing is certainly fearsome, if its three heads fully recover, only a few people would be able to fully subdue it.” The fat cultivator had a serious expression on his face.

At this moment, the unfathomably cold and deep pond suddenly began to violently undulate as though something were about to rush out from its depths, more ferocious than the Obsidian Gold Ape, a large wave welled from within the black pond as black mist surged in all directions.

Black mist swirled as a bone piercing cold caused many areas of

the mountain to crack, many mountain rocks turned to dust after being brushed by the black mist.

“Daoist, didn’t you say that the yin grave was hidden in the darkness and would not float up, why does it seem to frightening now?”

“It could be that I inadvertently did something that stirred up trouble.”

“What did you do?”

“Within the black pond several thousand metres deep, I saw a broken stone plaque with the words ‘Deep Pool’ carved on it, I plucked it out and threw it towards the depths of the black pond to see how deep it went. It could have collided with the demon emperor’s yin grave.

“Daoist, you couldn’t have smashed that broken plaque onto the demon emperor’s yin grave right?”

“At that time who would have know that the demon emperor’s yin grave was at the bottom.....”

“Crash!”

At this moment, ripples began to appear on the surface of the deep back pond as a group of yin soldiers wearing black metal armour rushed out, their hands wielded jet black yin knives as a

deathly aura surrounded them.

“This is……” Ye Fan was shocked.

The fat cultivator had a startled expression as he pulled Ye Fan and retreated: “What’s going on? What strange things are there within the demon emperor’s yin grave, could this be frightening guardians of the grave? What exactly are these life forms?!”

The ripples continued to appear as broken ancient war vehicles continually appeared from the black pond, carrying with them yin soldiers. Their bodies were fully covered in black metal armour, from the helmet on their head to the plating covering their legs, their hands wielded black yin knives or carried dark spears.

# Chapter 69: The Start Of A Massacre

Within the black and cold pond, ripples continued as dilapidated ancient war vehicles seemed as though they had experienced the baptism of fire and blood, knife scars and sword slashes covered their exteriors as they were covered with black water, riding on the wind and breaking the waves as they came forth.

“It’s really too unorthodox, tens of thousands of years have already gone by but there are still grave guardians for the yin grave, it’s simply too ridiculous and unfathomable!” The fat cultivator frowned.

“Whoosh”

While he was distracted, a black arrow swiftly shot over, the arrowhead had deathfire blazing on it while the tail of it seemed to emit thick black mist.

‘Dong!”

The fat cultivator lifted his red shield and immediately blocked the arrow, however, the arrow exploded and the deathfire shot spread out as the black mist surged. The deathfire burned the surrounding floor black, causing even boulders to melt. The bubbling black mist was then frozen, shattering into dust.

These frightening energies had almost reached Ye Fan and the fat cultivator, the arrow contained the elements of fire and ice, extremely frightening. A normal cultivator who was not paying

attention could easily lose their lives.

“Whoosh, Whoosh, Whoosh……”

Sounds of streaking could be heard as black arrows continued to pierce through the black mist and shoot towards them, as though a black torrential rain were pelting towards them.

“Ding, Ding, Dang, Dang”

The red shield had continuously blocked hundreds of arrows, the surroundings were covered in deathfire and endless black mist surged through the area.

“Chi Chi Chi”

A scarlet red light emitted from the shield, like a wave that was surging outwards, it scattered the deathfire and dispersed the black mist, finally blocking off this wave of attack.

Even so, rumbling sounds could suddenly be heard as the dilapidated ancient war vehicles carried yin soldiers forward, they had already come ashore and were pressing closer.

“I’d really like to see what lifeforms you are!” The fat cultivator grit his teeth as he spat forth a green light, this was an inch long small knife that was glowing green, as it floated in the wind it swiftly grew to half a cun long, it resembled a pond of green jade water, translucent and sparkling with wisps of cold air being

emanated.

[Cun = One Chinese foot]

Seeing this, Ye Fan grit his teeth, this was the dagger that he had obtained but was snatched by the unscrupulous cultivator, at this moment he was actually using it to fight against the enemy.

“Chi”

The azure coloured dagger became a path of green as it dashed forward, shooting forth dazzling divine light that immediately blocked one of the dilapidated ancient war vehicles.

Thereafter, light was released from the sea of bitterness of the unscrupulous cultivator as a red pearl rushed forth, scarlet red lights shot in all directions, surging with strong divine energy fluctuations as it rushed forth, immediately stopping three of the ancient war vehicles, making it impossible for them to carry on forward.

At the same time, a purple light could be seen flashing from the thumb ring on the unscrupulous cultivator’s thumb, causing his entire palm to seem sparkling and translucent as the purple qi expanded.

“Chop!”

The unscrupulous cultivator exclaimed as he lifted his fingers,

the purple thumb ring immediately shot forth streaks of sharp purple sword aura.

“Chi Chi Chi”

The sword aura immediately slashed apart two of the ancient war vehicles causing the yin soldiers atop them to be halted.

Seeing all this, Ye Fan cursed, these three spiritual weapons had been found by him but were snatched by the unscrupulous cultivator and were now currently being used to fight the enemy.

“Chi Chi Chi”

At this moment, the green dagger with spiritual sense had already pierced through five yin soldiers and thoroughly chopped through an ancient war vehicle. The scarlet red pearl had also successfully stopped the advancement of three ancient war vehicles.

“Good stuff!” The unscrupulous cultivator exclaimed.

Finally, all the dilapidated ancient war vehicles were all thoroughly chopped apart and all the yin soldiers were pierced, the unscrupulous cultivator swiftly rushed forward as he tore open the jet black metal armour on their bodies to see exactly what was within.

What made him speechless and stunned was that ripping apart

several armours from the yin soldiers revealed the same thing, their insides were actually fine sand and not actual lifeforms. Eventually, he did manage to find some yin soldiers that were not made from fine sand and after careful inspection he realised that they were actually the corpses of wild beasts that had been sealed with ice within.

"What's going on……" The unscrupulous cultivator was amazed: "Could it be that Dao Inscriptions have been supporting them?" He hastily swept away the fine sand as he found that there was indeed a small wooden plaque engraved with complicated Dao Inscriptions there.

"It's really the case, scattered sand forming into soldiers, assembling corpses to form generals, simply astonishing methods." Having said this, an elated expression was on the fat cultivator's face as he said: "These are all Dao Inscriptions from tens of thousands of years ago, who knows what frightening things we can find if we carefully study it."

He hastily blew away all the fine sand and shattered all the corpses, gathering all the wooden plaques as he formed a large pile of them.

"Boom!"

At this moment, from the icy cold depths of the blank pond came a noise, a honoured demon dressed entirely in obsidian gold armour with a single wolf head slowly walked out, releasing a dense aura of death, clearly many times stronger than the yin soldiers.

“This was an honoured demon that had died eons ago, it has also been used but it doesn’t seem like Dao Inscriptions are controlling his corpse.” The unscrupulous cultivator had a contemplative expression.

The honoured demon slowly moved forward as the ground shuddered and the black mist roiled.

“It really isn’t simple.” At this moment, a dazzling green light came shooting forth from the unscrupulous cultivators sea of bitterness, a large patch of green fire surged forward and surrounded the honoured wolf headed demon.

“Bang!”

The honoured demon was exceptional as it released a dense death aura causing the green flame to be continually beaten back.

“He’s gone through a corpse transformation, gaining a hazy consciousness, his demon body is immortal thus creating a strong deathly presence that reeks of resentment.” The unscrupulous cultivator was stunned, he felt that this was simply incredible as he asked Ye Fan to back away. He then sent forth his spiritual weapons and used the green flame to assist them.

“There’s actually something strange here.” A cold voice could be heard as a male youth in his twenties arrived at this mountain top: “Very good, all of you can leave……” His gaze locked onto the wooden plaques with Dao Inscriptions carved on them and finally

stared at the honoured demon.

The unscrupulous cultivator shot a cold glance at him but immediately had a strange expressions as he saw that the sleeves of the person actually had the markings of Alkaid Sacred Ground.

“I, disciple of the Alkaid Sacred Ground, come with orders from my teacher, ordering the lot of you to swiftly leave.” The youth was very arrogant and seemed to be filled with an inborn loftiness. His gaze swept past Ye Fan and noticed that there were no divine energy fluctuations as he continued: “If you don’t want to die, hurry and get lost from this place!”

“Bang!”

At this moment, the honoured demon managed to escape from the fetters of the unscrupulous cultivator as it swiftly entered the black pond, disappearing within.

The unscrupulous cultivator turned his body as he coldly said: “Little thing that doesn’t know the difference between living and dying, putting on airs by wearing a tiger’s skin, I hate your degenerate kind the most. Actually daring to pretend to be a disciple of the Alkaid Sacred Ground, even if you are, this Daoist would still dare to slap you to death!”

“Shuaaa”

The youth saw that his facade was seen through and immediately

acted, hundreds to thousands of golden lights shot forth, dense and numerous as though a golden rain were shooting towards the unscrupulous cultivator.

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

The unscrupulous cultivator waved his sleeves as green lights flew forward and subdued the entire golden rain, they were actually formed from golden needles.

"Bang!"

The unscrupulous cultivator sped forward as he grabbed the neck of the youth before dragging him to the cold pond: "Putting on airs while wearing a tiger's skin, thinking of fooling this humble Daoist, speak, which family are you from. Otherwise, I will throw you in."

"I'm really from the Alkaid Sacred Ground!" A fearful expression could be seen on the youth's face.

"Daoist why are you wasting time talking to him, just throw him in and feed him to that honoured demon." Ye Fan who was by the side constructively suggested, purposefully scaring the youth.

"You're right, we don't need to waste our saliva." The unscrupulous cultivator lightly flung and the youth immediately fell into the cold pond, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

In the distance, Ye Fan was speechless, he did not expect that the unscrupulous cultivator would actually do it. The cultivator lacking in morals suddenly became dangerous in heart, like a person who simply did not care.

“Gurgle Gurgle”

The black pond rolled over and over as over ten honoured demons appeared, covered in obsidian gold armour with only their heads exposed. Their forms were all strange, some were dog heads, others were tiger heads, some were even more monstrous as they all released a dense deathly aura. In their hands was the youth who had been thrown in earlier and with a “Bang!” he was ripped apart, blood splattering in all directions.

“Kaboom!”

At this moment, the cold pond seemed to be boiling as the ink black pond suddenly became blood red, seemingly extremely demonic.

“Not good, things have gotten bad, the demon emperor’s yin grave has been stained with blood and the sure-kill formation has been activated!” The unscrupulous cultivator’s facial expression became very ugly.

“Boom!”

At this moment, the world seemed to tremble as a blood red light

shot from the cold pond and covered the sky, illuminating the entire area of this ruins in a frigid allurement, causing all the cultivators to be shocked.

“Could it be..... that we’re going to die in this place?!” Ye Fan had terror written on his face.

# Chapter 70: Departure

The unscrupulous cultivator sighed several times: “We have no way to enter that yin grave anymore, damn……” He was still pining for the aurichalcite and at this moment his hopes were gone and he was feeling regretful and frustrated.”

The killing formation within the cold pond had already been activated but anyone outside the cold pond was still safe.

At this moment, five dazzling lights flew over as five important figures were all startled into movement, as they arrived swiftly at the mountain top, releasing a vast pressure as though immortals were hovering the the sky.

Ye Fan wanted to observe them but found that he had no way to look through that brilliant divine glow, he could only see five balls of bright divine light but nothing else.

“Demon emperor’s Yin Grave!” Someone amongst them did a sharp intake of cold air as his eyes were like a torch and with a single glance he had immediately understood what was below the cold pond.

“The volcano was the Yang tomb, the cold netherworld deep pond was the Yin tomb, one Yang and one Yin, forming the Tai Chi symbol, stealing the fortune of the world and capable of causing phenomenal changes.” Another figure sighed as he continued: “The demon emperor was certainly exceptional, if we did not happen to notice it by chance, it would simply be impossible to

find. He actually designed a Yang and Yin tomb and grave."

"This matter is quite troublesome, the Yin Grave has already activated its sure-kill formation making it very difficult to enter!"

"The most valuable treasure of the eastern badland's human race has not made its appearance, it's highly likely that it rests here within the Yin Grave!"

The emotions of the bigwigs were riled but they were unable to come up with ideas to deal with the formation and did not dare to easily enter the demon emperor's Yin Grave.

"There should be other ways, tens of thousands of years have already passed, even a set-up as perfect as this would appear gaps. If we carefully advance and thoroughly inspect, we can then make a proper decision."

"Alright!"

Five balls of light then descended as one of the balls of light immediately shrouded the unscrupulous cultivator.

"Earlier I heard someone mention that even if he met the disciple of a Sacred Ground he would still dare to slap the person to death. It seems you aren't ordinary, this place was first discovered by you, why don't you join us and head down together."

The unscrupulous cultivator's face paled as he frantically replied:

“Seniors, I was simply speaking nonsense, don’t drop yourselves down to my level. The Yin Grave has activated its sure-kill formation and based on my cultivation level if I head down I will surely perish.”

“Really not simple, even knowing the Yang Tomb and Yin Grave. It seems that you’re certainly an extraordinary personnel, come with us!”

“No, seniors please spare this young one……” The unscrupulous cultivator gave a miserable cry.

“Shuaaa”

Five streaks of lights flashed as the five supreme experts lifted the pale-faced unscrupulous cultivator and entering the blood coloured cold pond, the unscrupulous cultivator was shrieking miserably like a pig being slaughtered.

Following their entry, the cold pond began to froth as a bloody glow filled the entire sky, the demon generals within had long since disappeared.

“It’s true that evil people will face retribution, damned fatty this is what you get!” Ye Fan stood up as he dusted his bottom before leaving the area, this area was simply too dangerous to remain any longer.

“Kaboom!”

Blood red lights flashed as the entire primitive ruins was shrouded in the blood red glow, the whole area seemed to be dreary, fuzzy and demonic, extremely strange and frightening.

At this moment, everyone felt their hearts start to palpitate, beneath the blood coloured cold pond, there seemed to be an earth shattering change that was occurring!

Ye Fan left that mountain top and hid in the distance.

The ley lines of the mountains in four directions had Dao Inscriptions on them, sealing this piece of ancient land and it was impossible for Ye Fan to break through as he could only wander about within this region. He was waiting for the chance to leave, he had already acquired the single-paged golden book and serendipitously acquired the mysterious aurichalcite, it could be said that he had made a bountiful harvest that would make all the cultivators go into a frenzy, fleeing into the distance was was his best option.

“Hopefully the restriction gets lifted soon……”

With Ye Fan’s current level of cultivation, he simply had no way to compete with the other cultivator’s for spiritual weapons. He understood the circumstances of his own body and had purposefully chosen to go to the more desolate regions.

Ye Fan opened a jade case as a fragrance assailed the nostrils, the Jade Snake Orchid was heavily scented and fragrant, at this

moment he was thinking of taking action and using this chance to look for more spiritual medicines. With his acquiring of the single-paged golden book, he had the entire ‘Wheel and Sea Volume’ to guide his progress, if he could find enough medicinal elixirs he would then be able to achieve a small success in a short period of time.

Ye Fan swiftly acted as he headed to the depths of the mountains. The appearance of the demon emperor’s burial mound had caused most of the spiritual beasts to run away and a small amount hid in their dwellings are were too afraid to come out. Searching for spiritual medicines at this time was many times simpler than normal.

When venturing towards the depths of the ruins, Ye Fan remembered going by a swamp and there was a strange beast there that was immensely strong, as though it were protecting something. Back then he had avoided it but he now decided to go there and take a look.

Finding that piece of mountain land, Ye Fan quickly discovered the swamp as he could faintly feel waves of killing intent as he saw huge scales within the swamp, each the size of a palm.

“It seems that there was a big fellow that was hidden here, it’s fortunate that it has already left.”

Ye Fan carefully searched for a long time but did not manage to find anything. Finally, in an area where many of the scales were gathered he noticed something unusual, there was an unknown plant here and although it seemed very ordinary, the strange beast

seemed to have carefully skirted around it and never stepped on it before.

He was curious as he crouched down and started to dig through the soil, digging towards the roots of the plant. He had dug for over a metre in depth but did not discover anything special.

Just when Ye Fan was about to give up, a glimmer of golden light caught his attention. Within the soil, at the tip of the main root of the plant was a golden stem, as big as a longan, dazzling and bright.

“This is……”

Ye Fan was startled, he recalled something he had read within the Ling Xu sanctuary’s spiritual medicine compendium, it was said that some vegetation that failed to gain spiritual sense did not totally perish and would often leave behind some of its life essence. Stuck to the roots of some other plants and may possibly be reborn in the future.

“This couldn’t be the essence left behind by an ancient spiritual tree right?” Ye Fan looked at this golden stem and had an expression of glee as he placed it into the jade case.

Thereafter, he continued on to his next destination as he soon arrived before a mountain. At the foot of the mountain was a large black hole and an indistinct fragrance was emitted from within.

With an expression of glee, Ye Fan swiftly entered.

Suddenly, a low-pitched roar could be heard from within the depths of the hole that held a frightening killing intent.

Ye Fan's body shuddered as he hastily retreated, seeming to fly away as he backed.

Rumbling could be heard as a wild beast exposed half its body from the hole and continued to roar. It was like a panther but its body did not have a single fur, covered in sharp venomous stings, extremely black, appearing extremely dreadful.

It was seven to eight metres long and its bloodthirsty killing aura was heavy, as it howled, black lights continued to glow from its entire body as though a black flame was blazing.

Ye Fan hid far away and with a single glance he knew that this wild beast was not something he could offend. It was much stronger than the Jade Horned Snake and the pressure it released was terrifying.

"The other strange beasts all ran away but it dared to stay, it's definitely exceptional!"

Finally, Ye Fan did not manage to make any gains here as he continued to go towards other areas to search. After four hours, he found another three spiritual medicines but they were not something rare and paled in comparison to the golden stem.

“Boom!”

At this moment, blood red lights covered the sky over the cold pond as multiple figures rushed to the sky, engaged in a fierce battle.

There was actually a monster, its body was jet black and looked like a lion. On close inspection, it was not a lion but rather seemed like a Hou* from legends as it exchanged blows with one of the experts but was not inferior in the slightest.

[T/N*: Also known as DengLong, a Chinese Legendary creature.]

“It’s really inconceivable, the mount of the demon emperor was frozen and sealed here, its body became immortal and became a spiritual corpse, actually become a grave guardian!” The few experts gathered around the monster as they attempted to destroy it.

“The descendant of the Hou of legends, certainly extraordinary, back then the time it spent by the demon emperor’s side was not long but it actually evolved to such an astonishing level.”

The black Hou beast attacked unhindered and there were no signs that it would be defeated as it almost made it back into the cold pond a few times.

“Kaboom!”

The cold pond seemed to be roiling and different kinds of demon general corpses continually rushed forth, controlled by the Hou as they attacked towards the sky.

“Even if we destroy this Hou, we would still be unable to break the Dao Inscriptions that the demon emperor laid down. We would still be unable to truly enter the Yin Grave……”

In the distance, Ye Fan was stunned, it seemed that there were many mysteries below the Yin Grave and currently so many monsters were rushing out.

“Ting! Ting! Ting!”

Suddenly, the sounds of shaking could be heard from all over the ruins, initially it seemed like metals vibrating, thereafter it seemed like the howl of the sea, vast as it undulated, rumbling as streaks of divine light rushed in all directions and endless divine glow drowned the entire area.

The Dao Inscriptions laid down by the five great experts had been forcefully broken by someone!

This left everyone in shock! Everybody knew that peerless experts that had arrived and it was not just a single person, they had shattered the Dao Inscriptions laid down by the five great experts and dispelled the not so perfect ‘Heavenly Influences’.

Thereafter, streaks of divine rainbows rushed through the sky, innumerable cultivators made their way forward, many times more than the previous number of cultivators. The few great experts who had acted from the dark did not appear but it was clear that they had also entered the ruins.

Within the primitive ruins from the cold pond as the centre, a blood mist floated, more and more demonic as uncountable numbers of monsters rushed out while more and more cultivators gathered, no one left and more sects had rushed over.

The restrictions in the four directions had been broken and Ye Fan was elated, he could finally leave.

At this moment, there was the aurichalcite within his golden sea of bitterness and although it was an immensely big fortune, it also brought with it endless danger. If someone discovered it, he would immediately fall from heaven to hell as he decided to immediately leave this ruins far behind.

“Fight, fight till the heavens are torn asunder and the earth shatters, ghosts cry and Gods howl but it would not concern me anymore.”

Ye Fan swiftly rushed forward and right as he was about to exit the ruins, he looked back and said: “I’ll walk my own path and let others continue looking for the most valuable treasure.”

If the unscrupulous cultivator knew the truth and heard the words he was currently saying, he would certainly spit out blood

and skin him alive.

Of course, if the other cultivators knew of this, the outcome may be even more gruesome.

# Chapter 71: Staying Behind

Ye Fan believed that in the coming few days, this area would be abuzz with activity. There would likely be big battles everywhere and even more sects from eastern badlands would rush here, the entire ruins would be boiling over because of the demon emperor's Yin Grave.

Gazing from a distance, he could still the blood light rushing to the sky and streaks of mystical rainbows rushing.

"Regardless of whether the Desolate Pagoda exists within the Yin Grave, it no longer concerns me……" Ye Fan was already very satisfied and he now needed to find a safe place to calm down and cultivate.

The unique beasts and strange birds that had gathered by the outskirts of the ruins had all scattered, when Ye Fan headed out but did not see any birds or beasts.

The sky was densely covered with stars as a bright moon hung in the sky, the curtain of the night had long arrived.

Ye Fan walked by the Ling Xu Sanctuary but did not hesitate as he continued on into the distance, it was the right time to leave. Although some of the broken Buddhist artifacts were there, he did not intend to go recover them for fear of meeting with Elder Han.

The most important Bodhi seed was currently still on his body and even though he had lost those broken Buddhist artifacts, he

did not feel regretful as life was after all still the most important thing.

Ye Fan's speed was very fast, toiling for long hours he rushed through the night out of this mountain region and left the land of strife further and further behind, his heart however was still gripped with anxiety.

Three days later, Ye Fan appeared over two thousand miles away. He ate little and slept in the open, cautious as he stealthily progressed and almost never entered any of the towns as he traversed through the wilds. It was only now that he let out a sigh of relief as his heart gradually calmed down.

At the moment it was already late into the night and clouds covered the stars and moon in the sky making it seem especially dark. Lights could be seen dotting the front as a town that could not be considered to be big was seen, Ye Fan felt that he had finally arrived at a safe area and did not need to run anymore as he walked forward steadily.

Nearing the place, he found that this was really a small town and most of the people were already asleep and only a few lights could still be seen flickering.

Walking into the small town and walking a full circle, he finally chanced upon a small store that had not closed up for the night in a remote corner.

This was an extremely small restaurant and there were only

seven to eight tables within, the chairs and tables looked to have seen quite a few years but were polished to the point of glowing, seemingly interesting and appealing, extremely clean.

“Old uncle what’s there to eat, hurry and make some of them.”

The shopkeeper was an old man with a head full of white hair, age had left its mark on his face and it was covered with wrinkles, he seemed to have fully experiencing the hardships of life, there were several patches where his clothes had been mended and it seemed that his life had not been that easy.

Seeing this eleven to twelve year old youth coming here alone so late at night, the old man felt startled but he still had a warm smile as he answered: “We only have half a roast chicken, slightly more than half a dish of beef and some steamed buns.”

“Alright, serve all of them.”

“Wait a while, I’ll make them hot for you.” This restaurant was simply too small and the life of this old man was really tough, he was the shopkeeper, waiter and also the chef.

Not long after, the aroma of roast chicken could be smelt and it was served together with the plate of marinated beef, Ye Fan immediately began to salivate. For this past year Pang Bo and him had eaten only vegetarian food and there was almost no meat and fish within the Ling Xu sanctuary. The simple food before him made his stomach growl in hunger.

He hastily received the dishes and chopsticks as he gobbled the snow white steamed buns and ripped a piece of the chicken thing as he began to wolf everything down. At this instant, he felt that whatever delicacies the world had to offer were only thus and could stand by the side, they would not bring the feeling of satisfaction this meal before him currently could.

“Don’t rush, eat slowly. Drink some soup to warm your stomach, don’t choke.” The old man brought a bowl of hot soup and kindly reminded.

“Thank you old uncle, your culinary skills are really superb and making me salivate.” Ye Fan was stuffing food into his mouth as he mumbled.

Ye Fan’s dressing did not seem like a poor man’s child but the way he wolfed the food made the old man feel curious as he retrieved a cloth from his patched sleeve and began to wipe the already clean table and chairs by the side as he shook his head and laughed: “You’re just too hungry, no matter what you it you would also find it delicious.”

“Grandpa, why haven’t you close the doors……”

A five to six year old looking young girl walked into the house, her clothes were also patched up and wore very simple clothing, sporting two braids, she looked very cute and her red rosy cheeks seemed like an apple.

“Go ahead and sleep first, I’ll close up in a while.”

The little girl looked at the food on the table as her big eyes seemed to shine with light, thereafter she secretly swallowed a big mouthful of saliva as she nodded and replied: “Okay.”

Not long after, Ye Fan had already cleared off all the dishes on the table as he stood up and said: “Okay old man, you should prepare to close up.” Having said this, he reached to his chest but seemed embarrassed, he had forgotten that he did not have any money nor gold or silver objects, without any way to make payment.

“Little brother are you having some difficulties?” The old man seemed to have already guessed the situation and noticed his embarrassment.

“This…… I really haven’t brought any money.”

“Ahhh another bad person.” The little girl by the side widened her eyes, weeping and sobbing as she stared at Ye Fan: “You people are too nasty, always coming to eat free food and renege on your debts, only knowing how to bully grandpa and I, we’re already to the point where we probably can’t feed ourselves……”

Having said this, she looked at the chicken bones on the table as her eyes became redder: “Grandpa said that if no guests came he would give me the chicken thigh to eat….. In the end you ate it all for free, really just bullying us.”

The young girl’s lips started to quiver as her long eyelashes

trembled, tears began to flow down as her red cheeks were stained with tears, she used her patched dress to continually wipe at her tears.

It was obvious that their lives were not the best and usually encountered bullies.

“Young girl, don’t cry……” Ye Fan was really embarrassed and ashamed, this young and old duo seemed to have already been in quite a predicament before he came.

“It’s okay, little brother doesn’t have to reproach himself. I can see that you are different from those rascally bullies, you aren’t a freeloader but rather have really forgotten to bring money.” The old man whose face was covered in wrinkles brought the little girl to the side and said: “Don’t cry, grandpa left a piece of chicken meat and half a steamed bun for you so you won’t have to starve.”

“Grandpa……” The little girl cried in grievance as she continued: “I’m not doing this for myself but because grandpa hasn’t eaten dinner either. We’re always bullied by those bad people and have not much savings left, if it goes on like this what should we do……”

Seeing the patched up clothes on the old and young duo and hearing their words, Ye Fan felt wistful in his heart as he was deeply moved and his nose actually felt stuffy.

The lives of normal people was filled with bitter, sour, hot and sweet moments, the familial relations between this old and young duo made him have a feeling of that he had not experienced for a

long time.

“Little girl don’t cry, I’m not a bad person. Although I don’t have any money, but I have something here that can pay for this meal.” Ye Fan took a small jade bottle out, it was a bottle of hundred plants extract that he had obtained while out exploring.

“This is a piece of good jade, too precious, I cannot accept it.” The old man shook his head and continued: “Everyone has their difficult times, little brother if you pass by here in the future you can always pay then.”

Ye Fan sighed, the old man’s life was already so harsh yet he had such character and attitude, making him feel respect as he said: “Please keep it, this really doesn’t count for much to me.”

“Too precious, I really cannot accept it. Outside, everyone would have difficult moment, little brother don’t need to be reproachful of yourself.” The old man’s wrinkled hands firmly pushed the jade bottle back.

Seeing his refusal, Ye Fan could only put away the bottle.

“Since you don’t want it, then I’ll stay behind and help you to do some manual labour.” At this moment he did not have anywhere to go and discovering that this old man was so down-to-earth and kind, he decided to stay here temporarily and concentrate on cultivating while helping the old man.

The little girl looked down at her feet and her big eyes were red as she softly said: “We can’t even feed ourselves.....”

Ye Fan crouched down as he look with pity towards the little girl and rubbed her head: “I won’t add any burdens to you by staying behind.”

# Chapter 72: Hope Within The Heart

The old man tried to reject him multiple times and said that Ye Fan had no need to stay, saying that when he passed by again he could then return the necessary amount.

“Old man, I have no home to return to and no place to go to, won’t you just let me stay? I can be of help.”

“Big brother, you don’t have a home?” The naivety of the little girl was very cute and although tears on her face had not dried up, she looked up at him and her small chubby face had an expression of sympathy.

Finally, the old man allowed Ye Fan to stay and cleaned up a room for him in the back before telling him that he could choose to leave at any time.

In the night, Ye Fan tossed and turned before finally getting up, silently going to the roof as he laid there to gaze at the sky. The sky was currently clear of clouds and the bright moon hung there, spilling down the moon’s radiance that seemed like a light mist as stars sparkled all over the night sky like diamonds in the sky.

The familial relations between the old man and the young girl unconsciously stirred something he had hidden deep within him, the kind faces of his parents slowly floated through his mind.

“How are you two doing……”

Ye Fan looked at the stars, as though he were trying to gaze past countless galaxies to the other side of the stars, returning to his parents side. Each time he thought of his parents, his heart found it difficult to remain calm, with his sudden disappearance, his parents must have been devastated.

For two parents to lose their only son during their waning years, it would be an extreme kind of pain. Thinking of the pain his parents must be feeling, Ye Fan felt frustrated and disturbed, he really wanted to go back to their sides and let them know that he was safe, seeing their smiling faces again.

Separated by endless numbers of galaxies, the distance was simply too far and how could he possibly go back? His heart was filled with helplessness as he blankly stared at the stars.

Every time he thought of his parents love, Ye Fan would feel anxious, since arriving at this world, he had kept these thoughts deeply hidden and did not dare to easily recall or think back. Each time he did so, it was difficult to calm down.

“No way, I must find a way back. I can’t let my parents who nurtured me through all those years use their tears to wash their faces in their waning years……” Ye Fan sat up and muttered: “There must be a way, I must make it back.”

Seeing the various cultivators flying throughout the primitive ruins, then seeing the divine might of the five peerless experts, he felt the strength of cultivators and if one day he could become

strong enough, he would want to traverse through the endless galaxies and return back home to his parents side.

Personally witnessing the fearsomeness of cultivators, Ye Fan felt hope in his heart that the road home was not completely broken and there may be a glimmer of hope.

“I need to become strong, I want to traverse through the stars and return home, no longer allowing my parents to feel hurt or shed tears for me. I want their later years to be filled with smiles……” Ye Fan’s words became more firm as he tried to rouse confidence in himself: “I will definitely do it, I must do it, I must return to their sides!”

There was no point getting emotional or feeling anxiety as Ye Fan slowly calmed his emotions, his feelings were riled when seeing the familial relations between the young girl and old man, causing him to finally conquer this final perplexity that was haunting him and allowing him to find his goal and motivation.

“Nine dragons pulling a coffin, traversing through the stars and arriving at this space. If they can do it, so can I. I need to become strong enough, there will come a day when I can also pass through the void and return home.” Ye Fan’s eyes became brighter, he needed to become stronger whether it be to save Pang Bo or return back home, strength was the prerequisite.

Without knowing it, he had grown tired and laid on the roof as he slept deeply. It was only on the morning of the second day did the voice of the old man cause him to wake up.

“Kid, why have you gone up to the roof, be careful, don’t fall down.”

The little girl came out with sleepy eyes and seeing Ye Fan sitting atop the roof, her eyes immediately widened as she asked: “Big brother, what are you doing?”

Facing the puzzled expressions of the young and old, Ye Fan felt embarrassed: “It was too hot last night and I came to the roof to cool off but fell asleep accidentally.”

After taking a bath, Ye Fan was called over by the old man to have a meal with them. A pot of porridge and a dish of salted vegetables, very simple because their living conditions were limited. The little girl was very sensible and had already placed the dishes and chopsticks as she helped scoop a bowl of porridge for Ye Fan, a full bowl of porridge for her grandfather but left only a little for herself. Her bowl was already small and with such little remaining, she finished it in a few mouthfuls before placing down her chopsticks.

“Why are you eating so little?” The old man questioned her.

Although the little girl was wearing patched clothes, she seemed as beautiful as an exquisite porcelain doll as she patted her tummy and replied: “I’m already full.”

“Nonsense, you’ve only eaten a few mouthfuls how can you be full.”

“I’m really full. Last night after eating the chicken and half steamed bun that grandpa left for me, I haven’t been hungry till now.” The little girl said as she lifted her bowl and prepared to wash it.

The old man pulled her back as he filled the small bowl to the brim with porridge and said: “Good child, you’re in your growing stages and need to eat more, don’t worry, there’s still food within our home.”

“I’m not worried, I’m really fully already. Grandpa, you should eat more……” The little girl poured her porridge from the little bowl back into the old man’s big bowl.

The old man was helpless and did not say anything as he sighed.

“Grandpa, will those evil men still come today?” The little girl’s chubby red face had an expression of fear on it and her voice was very young and tender as she continued: “They already snatched our restaurant, now they still come here to intentionally cause trouble. We simply don’t have a way to carry on our business, now even our food is becoming insufficient, why won’t they let us off?”

“It’s alright, don’t worry. With grandpa here, you won’t go hungry.” The old man rubbed her head as he added a little more porridge into her bowl.

Ye Fan who was by the side did not say anything as he silently ate this simple breakfast, his heart however was in turmoil.

The old man's first name was Jiang, a very common ancient surname and if one traced its origins, the roots were very deep. However, the old man was very ordinary and simply one amongst the multitude of living things, currently going through a tough time in his life. The beautiful and sensible young girl was called Ting Ting, her parents had passed away two years earlier and she and the old man could only rely on each other.

Ye Fan did not say anything and after the breakfast he said to the old man: "Old uncle, I'll be going out for a walk."

"You're not familiar with this place, be careful." The old man warned.

This town was neither big nor small, it could contain slightly over one thousand households and had close to five thousand people living here. At the most flourishing intersection, there were a few restaurants and inns, miscellaneous goods stores were also mostly gathered there and the other areas were mostly the living quarters of the people.

Ye Fan explored the town before finally walking out, there were many fields that were adjacent to the town and going further would be the forest where hunting parties would travel each day to hunt.

Ye Fan entered the forest and the further he walked in the more shocked he felt. Standing atop a mountain, he could see an unbroken chain of mountain peaks that seemed endless, misty and blurry, the primitive forest also seemed to have no end.

“Roar!”

In the depths of the rest, the sounds of roaring could be heard but Ye Fan was not frightened but rather had an expression of happiness. The small town could really allow him to calmly cultivate, it was not only safe but there was actually a deep forest here and it would surely have strange beasts and spiritual medicines which were currently what he needed the most.

Ye Fan walked through the forest for for the entire morning but did not go too deep. He certainly would have time in the future and was not anxious to do so now, as it became close to the afternoon he headed back and noticed some hunting teams as well as people picking medicines along the way.

“It really isn’t easy living the lives of a normal human……” Ye Fan lamented, he noticed that the hunting party was bringing back some game animals but at the same time carried a corpse that was covered in blood as they headed in the direction of the small town. It was clear that they had been attacked by some big ferocious creature and sustained casualties.

In the distance, a few deers were drinking water by a mountain stream, Ye Fan silently made his way over as he forcefully tossed a rock out.

“Bang!”

A deer was killed as it fell into the water. Thereafter, he killed a

buck before heading back.

On the way back, some hunting parties saw that an eleven to twelve year old youth was carrying the carcass of a deer and a buck, they had expressions of astonishment on their faces but Ye Fan did not mind. He intended to stay within this small town for a long duration of time and this was certainly unavoidable.

It was close to midday when Ye Fan finally returned to the town as he sold the deer to a butcher for money before buying some grain and noodles and brought the buck back to old uncle Jiang's little store.

From far away he could see many people surrounding the area there as the helpless cries of Ting Ting could be heard from within the group. Ye Fan's heart immediately thumped as he swiftly rushed over.

The old man's white hair was disheveled and there were traces of blood on his face as he sat weakly on the ground, his patched clothes had plenty of dust on it. Ting Ting was hurtfully crying as she used her small dress to wipe the blood from the old man's face as she scolded the few malicious people people with a teary voice: "You're all bad people, snatching away grandpa's restaurant and now we don't even have food to eat, you're still not letting us go……"

A middle aged man with a sickly yellow face crouched down as he forcefully pressed a finger onto the forehead of little Ting Ting causing her to fall to the ground as he shouted: "Stupid kid, what do you know!"

“If you have any problems come at me, don’t do that to a child……” Old uncle Jiang shielded Ting Ting behind his body as he wiped the blood stains on his face: “What do you people want?”

“We don’t want too much, we’ve come here to eat but you said there are no dishes, then why open a store? Since it’s like that you might as well close it down.”

“Bad people, all of you come here daily for free meals, we don’t have the money to support all of you……” Little Ting Ting began crying even more noisily behind old uncle Jiang.

There were several people watching this spectacle but no one dared to step forward as they persuaded old uncle Jiang: “Old Jiang, close the small store and bring your granddaughter away from this place.”

“That’s right, their family has a cultivator which isn’t someone we can afford to offend, you should hurry and leave.”

“Although you will be leaving your hometown, leaving is still the best option.”

“What did all of you say?” The sickly looking middle aged man stood up as his gaze swept through the crowd, the voices immediately became silent.

Ye Fan’s rage was boiling but he did not immediately act, the

enemy's family had a cultivator and he was worried that if he was too forceful, he would actually harm this young and old duo. Of course, he was definitely not going to let these people go and not acting out now did not mean that he would not claim their debts in the future.

At this moment, the sickly looking middle aged man as well as his cronies began to take big strides as they sauntered away, the surrounding people went forward one after another to persuade old uncle Jiang while the tears of little Ting Ting could be heard intermittently.

It was a long time later before the group finally dispersed, Ting Ting's big eyes were red as she helped old uncle Jiang up and walked towards the little store.

Seeing such a kind old man in his later years being bullied like that, then seeing the teary face of Ting Ting whose body was wearing the patched clothes, Ye Fan was beside himself in anger. He looked towards the few people who were fading from sight in the streets, and clenched his fists tightly.

# Chapter 73: Relying On The Bodhi To Observe The Dao Scriptures

It was now close to midday but the little store was absolutely silent without any customers, only the sounds of choking sobs from Ting Ting could be heard.

Ye Fan lifted a buck while carrying grains and noodles as he pushed open the door of the little store and walked in.

Ting Ting's large eyes were red and she was currently using a warm towel to carefully wipe the old man's wounds, her heart was hurting as she sobbed bitterly while wiping.

The old man's wrinkled face had finger marked bruises on it, blood was flowing mainly from his nose and mouth and even his white hair had been stained with blood.

"This group of bastards how could they bear to do such a thing……" Ye Fan felt something grip his heart, a kind old man in his later years received such violent treatment, this really made one's rage boil over. Ting Ting was so cute, sensible and barely five to six years old, yet she had also been bullied and pushed down to the ground, her little face had a hurtful expression on it as tears streamed down, this simply made one's heart wrench in sympathy.

"Big brother……" Seeing that Ye Fan had returned, Ting Ting's tears began to fall anew as she loudly bawled.

“Ting Ting be good, don’t cry, there’s nothing wrong with grandpa.” The man man tried to console Ting Ting as he tried to use his wrinkled hands to wipe her tears, thereafter he looked at Ye Fan in shock: “This buck and those grains and noodles……”

“I hunted the buck in the forest, grains and noodles were traded with a deer.” Ye Fan placed these items on the ground before taking out a jade bottle from his bosom, pulling out the cork he poured out a little of the hundred plants extract and began to apply it on the wounds of the old man.

“You’ve only eaten a single meal of ours, there’s no need to be like this…….” The old man was not good with words and although he was very grateful, his words came out in such a manner.

“Old uncle you don’t have to say anymore, a meal really doesn’t count for much but the kind intentions and camaraderie behind it are very important.” Having said this, Ye Fan crouched down and helped wipe the tears on Ting Ting’s face as he said: “Ting Ting don’t cry, with me around I won’t let you feel wronged again.”

“Big brother……” Ting Ting’s eyes were red again as her long eyelashes trembled and tears began to fall, she looked down at her patched shoes and softly said: “But…… those bad people will still come and they will continue to bully us.”

“Don’t be afraid, big brother won’t let those bad people bully Ting Ting anymore.” Ye Fan rubbed her head in sympathy, such a sensible and cute young girl was bullied in such a manner, this really made one’s heart feel angst.

“Child, don’t be reckless.” The old man had experienced the hardships of life and felt Ye Fan’s anger. He was afraid that this youth would do something to make matters worst and drag him in as well: “We can’t afford to offend them, the Li family have cultivators among them and aren’t people we can offend.”

The old man then sighed: “I’m already so old and really quite unwilling to leave this town, I’ve already lived here for tens of years and the older one gets, the more he reminisces the past, it’s really difficult to cut all ties with this place. However, it seems that I’ve really got no choice but to leave, for Ting Ting I’ve decided to leave everything here behind. Even if I have to become a beggar and leave my hometown, I won’t continue to stay here any longer.”

“Grandpa……” Two lines of tears could be seen on Ting Ting’s face.

“Ting Ting, be good, don’t cry. Old uncle don’t talk about leaving this town anymore.” Ye Fan consoled Ting Ting while speaking to the old man: “You don’t have to worry, I won’t make matters worse. Close this small store for now and let me think of a solution. If there really isn’t any other way, I’ll leave with the two of you.”

Ye Fan knew deep down that many unfortunate things occurred to normal humans. The deepest kind of pain would be for one to be forced out of their hometown in their later years, the old man had also lost his son and under the current circumstances it seemed that he would be forced to leave this small town. The bitterness in

his heart could only be imagined and he simply did not wish for this young and old duo to continue in their misfortune.

"Tell me precisely what backing does the Li family have?"

"Child, what are you planning to do? We'll pack up tomorrow to leave this place and never return, we cannot offend them no matter what."

"I'm not the rash kind of person, don't worry."

Finally, after Ye Fan's constant cajoling, the old man finally answered his queries.

The Li family was the most outstanding great family within this small town, it was rumoured that their family had three to four people who were cultivating outside. Cultivators were a mystery to normal people and on a normal day they would not meet them, hence most people in the town were very afraid of the Li family.

Ye Fan felt as though there were some things which the old man had not mentioned. For example, the Jiang family seemed to have been doing quite well and had a restaurant within the town, what happened? Also, why did his son suddenly pass away? All these were not mentioned.

"Ting Ting, help to wash this towel in hot water." The old man managed to get Ting Ting away before he continued: "Child, I understand that you aren't a normal kid, so young and yet you are

able to kill a buck, you probably know how to cultivate right. However, I advise you not to go and offend the Li family……”

The old man continued to talk, his son and daughter-in-law were both cultivators and had been viewed very highly within a sect, even the Li family within the town had formed good relations with them unwilling to easily cause any strife between the families.

“Yan Xia Immortal Sanctuary……” Ye Fan was startled, the sect that the old man’s son belonged to was actually one of the six within the Yan state, it was only two hundred over miles from this small town.

The few people from the Li family were also cultivating within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, one of which went into the sect at almost the same time as the son of the old man but was actually left far behind.

“The kid from the Li family was scheming and dishonourable, he did many evil things and my kid was simply too righteous, he could not bear to act and created a great enmity……”

Ting Ting’s father had an extraordinary aptitude and was viewed highly within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, he was not afraid of the Li family kid who entered the sect at the same time. However, no one knows what may come and there was a misfortune, two years ago Ting Ting’s parents were out picking spiritual medicines and unfortunately died to the claws of a Lightning Bird.

When Ting Ting’s parents passed away, the people of the Li

family had no further concerns and immediately snatched this old man's restaurant, thereafter took away my inn and forced the two of us into this situation but still did not relent.

At this moment, Ting Ting had returned from washing the towel in hot water and her face was like a pale jade statue, resembling a porcelain doll. However she said something that did not seem like something someone her age would say: "Why is it that in this world, good people are always bullied while bad people seem to live long lives……"

Hearing her young and tender voice together with her hurtful expression, Ye Fan and the old man glanced at each other but did not know what to say to console her.

"There are still good people in this world, Ting Ting has only seen one side of it, everything will become better in the future……" Ye Fan did not want her young heart to have such emotions from a young age.

"That's right, your big brother is a good person and will surely help us. Ting Ting and him will surely live a full life." The old man had a kind smile as he continued: "Today I'll cook buck meat for Ting Ting to eat."

The old man followed Ye Fan's suggestions and closed the small store, in the afternoon the three had a bountiful feast and Ting Ting's little face was rosy as she finally had a big smile on it.

In the afternoon, Ye Fan walked about in the small town and

understood the Li family's property holdings as well as where the old man's snatched inn and restaurant were. Thereafter he found out many other information from other people.

The did not want to act rashly as he deeply feared that he would implicate the old man and Ting Ting. When one was trying to help someone but ended up hurting them, that would be the most sad and foolish thing.

"The Li family have several people cultivating within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary……" Ye Fan did not have confidence, he had after all only just started cultivating. This was not the most troubling, the most problematic thing was that the Li family had a person who was cultivating in a supreme sect and seemed to be extraordinary.

"It seems that this Li family really isn't something to be trifled with, it seems I'll have to come up with other ideas." This made Ye Fan even more firm in his belief of a cultivators path, he had to become stronger otherwise he would be helpless in all matters. He wanted to help old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting get some revenge but found it hard to proceed.

"The bastard who acted earlier, I won't let him go no matter what." Ye Fan was not urgent to act, he knew that being rash would only complicate matters. He calmly went back to the small store and sat in his room, he had a golden book and a mysterious aurichalcite but he had not inspected them carefully before. He now wanted to begin by trying to read the golden book.

He began to circulate the mystical arts recorded within the Dao

Scripture and started to look within, the soybean sized golden sea of bitterness was like a divine moon within the darkness, the aurichalcite which emanated an ancient and powerful aura was situated in the centre of the golden sea of bitterness, motionless and stable like a rock, absolutely silent.

The single paged golden book was squeezed to the side of the sea of bitterness, it's glow was swirling as it flashed with a divine splendour. The dense and numerous little words on it were like stars that shot forth golden lights, sacred and faintly discernible. This single paged golden book seemed to want to return to the centre but regardless of how the divine aura shot forth thousands of streams that were dazzling like the rainbow, it could not affect the aurichalcite in the slightest and could only float by the side of the sea of bitterness.

Ye Fan's attention was totally absorbed by the golden book within his sea of bitterness but he met the same problems he faced previously, the dazzling words on the golden book seemed to shoot forth golden needles of light that made his mind hurt, making him unable to see the words clearly.

"Why is it like that? Is there no way to cultivate the mystical arts recorded within this single paged golden book?" Ye Fan frowned, this felt like acquiring a mountain of treasure but being unable to access any of it, even a single copper coin could not be grasped.

Suddenly, Ye Fan seemed to remember something as he scooped something out of his bosom.

A dull Bodhi seed was in his hand, as big as a walnut with

naturally occurring wrinkles on it that formed the picture of a Buddha.

A naturally occurring portrait of Buddha, entirely formed of nature, dull, simple, natural and exuded faint vibes of Zen .

“The Bodhi tree can help a person to find their path, I will borrow this Bodhi seed to try!” Ye Fan had received a mysterious ancient scripture from the bronze coffin due to this Bodhi seed and with no other means to read the mystical arts recorded within the golden book, he thought of using this mystical Bodhi seed to try.

The Bodhi tree had another name, the tree of wisdom, tree of comprehension, tree of thought. It was rumoured to be able to open up the divinity within a person, allowing them to comprehend themselves.

When Ye Fan grasped the Bodhi seed and began to circulate the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture, wisps of golden light came from his sea of bitterness and gathered towards the Bodhi seed.

At this moment, unsure if it was a misconception or if the Bodhi seed really had a use, he felt that his heart was empty and very calm. He began to inspect within his sea of bitterness and looked at the single paged golden book.

“It really is effective……” Ye Fan was amazed, the Bodhi seed enabled his heart to be completely empty, without any ripples within his mind allowing him to easily look past the golden glow

and clearly see the ancient words written on the golden page. The golden lights that seemed like golden needles that pierced the eye immediately became gentle and no longer hurt his eyes.

"I've opened up a treasure trove!" Even with the Bodhi seed in hand, Ye Fan found it difficult to remain calm and was very excited, he had managed to fully unlock the 'Wheel and Sea Volume' of the Dao Scripture.

Ancient words became divine radiance that continually imprinted themselves onto his mind, like stars in the galaxy that were flashing.

# Chapter 74: Four Great Realms

The single paged golden book was simply unfathomable and the myriad of little words did not need to be read but rather became stars on their own as they shot towards Ye Fan's mind.

At this moment, Ye Fan felt rays of lights shining down from the skies, the lands bubbled forth divine springs, lotus flowers begin to blossom, mystical herbs started budding. Divine red clouds filled the whole sky, simply flamboyant. An ancient tortoise spewed forth mist, the auspicious Qilin takes in qi, purple qi arrives from the east, gold light arrives from the west, a multicolored mysterious light illuminates and a seven coloured mystical rainbow covered the sky.

A plethora of Buddhist images and endless gates to enlightenment presented themselves, simply profound. It was like the relationship of humans between the heavens, or the sacred sounds of the great Dao, constantly resounding within Ye Fan's heart.

His expression was dazzled as though he were dumb or drunk, like a desert that had first come into contact with widespread rain. Life was beginning to grow slowly within the yellow sand, Ye Fan felt as though many windows had been opened and all sorts of divine glows were shooting towards him. He tried his best to grasp something but the divine glow always eluded him, it was difficult to comprehend it.

This was not cultivation, in a short period of time no one would be able to comprehend the profundities of such obscurities, this

was an impact by a type of ‘Great Influence’, the ‘Wheel and Sea Volume’ of the Dao Scripture was like a milky way of the highest heavens pouring down in torrents, its radiance violently spilling, endlessly imposing. What this volume talked about, it began to enter into Ye Fan’s mind in a very sweeping manner, allowing him to have a rough understanding of what to practice and what realms he needed to reach.

Sea of bitterness, Spring of Life, Spiritual Bridge, Other Shore, these four great realms fully expounded the scriptural meaning of the ‘Wheel and Sea Volume’ of the Dao Scripture.

Cultivators had to first establish their sea of bitterness, allowing it to grow stronger and only in this manner would they be able to feel their wheel of life, because the two were inherently together.

Thereafter, releasing endless amounts of the qi essence of life, swirling above the sea of bitterness and flowing to all parts of the body, nourishing the body, organs and bones, strengthening the mortal shell and finally taking a step to exceed normal humans. This was the first realm recorded within the ‘Wheel and Sea Volume’ – ‘Sea of Bitterness’.

The sea of bitterness covered the wheel of life, one above the other below, superimposing to give life, each year one would leave a mark on the wheel of life and when the wheel of life was full of marks, it would thoroughly disintegrate and at that time a person’s lifespan would have ended, the time for his passing would have come.

Wanting to change such a scenario, one could only use the sea of bitterness to establish a path, reaching the bottom of the sea and

forming a connection with the wheel of life. This would allow the qi essence of life within the sea of life to vigorously flow out, stopping the erosion of the sea of bitterness and extending one's lifespan.

A quantitative change would result in a qualitative change, the abundant qi essence of life would surge and finally gather together, becoming a liquid and forming the divine spring of life, rushing into the sea of bitterness.

Cutting through the desolate sea of bitterness and creating the eye of the spring of life, connecting with the wheel of life and allowing the divine spring to gurgle forth, this was the second realm of the 'Wheel and Sea Volume' – 'Spring of Life'.

In this manner, cultivators would then have a fountainhead of strength allowing them to utilise various mystical arts and divine abilities with unfathomably powerful abilities. This was a crucial step in a cultivators change and as long as the spring of divine energy did not stop, their magical powers would be endless.

The reason why all cultivators could ride on mystical rainbows was because of the divine light that was released from their spring of life. After cultivating to the 'Spring of Life' realm, one could ride on mystical rainbows to travel, flying past the land and use a myriad of countless mystical arts.

The human body was filled with mystery and even strong cultivators did not wish to be trapped within the sea of bitterness. They wanted to search for other hidden areas within the human body and this created the process of strengthening the sea of

bitterness.

The mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture had an endlessly imposing manner, even though the sea of bitterness was without end, it still needed to head back and nourish itself with strength to break through its confines.

In order to reach their goals, cultivators needed to allow their mortal shells to transform, forming a divine vein within their sea of bitterness and use it to break through the barriers reaching the next level of the sea of bitterness.

This slow and tiring process would cause cultivators to slowly become stronger, finally allowing the wheel and sea to give form to a divine vein, releasing the endless potential within their bodies and this would be the third realm of the ‘Wheel and Sea Volume’ – ‘Spiritual Bridge’.

Having cultivated to this point, cultivators had to be exceptionally firm and unswayable, only in this manner would they be able to see past the broken fabrications and dense fog, allowing them to continue to find their own shore.

During this process, not only did the mortal shell need to transform, the consciousness also had to take form, the spirit and body merging into one, breaking through the shackles and exceeding oneself, only then would one be able to return to their roots, finding their foundation and the spiritual bridge would arrive at the end like a rainbow, the forceful crossing of the sea of bitterness would be successful, this was the fourth realm contained with the ‘Wheel and Sea Volume’ – ‘Other Shore’.

Reaching the other shore, the flesh, organs and bone of the cultivator would dry up and a rebirth would occur, a shedding of the mortal's body and exchanging of their bones would occur for nine times before they would finally break out of their cocoon and complete the transformation into a butterfly.

Sea of bitterness, Spring of Life, Spiritual Bridge, Other Shore, these four great realms were separated like skies, wanting to breakthrough was a daunting task. There were many criterias to be met in each realm and one needed to gain experience and become stable before having a chance to transform.

"So reaching the second great realm 'Spring of Life' would enable one to traverse on mystical rainbows, this kind of cultivator could kill a cultivator of the 'Sea of Bitterness' realm as easily as squashing a bug." Ye Fan felt shivers as he thought of elder Han whose cultivation level was at least at the 'Spring of Life' realm.

The separation between the four great realms had an immense difference in strength, as those there were a heavenly wide chasm between each realm.

Considering Ye Fan to be a cultivator at the realm of 'Sea of Bitterness' was really pushing it, the establishing of his golden sea of bitterness was simply too small, merely the size of a soybean.

Ye Fan was not dismayed, he had after all only recently began to cultivate and the time was too short, having such an accomplishment was already no simple task. Furthermore, his sea

of bitterness was different from others, bright and splendid without any death aura surrounding it, each time it was nourished, sounds would shake the earth as though a vast golden body of water were surging violently. It was certainly exceptional.

Thereafter, Ye Fan recalled elder Han's grandson Han Fei Yu, his Spring of divine energy had not gurgled forth and had yet to reach the second great realm 'Spring of Life' but he was already able to employ the green wooden treasure seal, a 'Sea of Bitterness' cultivator who could control such a treasure was enough to be a threat to him.

Having being impacted by the 'Great Influence', like a dream or an illusion, the 'Wheel and Sea Volume' of the Dao Scripture was like a grand and majestic historic picture scroll, unveiling itself within his mind before becoming like a torrential sacred river that could split the heavens and earth apart, roiling as it passed allowing him to have an initial understanding of the real meaning of the profundities.

There was no definite way of cultivating but this grand baptism gave him great benefits, this was a confidence that was gained towards the entirety of cultivating, he now knew the direction in which he would had to walk.

"There seem to be a few inconsistencies with the Dao Scripture I used to practice……" After getting a general grasp of the great mysterious sound's meaning, he began to research anew from the beginning and discovered some abnormalities.

He discovered that the mystical arts recorded within this single

paged golden book actually differed from the Dao Scripture which he had practiced within the Ling Xu sanctuary, the few lines of ancient words of the starting paragraph already contained some discrepancies.

"It seems that after the Wheel and Sea Volume of the Dao Scripture went missing, an incomplete copy was passed down and it wasn't even accurate……" Ye Fan was secretly celebrating in his heart, if he had not had the serendipity to acquire this golden book, he would never have discovered that the Dao Scripture he practiced in the past actually had faults within it.

"I can still correct it now and allow the mystical arts to successfully become wholesome….." Ye Fan acted on what he said and immediately started to circulate the true mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture as he began to cultivate.

A profound feeling welled up within his mind as he felt that his mind was clear, with the correction of the mystical arts, even more wisps of golden light were emitted from his sea of bitterness, flowing throughout his body making him feel unbelievably comfortable. His flesh, organs and bones were constantly being nourished and at this moment he felt as though he had an inexhaustible supply of energy.

At the same time, above the golden sea of bitterness within him, a mysterious change was occurring. There appeared various strange scenes, first the stars, next a formless mass that was giving off energy, this formless mass was derived from nothingness. Wisps of mists began to gather as divine red clouds began to glitter. These countless changes were never fixed.

Above the vast golden body of water, thousands upon thousands of changes were occurring, one moment a starry river was covering the sky, the next the sky would be endlessly desolate, life and death, growth and decay, end and beginning all continually exchanged in a cycle.

“This is the transformation from the real Dao Scripture?” Ye Fan was shocked, at this moment he could feel all the vigorous life forces of living things within earth, he could also feel the desolation of space and the dense death aura in the decay of space.

It was a long time before everything finally became calm, the golden sea of bitterness was even more condensed, if it was like a brilliant moon in the past, the glow from it now was like a blazing sun, the wisps of gold that were emitted were even more blazing and had an air of vigorous life in it.

“The real Dao Scripture is certainly exceptional!” Ye Fan lamented, he believed that he could go the distance and break through the curse of the ancient divine body he had.

Even with all this, he was not complacent or self-satisfied. He knew that there were a few ancient scriptures that could rival the Dao Scripture and were also endlessly profound, they were also complete sets and had not been lost, at this point they were likely within the hands of a Sacred Ground or an ancient aristocratic family.

“Presently, the mystical arts that I am cultivating certainly won’t

pale in comparison to anyone, my starting point won't be lower than anyone." Ye Fan's eyes seemed to shine with a divine light as he continued: "I will definitely establish my sea of bitterness, allowing the divine spring to gurgle forth. Form the spiritual bridge and reach the other shore, shedding my mortal body and exchanging my bones nine times before finally completing the transformation from a cocoon to a butterfly.

# Chapter 75: Seemingly Bottomless Pit

After having dinner, Ye Fan continued to comprehend the Dao Scripture, throughout the night he was immersed within this profound state, Qi was being diffused above his golden sea of bitterness, it was derived from nothingness as the the stars began to sparkle in the misty mass of unknown, constantly permutating.

It was only on the second day where he gradually woke up from this state, without feeling any lethargy, the qi essence of life within his sea of bitterness was flowing out and made him feel refreshed and comfortable.

“Big brother, it’s time to eat breakfast already……” Little Ting Ting hopped and skipped as she came over to call him for breakfast, her face was covered with a happy smile. Although the clothes on her body were disproportionate, old and tattered with many patches, it was hard to mask her glow from her spirited youth.

Ye Fan lamented, a child was a child, after experiencing yesterday’s events and suffering such a big grievance causing her to cry so miserably, once she slept and woke up she no longer felt sad and had already forgotten all the unhappiness.

“Ting Ting are you very happy? Ye Fan smiled as he asked.

“Yes!” Ting Ting earnestly nodded her head: “There’s food now and grandpa doesn’t need to starve to leave food for me, Ting Ting is definitely very happy!”

Ye Fan stared blankly, so a person's happiness was actually so simple, being able to eat a full meal was sufficient to make Ting Ting satisfied.

Looking at her rosy face that was filled with happiness, that splendour deeply affected Ye Fan as he spoiled her by rubbing her head before bringing her out of the room.

Close to noon time, the sickly faced middle aged man from the Li family came again and seeing the closed store, he kicked as he scolded: "Open up, this master wants to eat!"

Within the store, Ting Ting was extremely nervous and her wide eyes were filled with fear. She hugged the old man tightly in fear that the people would force their way in. Old uncle Jiang gently patted her back and softly consoled her.

Ye Fan was standing within the house and hearing those abusive words, he gradually frowned as his eyes became colder.

"Okay, Jiang old man if you're not willing to do business, then starve to death! Already seventy to eighty years old, I'd really like to see what you can do!"

The people outside who were hurling abuses broke two flower pots that were outside before using daggers to scratch the door and making it seem unsightly before finally leaving.

“Grandpa……” It was a long time before Ting Ting timidly asked: “Will those bad people still come back tomorrow?”

“It’s alright, Ting Ting don’t be afraid, Grandpa won’t let them harm you.” The old man constantly consoled her.

Ting Ting said in a small voice: “Those bad people are doing bad things everyday, why aren’t there good people to teach them a lesson?”

Ye Fan felt that a child’s words were really the most frank in this world and there were many injustices occurring but no one really cared about them.

“Ting Ting don’t worry, they definitely won’t be coming back tomorrow.” Ye Fan crouched down as he smiled: “Come, let’s go eat. I’ll make for you a nice dish for lunch.”

“Big brother you know how to cook?” Ting Ting’s eyes were filled with disbelief.

“Looking down on me, I’ll let you see my skills. I guarantee you’ve never eaten something like this before.”

The little girl blinked her big eyes in disbelief: “I don’t believe you, grandpa can cook any dish. Back when we had the restaurant grandpa would cook good dishes for me to eat everyday.”

“Sweet and sour pork ribs, have you eaten that before?”

Although it was a very simple dish from his homeland, Ye Fan did not believe that it had appeared within this place before.

Indeed an expression of puzzlement appearing on Ting Ting's face as she asked: "How can sugar be put together with pork ribs?" even the old man who was by the side showed confusion on his face.

Ye Fan seemed to have only been talking about military tactics on paper* as his chef skills were horrible. However, once the old man personally cooked a properly prepared sweet and sour pork was placed and this dish was simply delicious and made Ting Ting's face bright with smiles.

[Idiom*: Armchair Strategist]

Ye Fan loved this sort of happy and peaceful atmosphere, it gave him a feeling of home and left him feeling that he had found a place to live in.

Having finished the meal, the old man brought TIng Ting to have an afternoon nap before brewing a pot of tea and placing it on the eight sided table he asked Ye Fan: "Kid, whatever you are planning to do, please don't be rash……"

Ye Fan smiled: "Old uncle, don't worry nothing will go wrong. Actually, anyone can be a bad person. It's only a question if they want to be one or not."

“What are you planning to do?”

“If one thinks things through carefully, hurting someone isn’t difficult. I have hundreds of methods to take revenge on them however, I don’t have a need to do so. I will use the simplest of methods to deal with them. I will make them too busy to care about themselves, making sure they can no longer create trouble. Once I have free time in the future, I will properly take care of them.”

Ye Fan left this small town in the afternoon, he did not want to scheme against the Li family. As long as their cultivators did not return, he did not need to do so.

He already knew that the Li family would go to the county town every month to buy goods and food, they had monopolised more than half the businesses within the small town and tomorrow would be the day that they headed to the county town to buy goods. That yellow skinned middle aged man was an in-charge within the Li family and these matters were usually handled by him.

The county town was seven to eight miles from the small town and was much more prosperous than the small town. There were over ten thousand people there and both sides of the streets were filled with shops as the sound of buying and selling constantly invaded the senses. For Ye Fan with his exceptional physique, this distance was not a problem and barely two hours later he had easily reached. Selling a few of the hunted animals he had killed in the forest, he bought several sweets and snacks for Ting Ting as well as a few clothes and shoes. Finally, he also bought some items

in preparation for the next day.

It was only when the sky began to darken did he head back, the main objective for heading out today was to examine the route between the small town and the county town, looking for areas which were desolate and secluded.

Ye Fan only returned when the time for lamps to be lit was reached and seeing him unscathed, the old man's nervous heart finally calmed down. Ting Ting was elated and excited seeing all the beautiful clothes and a big grin could be seen on her face. Opening the wrappers which contained sweets and snacks within them, she placed the good ones into the old man and Ye Fan's mouths before happily eating some on her own.

"Ting Ting why aren't you changing your clothes?" Ye Fan asked her.

"I want to wear it in the future, the clothes I'm wearing can still be worn." She carefully wrapped up the new clothes.

Looking at her attired in her sewn and patched clothing, Ye Fan lamented. Kids from poor families made one's heart ache and being so young yet so understanding, her words made it difficult for him to calm down.

"Don't worry, in the future Ting Ting will have new clothes to wear everyday. Hurry, go and change into them." Ye Fan felt that Ting Ting who was such a cute girl and old uncle Jiang who was such a compassionate elder, if they were bullied again, heaven

would not stand for it.

This night, Ye Fan continued to comprehend the Dao Scripture, he found that when he held the Bodhi seed within his hand, his mind was especially empty and his understanding of the Dao Scripture became much deeper.

“It really deserves its name as the Tree of Comprehension……”

In the afternoon on this day, Ye Fan left the small town as he traversed through the forest and swiftly reached the road which led towards the county town. There was a mountainous path along the way which required one to pass through a ravine.

Ye Fan quickly climbed to the top of a cliff wall and changed into a black attire as he covered his face. Thereafter, he wore stilts as he pretended to be a middle aged man before opening the oil barrels which he had prepared here the day before, silently waiting for the group of people who were going to buy goods for the Li family.

The sky was beginning to turn dark before rumbling sounds were heard on the mountain road. There were ten big carts and each was filled with goods ranging from silk, woven thread and clothing materials to everyday goods and food, having all of one’s needs.

Ye Fan stood up as he forcefully pushed the oil barrels down, “Bang! Bang!” sounds could be heard as the ten over vehicles were all covered in oil, the scene immediately becoming a mess.

“Oil, it’s oil! Someone wants to set the carts on fire!” The people of the Li family were loudly shouting and several people were frantically running about. There was a small group of people who were searching for the person who wanted to start the fire. At this moment, someone finally spotted Ye Fan who was perched on top and only saw his tall figure and black clothing as he threw a stick that was lit downwards.

“Chi, Chi, Chi”

A large-scale raging fire immediately started blazing as all the vehicles became a fiery sea, impossible to extinguish as the fire surged to the sky.

“Who are you? You actually dare to burn all the goods of the Li family, aren’t you afraid of being chased to death by cultivators?” The yellow skinned middle aged man shouted in his panic, all these goods were destroyed and he could only imagine the frightening outcome once he went back.

“Bang!”

Another oil barrel was thrown down and almost smashed onto his head, his clothes had already been stained with oil and another flame was thrown down as the middle aged man began to scream, running towards the distant mountain stream with his entire body covered in fire.

Ye Fan swept his gaze as he hid his figure and hastily removed his stilts and black clothing, carrying this items as he swiftly ran away.

This night, there was plenty of commotion within the pure and honest small town, the Li family had lost a lot and over ten carts filled with goods had all been burnt to ash without anything remaining. There were even seven to eight people who had been burnt and injured by the fire.

Throughout the night, there was no peace within the pure and honest small town as the people from the Li family seemed to have gone mad and inspected every house for clues. To them, this was akin to attacking the foundations of the local overlord, their huge losses made them tremble in anger.

It was only late into the night before the small town gradually regained its peace. The people from the Li family surmised that the people within the small town would not dare to act out and did not have that kind of means as well as the gall. They guessed that this had been done by a competitor from far away. The Li Family became nervous and began to send letters to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary throughout the night.

This very night, Ye Fan silently left the small store as he went into the depths of the mountains. He needed to quickly increase his strength. After heading several miles deep into the mountains, he finally found a mountain cave and he placed a huge rock before the cave, sealing himself within as he began to take out all the spiritual medicines on his person.

The Jade Snake Orchid was sparkling and translucent, gentle like white jade. An overflowing fragrance that penetrates deeply into the heart*. The dazzling and bright golden stem left behind by

ancient tree spirit had magnificent rays of lights circulating about.

[Idiom: To refresh the mind]

Ye Fan held the Bodhi seed within his hand as he calmly began to comprehend the Dao Scripture, he could feel his sea of bitterness trembling as though it might make a breakthrough before ingesting the Jade Snake Orchid.

An hour later, although the mountain cave was blocked, the sounds of a howling sea could still be heard as golden lights flashed. It seemed as though there was a tsunami that went on relentlessly, the sounds were unending as the rumbling spread out.

It was only late into the night before everything calmed down and Ye Fan looked within, he found that his golden sea of bitterness had grown by more than double as he shifted the large rock aside and rushed out of the mountain cave. His body was lighter and felt fitter, his strength and speed had increased by several times and like a gentle mist, he quickly traversed through the mountain and forest.

Finally, he returned to the mountain cave as he once again sealed it with the large rock. Without hesitation, he began ingested the golden stem left by the ancient wood spirit and held the Bodhi seed in his hand as he continued to comprehend the Dao Scripture.

The night continued on as an explosive sound could be heard from the mountain cave, the large rock that was covering the mountain cave shattered as stone pieces shot in all directions.

Like a volcano that was erupting or the milky way spilling down to earth, the mountain cave was filled with dazzling lights as tsunamis seemed to shake the heavens, thunder continually resounded as Ye Fan's sea of bitterness became a vast golden body of water which continually surged towards the high heavens.

This scene continued for an hour before the astonishing sounds slowly faded away, the divine lights receded and Ye Fan rushed out. The mountain cave behind him let out rumbling noises as it thoroughly fell apart, the golden lights had been holding it in place and now that it had receded the cave fell apart.

At this moment it was close to dawn and the forest was not that dark anymore. Ye Fan felt a vigorous life force within his body and an abundance of qi essence was circulating within his body.

His golden sea of bitterness had become the size of a pigeon egg from that of a soybean size in a single night, becoming multiple times bigger. He was very astonished, this was the result of the golden stem that was left behind by the ancient wood spirit, it contained more than ten times the qi essence of life of the Jade Snake Orchid and was surely a rare treasure.

Ye Fan found it difficult to keep calm as he found that his body was like an endless abyss, he never needed to fear that the effects of medicine would be too fierce and if he could supply sufficient qi essence of life, he could continue to establish his sea of bitterness.

"Could it be that the curse of the ancient divine body did not

occur to me? Or could it be that this is a curse, every step of the way requires huge quantities of qi essence of life. This road will only become narrower as I go on, in the later stages it will certainly become harder to continue establishing the sea of bitterness……”

If a normal person were to have absorbed so much qi essence of life, his sea of bitterness would have long been pierced through and his body would have shattered. “If a normal person were to absorb all this qi essence of life over a long period of time, the sea of bitterness they establish should be much bigger than mine……” Ye Fan was in deep thought as he felt that this way of cultivating was really wasteful. He then muttered: “Is it really wasteful? I don’t seem to feel that way.”

At this moment he found that his sea of bitterness was especially condensed, although it was only the size of a pigeon egg, it had accumulated nineteen ‘Divine Symbols’ and had a vigorous vitality within it.

“A normal person whose sea of bitterness is the size of a pigeon eggs would find it difficult to form even a single ‘Divine Symbol’. As for my golden sea of bitterness it could do so long before reaching that size.” Ye Fan did not feel that this was extravagant but rather had a sense of accomplishment, his golden sea of bitterness was certainly exceptional.

“Chi, Chi, Chi”

Ye Fan lightly flicked his ten fingers as over ten streaks of ‘Divine Symbols’ shot forth, like streaks of dazzling sword aura, piercing through the mountain ahead.

“Establishing a similar sized sea of bitterness, the amount of divine energy I possess would be several times greater than a normal person.” This made different thoughts surge through Ye Fan’s mind.

“However, if I want to have a small success in my cultivating with this physique, I would require enormous amounts of qi essence of life to support it.” Thinking of this problem, he began to frown.

“This shouldn’t be limited to just spiritual medicines, if I can find an area of ‘Source’ that elder Wu Qing Feng mentioned, where the spiritual qi is dense and is a treasured ground for cultivating, I should also be able to breakthrough.”

Based on the records from ancient texts, when the qi coalesced within heaven and earth to form all living things, a misty formless mass of dense spiritual qi, extremely thick and many spiritual creatures could absorb the natural source of qi essence within heaven and earth, forming an amber crystal which contained vast amounts of qi essence of life.

Those that remained till now were referred to as ‘source’ and could be considered extremely valuable to cultivators. Some exceptional ‘sources’ could be considered to cost more than a town.

Since the era of of the beginning of all living things till time immemorial of the great desolates, the natural source of qi essence has been gradually thinning and it was difficult for a ‘Source’ to form.

In the final period of splendour, all living things flourished and the people were formidable, spiritual medicines abound and there were several rare ‘Divine Sources’. People of later generations found amber crystals that had living things sealed within them, these ‘Divine Sources’ once extracted would be able to provide endless amounts of qi essence of life.

“That was really an era that made one yearn for more……”

# Chapter 76: Seething In Anger

Since the beginning of the world, the coalescing of qi within the universe formed all living things. This made the era which endless cultivators yearned for to have no way of returning and Ye Fan could only sigh and lament.

This night, his gains were immense and his sea of bitterness had expanded to the size of a pigeon egg, most importantly were the nineteen divine symbols now found within the golden sea of bitterness, he now had exceptional battle prowess and could be considered a real ‘sea of bitterness’ cultivator, removing the ‘barely’ part of it.

At this moment, the sky was already bright and Ye Fan had hunted another two mountain chickens and a wild rabbit, he also picked a few wild fruits before heading back to the small town.

Returning to the small store, the old man had already prepared breakfast and Ting Ting was constantly knocking on his door, urging him to get up causing Ye Fan to smile.

Seeing him return from outside, Ting Ting was shocked and old uncle Jiang seemed like he wanted to say something but was hesitant, he had lived for so long and knew that the fire probably had something to do with Ye Fan.

“This afternoon we have additional food, roasted wild rabbit, leaf wrapped fragrant chicken pieces. Come, have a taste whether these wild fruits are good or not.” Ye Fan handed some bright red fruits

over to the little girl.

“Ohh ohh ohh, so delicious.” Ting Ting was super happy.

Finishing the breakfast, Ye Fan returned to his room and continued to study the Dao Scripture, he felt that each time he studied it he would gain different insights into it.

“Eh!”

Ye Fan was shocked, it seemed that the tens of lines at the start of the golden book were gradually becoming blurry and fading, as though they would disappear soon.

“It’s fortunate that I’ve already memorised it all otherwise it would really be problematic.” He did not understand why this was happening.

It was only in the afternoon when Ye Fan was roused by a clamour.

“Old fogey, stop talking nonsense. Hurry and prepare some dishes otherwise I will wreck this shop of yours!”

“Accumulated eight generations worth of bad luck, that big fire was too fierce, that damned bastard, he’s caused us so much trouble!”

“supervisor Liu, in the future what are we going to do? We have been beaten out of the Li family, it’s really easy to say yet bad to hear.”

“You’re asking me? Then who am I going to ask? Let’s take things one step at a time. Old man Jiang, what are you staring there dumbly for, hurry and prepare a table of food and wine to help us relieve our stress, otherwise, you better prepare to sleep forever!”

It was precisely the yellow-skinned middle aged man and his bunch of cronies, they were wrapped up in bandages, some had been previously burnt by the fire while others had been beaten up by the Li family and kicked out.

Ting Ting stood on before the table and timidly said: “Don’t shout at grandpa, we aren’t opening a food store anymore, go somewhere else to eat.”

“Bang!”

Supervisor Liu heavily slapped the table with his palm as his eyes widened: “Old man Jiang you better stop dilly dallying, if you don’t start preparing the dishes I will throw your granddaughter into the well.”

“Little girl go off to a corner, there’s nothing here of concern for you!” A fierce looking man whose left arm was wrapped in bandages pushed Ting Ting with his right hand, nearly sending her tumbling away.

Old uncle Jiang hastily held onto Ting Ting as he hid her behind his back and said: “We really aren’t doing business anymore, this store can no longer open for business. You people are better off going somewhere else.”

“You’ve already forgotten yesterday’s lesson? Our mood is so bad today but you actually dare to stand up against us?!” Supervisor Liu had a cold smile and his yellow face seemed even more waxy, appearing very sinister.

He stood up fiercely as he grabbed old uncle Jiang’s collar and coldly said: “You old fogey, these two days you’ve been growing some backbone. The few of us have become unlucky and you still dare to confront us. If you really make us angry we’ll burn down your dog hole and let you and that little animal become beggars!”

“Don’t beat my grandpa……” Ting Ting began to cry, she was barely five and too short, barely even reaching the height of supervisor Liu’s arm. She could only hug his leg as she pleaded: “I beg you, let my grandpa go. He’s already seventy over years in age…..”

Supervisor Liu grabbed old uncle Jiang’s collar tightly, although he had been burnt, old uncle Jiang was simply too old to be a match for him and his throat seemed to already have some slight bruising from the tight grasp. His wrinkled face was already red as he started to violently cough.

Ting Ting’s eyes were filled with tears as she hugged supervisor

Liu's leg while frantically and pitifully crying: "Please, let my grandpa go, he's already gasping for air……"

"Wu wu……. My grandpa is already in his seventies, don't strangle him….. hurry let him go." Ting Ting attempted to use force to shake supervisor Liu's leg but she only had so much strength and it was simply in vain.

"Little brat, go off to the side!" supervisor Liu used strength to lift his leg and immediately sent Ting Ting sprawling to the ground, thereafter he raised his leg again and wanted to kick.

By the time Ye Fan rushed over from the backyard to the small store, he witnessed this scene. He immediately grabbed the teapot that was on top of the table and hurled it heavily, smashing towards supervisor Liu's leg which was raising up and rushed forward to pull Ting Ting to safety.

"Big brother……" Ting Ting's mouth was whimpering as she timidly shouted out, her large eyes were red and her face was stained with tears, the new clothes on her body were already covered in dust.

Ye Fan was seething in anger and felt as though a fire had been lit within his body, he knocked aside supervisor Liu's hand and brought old uncle Jiang to safety before angrily saying:" Such a lonely old man and his granddaughter, how can you bear to act against them. Are you still human?!"

"Where did this little bastard come from? Look at how he's

speaking?” The few people by the side were feeling indignant as they all stood up and stared at Ye Fan with ill intentions.

Supervisor Liu’s yellow face was gloomier than ever, looking down from his high horse, he looked disdainfully at Ye Fan and shouted: “Little bastard so young yet trying to learn from the adults and upholding justice, I’ll toss you into the well later and see if you still dare to talk so loudly!”

Old uncle Jiang’s neck was bruised and his face was red, he crouched on the ground as he coughed for a long while before finally recovering and standing up. Ting Ting was extremely nervous and sobbed spasmodically while lightly massaging the old man’s back: “Grandpa, you’re alright right? Don’t scare Ting Ting, Ting Ting is very scared and concerned……”

Seeing this, the fire within Ye Fan grew larger but his countenance grew colder as he stared at supervisor Liu: “You’re already so big, have all those years been wasted on living a dog’s life?!”

“F***, where did this wild child come from, actually daring to speak like that to supervisor Liu, beat him to death!”

The yellow faced middle aged man had not expressed his feelings yet, but the fierce looking fellow by his side had already rushed forward and threw a slap towards Ye Fan’s face.

“Aaaahh!” Contrary to expectations, this person began to scream miserably instead. Ye Fan had acted first and twisted the arm that

was wrapped in bandages, the people in the surroundings did not know how much strength Ye Fan had and thought that the fellow was only screaming so wildly because his wound had been hit by Ye Fan.

Supervisor Liu had been kicked out of the Li family and all this was within Ye Fan's expectations. He never imagined that this Liu fellow would be so bossy and actually come to cause a nuisance even though he had already fallen to this state.

"Little bastard, your courage isn't small." Supervisor Liu had a cold smile as he stretched forth his hand and slapped, his movements were slow as he intended to shame Ye Fan.

"Pa!"

Ye Fan's palm went forth and with a 'Pa!' slapped supervisor Liu and sent him flying through the air, knocking the eight sided table behind him. He spat out a mouthful of blood that flew three to four metres in the air and as he struggled to climb up, he spat out seven to eight teeth from his mouth.

"F***, kill the little bastard!" Supervisor Liu was incensed and his yellow face was contorted, fire seemed like it would shoot out from his eyes.

These people did not realise how different Ye Fan was from normal people as they surrounded him. Ye Fan's gaze was cold as he began to strike at their bandaged areas causing miserable shrieks to sound out.

“Pa!” “Pa!” “Pa!”

In close succession, ten over slaps had been continuously thrown out and Ye Fan used his left and right hand to slap each of their faces viciously.

“You animals, even a lonely elder with his lovely grandchild, yet you can act on them, you lot really deserve to be killed.” Ye Fan’s strength was immense and if it were not for him controlling it, he would have already sent these heads flying.

Even so, molar teeths were flying as these people with bandages all over them had been slapped to the point their mouths and noses bled, their teeths fell out as they rolled on the ground.

“Aaahhh!”

“Young bastard, you dare to hit us?”

“Aaahhhh it’s so painful, my wound……”

These people had been slapped by Ye Fan and were rolling on the ground as miserable cries filled the air.

“Sorry old uncle Jiang, I forgot that this is within a small store. Later I’ll have to trouble you to clean up for hygiene sake. I’ll throw them out immediately.” Having said this, he grabbed them

one by one as he began to toss them out.

Old uncle Jiang's emotions were riled as all the pent up frustration of two years seemed to have been settled in an instant. His body was shivering as he covered Ting Ting's eyes, not allowing her to see this scene in fear of shocking her too much.

Ting Ting was extremely nervous as she cried and questioned: "Grandpa, how's big brother? Are those bad people bullying him too?!"

"

"Ting Ting don't worry, your big brother is fine. Those bad people have all been hit to the floor by him."

Ye Fan threw these people out by the street but had no intention of letting them go just like this. He began to kick them around like soccer balls and their cries of pain filled the sky, as though they were being skinned alive, releasing shrill cries of pain as though they were pigs at the slaughterhouse.

Supervisor Liu was Ye Fan's main point of interest and his face was already swollen after enduring multiple slaps to the face, all the teeth in his mouth had already been sent flying.

"Help!!!"

"There's a murderer……"

Their screams were endless as they shouted loudly for help

attracting several spectators but no one stepped forward to aid them, there were even some who seemed eager to give something a try, as though they wanted to also kick a few times.

Ye Fan noticed this and immediately loudly spoke: “Townsmen, what are you waiting for? When these people were the dogs of the Li family weren’t they very boisterous and arrogant? They’ve already been kicked out of the Li family, there’s already nothing to be afraid off. Come, let’s teach them a good lesson!”

These words had barely left his mouth when the effect immediately shone through. Exceeding Ye Fan’s expectations, all the people surrounding acted, old, young, male or female tore and punched, attacking the people on the ground in a crazed manner.

“I’ve heard this morning that they’ve all been beaten and kicked out of the Li family because the goods they were charged with had been burnt, it seems that it’s true.”

“No wonder this kid could viciously beat them up, they were already injured to begin with and had endured a beating from the Li family already. Otherwise, this youth would surely have to pay bitterly for his actions.”

“Hit them, kill these animals!”

The crowd was enraged as they fought to go forward and vent their anger on the few people. It was not difficult to imagine how much pent up frustration was within the group as their fires all exploded forth.

The few people on the ground constantly rolled about as their cries no longer sounded human. Their voices were hoarse as they screamed for their fathers and mothers, they even lost control of their bowels as a stench filled the air.

Ye Fan had originally planned to take advantage of the mess to break their bones and make them suffer for a year or more, looking at the scene before him he no longer needed to do so.

These townsfolk were vicious as they raged, the few men had their arms and legs broken, it seemed that they would be cripples from now on and it could be imagined the ire they had incited in the townsfolk.

“Please let us go, we won’t dare to do this anymore!”

“Aaaahhhh, somebody save us! There are murderers here……”

# Chapter 77: Treasure Of Ancient China

Supervisor Liu and his cronies had been beaten breathless and laid like dead dogs along the street. They had been too obnoxious and gained the ire of all the towns folk. If it were not for some earnest elders who aided them, they would have been beaten to death. Finally, the group were dragged like dead dogs and thrown before their respective houses, this event was actually to the satisfaction of everyone.

In the afternoon, the sounds of laughter could be heard within the small store as a broad grin could be seen on Ting Ting's face, no longer worried or afraid. Old uncle Jiang's suppressed emotions had been relieved and the wrinkles on his face seemed to have lightened considerably. To celebrate, he cooked several good dishes of roast rabbit meat, rabbit meatballs in broth, sweet and sour rabbit ribs, leaf wrapped fragrant chicken, chilli diced chicken meat and a vegetable dish comprising of green vegetables and wild fruits.

This meal lasted for a long time and laughter could be heard from time to time, this harmonious atmosphere gave Ye Fan the impression that he had returned home.

After lunch, Ye Fan proceeded deep into the mountains. He began to experiment controlling the 'divine symbols' as this would play an important part in the later stages of cultivating.

Each 'divine symbol' was like a divine iron chain as it swirled above the golden sea of bitterness, this was its original form that was formed from the qi essence of life.

Cultivators could make the ‘divine symbols’ transform into various shapes and sizes, like flying knives, daggers and etc. It could be released from the body and made to kill enemies, this was much more effective than the original form of the divine symbol. There were several people who spent a lot of their time and effort to shape their divine symbols into flying swords, small shields, divine halberds and etc. This made it easier to control and when facing an enemy, it’s power would be much stronger.

Then there were some who were unafraid of complicatedness or profundity, repeatedly molding their divine symbol and forming it into cauldrons,bells or even pagodas, displaying various mysterious capabilities.

In legend, extremely concise cultivators could mold their divine symbols into ‘artifacts’. If they reached the later stages of cultivation without any mishaps, the ‘artifacts’ within them would form ‘markings of Dao’ that would contain unfathomable strength.

Needless to say, the chance of this happening was extremely low and only those with exceptional talent and strength would be able to encounter such serendipitous events.

From previous experiences, the more complicated and profound the ‘artifacts’ that were formed from the divine symbols, the greater the strength. For example, forms of cauldrons, bells and pagodas would have a greater chance of interweaving ‘traces of Dao’ within them.

The more complicated the ‘artifact’, the harder it was to form and spending endless amounts of time one might not even be able to form the silhouette of the ‘artifact’, wasting precious time.

Also, even if one were to be lucky and be successful, once they cultivated to the later stages they may not even be rewarded for their efforts. After all, the chance of the ‘Pathways of Dao’ appearing was low and to most cultivators it could only be considered a myth, suitable for only those exceptional and superb talents.

Molding a divine symbol into an ‘artifact’ was extremely important to a cultivator and each person had to earnestly pursue it because this would be the foundation for their ‘Defensive Artifact ’.

Like Han Fei Yu who controlled a azure wooden artifact, Elder Han who controlled twelve green wooden swords or the unscrupulous cultivator who had so many different spiritual weapons, the prerequisite for this was having formed their divine symbols into ‘artifacts’ and using the ‘artifacts’ to control and use these weapons.

After molding their divine symbols into ‘artifacts’, a large majority of people would select a spiritual treasure of a similar form and only when the two were identical could the most power be utilised.

This did not mean that they would be unable to use the weapon if the form was different however there would be some reduction in the power.

Then there were a portion of cultivators who repeatedly molded their divine symbols, continually molding their ‘artifacts’ and did not require to use other weapons but rather used the ‘artifact’ they had molded as their spiritual weapon.

Based on the ‘Wheel and Sea Volume’ within the Dao Scripture, the ‘Sea of Bitterness’, ‘Spring of Life’, ‘Spiritual Bridge’ and ‘Other Shore’ were four great stages and at each stage one could mold an ‘artifact’.

Ye Fan was already a cultivator at the ‘Sea of Bitterness’ level and could mold his first ‘artifact’. He earnestly contemplated on how to go about doing so, as this matter was of great importance and once the ‘artifact’ was completed it would be difficult to change it.

Also, the first ‘artifact’ would be the foundation for everything in the future and would certainly be much more important than the ‘artifacts’ that were molded at the later stages of cultivation.

Since he had chosen the path of cultivation, everything would have to be done with the distant future in consideration. Ye Fan removed the ideas of the flying sword, shield, spear and other ordinary weapons.

Although he knew that the chances were slim, he still hoped that his ‘artifact’ could form the ‘Pathways of Dao’, because of this, he decided to choose a more complicated and profound ‘artifact’.

“What should I choose……” Ye Fan contemplated seriously and

carefully for a long time before a light seemed to shine from his eyes.

Finally, he had a clear decision and he decided to mold his divine symbol into a cauldron.

This was not a moment of recklessness but a decision that Ye Fan came to after much thought and consideration. Not only was he subjectively fond of the cauldron, more importantly was that the cauldron was the most mysterious artifact of ancient China.

The cauldron's history was weaved into the entirety of ancient China's history, rupturing the whole country as dynasties change. The monarchs combined and become Ancient China after being unified and all these events had ties with the cauldron. This was the mysterious artifact of ancient China, a nation's sacred object.

Planning to seize the power of an entire country, the prime of one's life……* An endless number of idioms were related to the cauldron and each was imposing and boundless, the cauldron had a long history within ancient China and was the most mysterious 'national artifact', it could even be said that the cauldron could represent ancient China.

[T/N* 鼎 refers to cauldron and the author uses chinese idioms which contain the word: 问鼎中原，春秋鼎盛]

Exactly how far the history of China stretched, it was difficult to estimate. Some things had been lost in the annals of history and had not been recorded or passed down, Ye Fan thought through it

clearly before arriving to the decision of the cauldron.

During the pre-Qin period, many sacred emperors and ancient monarchs have conducted the Fengshan sacrifice on Mount Tai. Some notable ones were Fu Xi*, Shennong**, Yellow Emperor and 72 other monarchs of ancient times. As Ye Fan saw it, they were too mysterious and based on his experiences it was not difficult to discover that there were endless parts of ancient China's history that were shrouded in endless mist.

[T/N*: Legendary Chinese Emperor, mythical creator of fishing, trapping and writing]

[T/N**: Farmer God, first of the legendary Flame emperors and creator of agriculture]

There seemed to be a mysterious period that existed within ancient China and although a majority of it had been wasted away in the boundless river of time, there were several traces that could be found which suggested that people in ancient China actually possessed formidable power.

The cauldron was the most mysterious artifact that had been passed down during that period and was naturally viewed highly by Ye Fan. It was the most important sacred artifact of ancient China and he naturally decided to choose it as his 'precious artifact'.

With regards to this decision, Ye Fan was very confident. This was the crystallization of ancient China and the first 'artifact' which would form his foundation, definitely the most suitable

choice.

The cauldron had many forms but the most popular ones were the three-footed circular cauldrons or four-footed square cauldrons. Ye Fan carefully contemplated the type he would mold his divine symbol into.

“Circular cauldrons with three foots and two ears appeared earlier.....” He gradually came to a decision within his heart.

Besides the reason of it appearing earlier, there were other reasons and based on his current status as a cultivator to think, he felt that the three-footed circular cauldron embodied some sort unfathomable substance to it.

The three-footed one was more stable than the four-footed one, it was the most stable form and the circular shape contained a more profound meaning of the Dao.

Three-footed, stable, firm, fixed, solid!

A circle represented the world, the universe and stars. In legends, when Pangu created heaven and earth, he smashed open a circle and shattered a spherical space. This was the starting point of the formless mass before creation and the process of evolution. The circle represented the origin.

“For sure, it’s definitely the three-footed circular cauldron!” After his careful thinking and serious contemplation, Ye Fan

finally made this important decision.

Wanting to mold the initial form of the divine symbol into a ‘artifact’ was not easy and this would be a long and tiring process that may not bear fruit and was simply impossible to complete in one go.

First, one needed to confirm the form of the ‘artifact’ and firmly carve it into their mind. Thereafter, using it as a model to mold their divine symbol without even the slightest bit of imperfection.

Ye Fan held the Bodhi seed within his hand and delved into the empty state, he began to carve a picture within his mind and used his divine knowledge to simulate the nineteen divine symbols and began to mold them, finalizing the design within his mind first.

After much hard work, the nineteen divine symbols melted and finally formed into a bean-sized golden cauldron, dazzling and bright, seemingly extremely perfect.

However, Ye Fan was not satisfied as he felt that something was still off, even though the form was perfect it seemed to lack direction and charm.

“That’s right, it lacks the ears of a cauldron.”

Ye Fan began to mold again and slowly began to mold a pair of ears onto the bean-sized golden cauldron.

When this golden cauldron was completed within his mind, Ye Fan immediately felt a natural implicit charm and he felt relatively satisfied as he muttered to himself: “A cauldron, two ears and three feet. That’s right, the Dao gives birth to one, one gives birth to two, two gives birth to three, three give birth to endless living things, endless living things encompass bears Yin and embraces Yang, a powerful force of harmony……”

Ye Fan felt more and more satisfied as he looked at it, the bean-sized golden cauldron was becoming more profound within his eyes and finally occupied his entire mind, becoming simple and unadorned yet imposing and natural.

“That’s right, this is it!”

Ye Fan had completed his imaging process and the three-footed cauldron would forever be carved within his mind. Henceforth he would begin to mold the divine symbols within his sea of bitterness to become a real cauldron.

“Piercing through the entire history of China, the most mysterious artifact……” Ye Fan’s heart was filled with expectations for the future.

# Chapter 78: Resolved

Ye Fan had already carved the image of the three-footed and two eared circular cauldron into his mind, however, attempting to mold the divine symbol within his sea of bitterness was simply too difficult and just attempting to combine the nineteen divine symbols together had taken up a lot of time.

Finally, he was able to slowly merge the nineteen divine symbols together, forming a bean-sized object but it was difficult to mold it and change its form. No matter how one looked at it, it simply did not have any semblance or connection to a cauldron.

Ye Fan tried many times however, not to mention the form of a cauldron, he had not even managed to create any wrinkles on it, molding a cauldron was certainly going to be an arduous process.

However, he was not anxious as he had after all just began to experiment. There would be time in the future to polish up and this would definitely be a long and tiring process. This was not exclusive only to him but others would also have gone through this.

The sky was beginning to darken and Ye Fan killed a badger before heading back. Returning to the small store and sitting down, the old man had already filled a table with a bountiful feast, the aroma making one salivate.

Ting Ting changed into a new attire and her rosy face had a sweet smile on it with two beautiful dimples. The little girl had very low

expectations for happiness, being able to eat a full meal and not being bullied was extremely satisfying to her. Furthermore, she even had new clothes to wear now.

"Today, the Li family have been panicking and started treating everyone as their enemy, gathering many able-bodied men to their side as though to guard against something." Old uncle Jiang mentioned at the table.

"What's going on?" Ye Fan asked.

"The Li family have a rival family that resides several tens of miles away, that family also has cultivators outside and is one of the strongest family of this area. The two families have never gotten along with each other and the Li family suspects that it was that rival family that sabotaged their ten over goods vehicles and have sent people to investigate. The result was them losing a supervisor and the others being half beaten to death before crawling back."

Ye Fan laughed lightly and said: "Originally I had planned to continue torturing them however it seems that I don't have to trouble myself with this anymore. This time, they'll be too busy with their own business without any time to suspect others. We'll let these two fishing village families continue to be jealous and suspicious of each other."

After carefully finding out all the details, Ye Fan silently left the small town and ran several tens of miles through the night to arrive at a manor.

Ye Fan was able to quietly make his way in, although this family had cultivators, they were not currently with the family and this was simply too easy for him. He spent roughly an hour before discovering a bunch of people who were tied up firmly within the firewood storage room.

“Is it supervisor Zhang?”

A sharp voice could be heard from within the room and as described by old uncle Jiang, he immediately answered: “It’s me, who are you?”

“Supervisor Li, I’m here to save you.” Ye Fan walked over as he removed the rope binding his body: “The young master of your house is returning from the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary and plans to thoroughly exterminate the Wang family.”

“What…….” Supervisor Zhang seemed to be in shock as he asked: “Who are you?”

Ye Fan’s voice became colder as he continued: “Calm your emotions, the young master of your family has requested help from a few of his fellow students and I am one of them.”

“This little one greets immortal sir.” Supervisor Li could hear from the voice that the other side was not very old however once he realised that he was faced with a cultivator, he began to worship like a kowtowing bug.

“No need to stand on ceremony, there’s some important matters that I have to instruct you, listen closely.”

“Immortal sir, please go ahead and speak.”

“There are a few barrels of oil here, go outside and spread a fire. Once the fire is lit, shout loudly that your young master will exterminate their entire family.”

“Ah, in that case wouldn’t we be killed if we’re caught by them?” At this moment, supervisor Zhang was in a state of confusion and could not think clearly but rather only thought of how to preserve his own life.

“Relax, your safety will be guaranteed by us. The few of us want to slowly torture them and let the people of the Wang family die in terror.”

“Alright, we’ll immediately set fire and when the time comes we’ll go all out together with immortal sir.”

Ye Fan patted his shoulder and said in a profound voice: “You’ve gained much merit this day!”

To be praised by the immortal within his eyes, supervisor Zhang felt the blood within him boil and utilised all his experience of bullying the townsfolk as he began to speedily move the few barrels of oil.

Ye fan began to keep the broken rope on the group as he turned and disappeared into the darkness.

Not long after, a blazing fire could be seen within the manor and four to five areas were ablaze. At this moment, supervisor Zhang's sharp voice could be heard in the night: "Bastards of the Wang family, your bastard hole has been set on fire by us! Just you wait, our young master will exterminate your entire family!"

The Wang family was in an uproar and the crying of ladies and angry shouts of men could be heard. In no time, many people wielding bright blades and swords were rushing to where supervisor Zhang was located.

At this moment, supervisor Zhang was feeling excited. With an immortal backing him up, he did not feel any fear as he continued to set more areas ablaze.

Seeing this, the people of the Wang family saw red and rushed towards them in their anger, wielding their blades to chop and the glint of their blades were especially dazzling in the light of the fire.

It was only at this moment that supervisor Zhang began to feel fear, the immortal had not appeared beside him and although he wanted to run there was simply no time. He let out a cry of fear as he turned to run but his neck had already been chopped off and fresh blood gurgled forth, he had died aggrieved.

Noticing that supervisor Zhang had been killed, Ye Fan silently

retreated in the darkness but did not leave, rather, he took advantage of the commotion to light several other areas on fire causing the entire area to blaze with a fire that seemed to shroud the skies.

It was only now that Ye Fan left swiftly, disappearing into the darkness in the blink of an eye.

The second day, this information reached Qing Feng town and the Li family was abuzz with activity.

“Half the manor of the Wang family was burnt?!”

“What? Zhang Shun did it?”

“Bastard! Zhang Shun! I’ll kill your entire family!”

The Li family was in a total state of panic like ants on a hot wok, gathering all their able-bodied men as they prepared to face the wrath of the Wang family.

Having half their manor burnt, the Wang family was beside themselves in anger and set the store that the Li family had within the county on fire, taking away all the gold and silver and gathered all their men as they rushed towards Qing Feng town.

This day, outside Qing Feng town, the two families engaged in a vicious bloodbath and many people died from both sides. They had no other way to dissolve their grievances and could only use their

weapons to talk.

It was only at dusk when the two sides retreated temporarily, it was clear that matters would not be settled like this and in the coming few days blood would flow like rivers.

This night, the people of the Wang family attacked as they rushed into the Qing Feng town, attempting to set the Li family residence on fire. If they had not been prepared for this, the Li family residence may well have been razed to the ground. Even so, they had lost several rooms and the entire night was restless.

The townsfolk of the Qing Feng town were all secretly elated, the Li family usually abused them however no one dared to stand up, now that this was happening, it seemed like their dreams were coming true.

Old uncle Jiang personally witnessed all this as an expression of anxiety appeared on his face, Ye Fan noticed this and smiled: “Don’t worry, these two families aren’t saints and dogs fighting each other is only natural.”

The old man nodded: “Child, refrain from doing such matters in the future……” He was very worried for Ye Fan, he felt that an eleven to twelve year old kid who kid so easily create such a huge commotion between two families, in the future he might walk down the wrong path.

Ye Fan lightly laughed as he answered: “Old uncle don’t worry, I’ve never been one to harm people. Only when faced with people

like them will I act like this."

"The people of the Li family outside cultivating should be returning soon." The old man had an expression of hurt on his face as he seemed to recall his son.

"I'd think that would be the case, with such a big commotion occurring within the Li family, news must have reached Lin Xia immortal sanctuary already."

"Even if something like this did not happen, the cultivators of the Li family would have returned."

"Why?" Ye Fan was puzzled.

"The Li family has tremendous daily expenses and most of it is used to gather spiritual medicines to send to the cultivators of their family. Some time back, they seemed to have acquired a 'source' and it's rumoured that the person gathering the medicine found it within the deep mountains within an ancient cave. It seems to be something of great benefit to cultivators."

Ye Fan's heart began to tremble violently.

Based on ancient texts, during the era which all living things were formed, the plants and trees were abundant and living things were formidable, spiritual medicines were endless and many 'sources' were formed, like sparkling and translucent amber crystals, they contained large amounts of the qi essence of life.

There were even some rare ‘divine sources’ that contained peerless existences from the starting era and these ‘sources’ if obtained, could proved to be a huge volume of qi essence of life.

“Finding a ‘source’ within an ancient cave, the Li family has really given me a big present!” Ye Fan had a brilliant smile on his face.

# *Chapter 79: Copying The Engravings Of The Dao Inscriptions*

“Where did the person who went there to gather medicine and discover the ‘source’ go?” Ye Fan asked.

It was recorded in ancient texts that ‘source lands’ could often have multiple pieces of ‘source’ and if one could find that ancient cave, there may be other discoveries within as well.

Old uncle Jiang sighed: “Once he returned to the town and sold that piece of ‘source’ to the Li family, he disappeared after barely a day. Many people guessed that the Li family was unwilling to pay and secretly committed some bloody atrocities.”

Ye Fan immediately understood, the Li family must have killed to silence him, a ‘source’ was simply too important to a cultivator and they would not allow this person to spread the news.

“It seems this will be slightly problematic……”

“Big brother, what’s the problem? Ting Ting will help you.” Little Ting Ting’s head was tilted and her large blight eyes were blinking as she innocently said.

Ye Fan laughed as he rubbed her nose: “Ting Ting is so obedient…….”

Finishing breakfast, Ye Fan left the small store and walked two rounds around the Li family residence from a distance. The tiles and walls inside were ruined and there were over thirty houses that had been completely burnt down.

At this moment, sounds of beasts roaring could be heard from outside the town and dust was kicked up. A tall mount rushed into the small town, its appearance was like a horse but was covered in green scales, its speed was exceptional and within the blink of an eye it had appeared before the Li family main door.

“Dragon Scaled horse!” Ye Fan was startled, he knew this unique beast, its body was covered in green scales and it was like a horse, its strength was immeasurable and when it galloped its speed was several times that of a horse. In a single day it could easily travel four to five thousand miles easily, not knowing fatigue and needed no rest in between.

A normal person would find it hard to possess such a unique beast and even cultivators at the Sea of Bitterness stage would find it difficult to subdue it. The Dragon Scaled Horse had phenomenal strength and usually only cultivators at the Spring of Life stage would subdue them before giving them over to juniors who could not ride on mystical rainbows.

The green scales of the Dragon Scaled Horse flashed as its tail whipped about and it roared towards the sky, it was simply an amazing spirited horse. on the saddle sat a young man of twenty five to twenty six years of age, his skin was fair, lips thin and his eyes seemed to have a sinister coldness within them.

The people of the Li family were in an uproar as the large door was opened and someone began to shout as he ran inwards: “Young master is back!”

Ye Fan calmed his nerves, this cultivator of the Li family should only be at the Sea of Bitterness stage, otherwise he should have ridden on a mystical rainbow over.

“I’m definitely going to acquire this ‘source’!”

Now was not the time to act and not long after Ye Fan once again entered into the deep forest. Looking at the golden book within his sea of bitterness, he realised that the introductory words were getting more blurry and seemed that they were on the verge of completely disappearing.

“Why is this happening……” Ye Fan constantly contemplated this question as he muttered: “It’s fortunate that I’ve already comprehended the parts that are about to disappear.”

Thereafter, he continued to study the Dao Scripture and each time he would have different insights. It was a long time later before he stopped and began to mold the cauldron above his sea of bitterness.

Nineteen divine symbols melted together, like a lump of divine metal, dazzling and resplendent, no matter how Ye Fan attempted to mold it, it simply did not shape into a cauldron.

Within this timeframe, Ye Fan had attempted to mold it into a flying sword and although it was not perfectly done, it still had the rough shape of a sword and if he continued to mold it, it would certainly be successful one day.

“Why is so difficult to mold a cauldron?”

Ye Fan melted the golden lump that was in the shape of a sword as he began to mold again, each try ended in failure and he could only mold it into a lump without any form, even a rough outline had not been made.

“If it goes on like this how many years would it take before I complete a cauldron that is brimming with Dao aura . If I just waste my time like this, it would really be like attempting to use a wicker basket to draw water, only ending up with nothing.

The process of molding a cauldron not only required the utilisation of the qi essence of life, it also required one to have a high level of concentration and finally Ye Fan was too fatigued and had no choice but to stop.

Above the sea of bitterness, the bean-sized lump of divine metal was bright and dazzling, even a hundred refinements had not caused it to take shape.

“This piece of ‘divine metal’ can already be considered a half crippled ‘artifact’, I wonder if I can control a weapon artifact like the green wooden treasure.”

Ye Fan was feeling regretful that he did not have any treasures, he was unsure if he could create a ‘defensive artifact and would have wanted to test it out if he had one. Suddenly, he saw the golden book that had been squeezed by the aurichalcite to the side of his sea of bitterness as he thought: “I’ll try to control it.”

The bean-sized divine metal lump swiftly entered his sea of bitterness and immediately entered the golden book. With a thought, a blazing golden light shot out from his body and streaked through the air like a bolt of lightning.

The dazzling light flashed by as several of the ancient trees and two large boulders failed to block it. Ye Fan walked forward and gently pushed, an ancient tree immediately fell to the ground, the area where it was severed was extremely smooth and the golden light which had flashed by had caused it to fall with a single touch.

Ye Fan felt astonished, all the ancient trees had become like that and even those two large boulders were instantly separated into two, smoothly cut in half.

The golden book flew over ten metres away and was like a bright and dazzling sun that hung in mid air, with a single thought, the golden light flashed as it came flying back and re-entered his sea of bitterness.

“It’s really so sharp……” Ye Fan was astonished, he was merely testing it out but he did not imagine that when the golden book was sent flying out, it would be so sharp and austere without compare.

“This golden piece of paper not only records the Dao Scripture, could it also be used as a weapon?” Having this thought, he began to test it once again and a golden light flashed like a rainbow, constantly streaking through the air.

Ye Fan discovered that he could only send the golden book flying out ten odd metres and once it went out of that area, he would find it difficult to control.

“The Dao Scripture is one of the eastern badlands most mysterious ancient scripture, this golden paper is certainly extraordinary and I now have an incomparable penetrating weapon when faced with an enemy.” Ye Fan gradually filled with confidence.

“Even a single golden page can be like this, the aurichalcite must be even more frightening. It should be a real weapon, I wonder how powerful is it……” Thinking of this, Ye Fan found it hard to calm down as he immediately thought of controlling the aurichalcite.

Even so, the aurichalcite was calm without any movement within the centre of his golden sea of bitterness, like a boulder that was firmly erected there.

“It feels like I’m trying to push a mountain.” Ye Fan’s head was glistening with sweat and he had already exerted all his energy but could not move the aurichalcite in the slightest. The centre of his sea of bitterness seemed to be shrouded in an aura of great change

and simpleness, together, it exuded a pressure that knows no bounds.

"No wonder even the Dao Scripture was forced to the side, this piece of aurichalcite is simply too mysterious and extraordinary, it feels as though I'm facing an endless sea or the ancient galaxies within the sky, vast and endless with pressure akin to the heavens."

The aurichalcite was not whole and seemed to have been broken off from some sort of weapon. If even a broken off piece was like this, it could only imagined how frightening the whole weapon would be.

"It's simply impossible to measure, no way to appraise!" Ye Fan's heart was filled with amazement and the more he thought about it the more he felt astonished and afraid as he mumbled: "I wonder what the whole weapon looks like……"

At this moment, his eyes suddenly lit as he saw the Dao Inscriptions on the aurichalcite, the twisting Dao Veins seemed to have an indescribable aura of the Dao.

"With no way to move the aurichalcite, let me first copy down its Dao Inscriptions!"

The surface of the mysterious aurichalcite did not have any Dao Inscriptions, rather, dense and numerous amounts of it could be seen at the severed point. Dao Inscriptions densely covered and were extremely complex, profound and obscure without any way

for a person to comprehend. It felt as though there was a natural law of the Dao, heaven and earth became one and made a person who looked at it feel his emotions deeply rile up.

Ye Fan had not reached the level where he could analyse the Dao Inscriptions, he simply wanted to use that lump of divine metal that he was unable to mold into the cauldron and constantly mold it at the severed part of the aurichalcite, copying the mysterious Dao Inscriptions onto it.

“These dense and numerous, profound and obscure Dao Inscriptions surely have an extraordinary origin and could possibly be those naturally occurring vein lines, unique without match.

Ye Fan rested for a moment before beginning to melt the lump of divine metal, thereafter beginning to mold it on the aurichalcite like a normal human who was forging metal, repeatedly hammering as dense and numerous Dao Veins that were imprinted on it.

He constantly refined and copied to the extent that he had a faint feeling that this lump of divine metal seemed to have an indescribable charm to it. However, when he earnestly felt it out, he felt that it was still ordinary without any changes, the implicit charm was simply non-existent.

“Did i perceive wrongly?” Ye Fan muttered.

In the time that followed, he continued to smelt the lump of divine metal and constantly refined it, inside and outside were all

covered with the Dao Inscriptions of the aurichalcite, it could be said that he was going through hard work and numerous revisions.

"It seems to be much more condensed than in the past. Regardless of whether it is a misconception, copying these Dao Inscriptions from the aurichalcite will definitely have benefits without any detriments."

Finally, Ye Fan began to attempt molding a cauldron as he tested if the lump of divine metal that had Dao Inscriptions engraved on it would have any changes.

Above his sea of bitterness, the lump of divine metal continually changed as it corners of it gradually became rounder, the glow from it had receded significantly and there seemed to be a concise feel to it.

Finally, although even a rough outline had not been formed, Ye Fan was still elated although he could detect some abnormalities during the forging process of the lump of divine metal, he managed to find an abstruse feeling.

"The Dao Inscriptions on the aurichalcite are indeed mysterious, in the future I will constantly smelt and copy. I believe that successfully molding a cauldron will definitely not be a problem."

# Chapter 80: Seizing The Roots

It was midday and Ye Fan returned to the small store. He loved the atmosphere of eating together with old uncle Jiang and little Ting Ting.

After the meal, little Ting Ting was very obedient and went to do the dishes. Noticing this, Ye Fan felt himself blush with shame, it seemed that he had not helped them with any of the chores before.

“Let me do it, you’re still young. There’s no need to do this. Go take an afternoon nap, it will help you grow up.”

“There’s no need for big brother to do this, I know how to wash the dishes, I am able to make them very clean.” The little girl forcefully pushed Ye Fan to the side.

Old uncle Jiang’s face was full of smiles as he kept the dishes by the side, looking towards his grand daughter with a gaze filled with doting love.

An abrupt voice suddenly broke this warm atmosphere and said: “We haven’t seen each other for two years and this little girl has already grown up so much, so understanding already.”

A young male of twenty five to twenty six years of age walked in, his face had a faint smile on it as he swept his gaze disdainfully at old uncle Jiang and Ye Fan before finally staring at little Ting Ting.

“Uncle, who are you? Do you recognise me?” Little Ting Ting’s mouth was very sweet and although she recognised that he did not have good intentions, she still obediently called him uncle.

“Of course I do, when your parents were alive I already knew you.” The young man’s skin was fair and his lips were thin, exuding a treacherous aura. He did not avoid the taboo and immediately spoke of little Ting Ting’s parents deaths.

The large eyes of the little girl immediately reddened, she still vaguely remembered the looks of her parents, back then she had spent many nights crying to sleep, finally by supporting and being supported by old uncle Jiang, she was able to stop crying in her sleep with the passage of time.

At this moment, having her parents mentioned again, her tears rolled down as she turned her small body and began to slowly wash the dishes, her shoulders continually shuddering.

Seeing that Ting Ting was hurt, the expression on old uncle Jiang’s face changed as he asked: “The seventh young master of the Li family, what business do you have here?”

The young man pulled a chair as he sat down and said: “Nothing much, I’m a person who likes to reminisce the old days so I came over to take a look at how the two of you grandfather and granddaughter were faring.

Old uncle Jiang seemed indifferent as he replied: “Thanks to the good fortune from seventh young master, we are able to barely

make ends meet each day.”

Ye Fan stood by the side without speaking, he had already recognised this person, it was the young man who had ridden on the Dragon Scaled Horse.

“Why do I feel a sense of resentment, old Jiang do you hate me out of jealousy?” The young man spoke from his high horse with a faint smile.

This person had entered the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary together with Ting Ting’s father and due to his limited aptitude, he had been left far behind by Ting Ting’s father. There was an occasion where he had committed some atrocities and was viciously taught a lesson by Ting Ting’s father. As a result, he harboured a jealous hatred within his heart. When Ting Ting’s parents passed away, he had been the one to instigate the people of the Li family to take away old uncle Jiang’s restaurant and inn, forcing the two young and old to almost have no other alternatives.

“I would never dare to bear resentment for seventh young master, there’s no problem here.”

The young man’s lips were very thin and gave one a stern feeling as he said: There are some things that you do not have to keep buried deep down in your heart. If you feel jealous hatred, just spit it out, otherwise, you’ll harm yourself. You’re already in your seventies and don’t have many years left in you.”

Old uncle Jiang's body shuddered for a while before he finally calmed down and said: "Seventh young master, I only want to ask you one thing, otherwise, I would die with regrets."

"Go ahead." The young man unfurled a folding fan with a 'Pa!" as he gently fanned, seemingly calm and unperturbed.

"I only want to know, were the deaths of Ting Ting's parents really accidents?" The old man seemed to have lost control of his emotions as he tightly clenched his fists till the whites were showing as his body gently trembled.

Ye Fan swiftly moved forward to support him. By the side, Ting Ting was silently sobbing spasmodically, her small frame had her back towards them as her shoulders continued to shudder, her small hands slowly washing a plate.

"Old Jiang, it seems you harbour an earth shattering resentment deep within your heart. But what can you do? You're already so old, could it be that you wish to fight with your life on the line? If you die, this beautiful granddaughter of yours would really have no place to go."

"How did Ting Ting's parents die?" Old uncle Jiang's breathing was heavy and his chest heaved, his face was filled with grief.

"Go ahead and guess all you want." The young man snapped his folding fan shut with a 'Pa!' as he looked toward Ye Fan: "I heard you led people to beat up supervisor Liu causing him to become a cripple?"

Ye Fan did not reply but rather supported old uncle Jiang to stand by the side. The young man swept his gaze at him but did not continue talking as he stood up and walked towards Ting Ting.

“What do you want to do?!” Old uncle Jiang had fear in his eyes and like a mother hen he stretched his hands out, blocking the young man’s way as he hid Ting Ting behind him.

“Old Jiang, why are you so nervous, could it be that you think I’d take action against a little girl?” The young man carefully measured Ting Ting as he nodded his head and muttered: “Alike, simply too alike. It’s such a waste for the fairy of Yan Xia to die such a wasteful death. Two years have gone by and your daughter already looks so much like you.”

Ting Ting bit her lips as she continued to sob spasmodically but did not bawl out loudly, it seemed that she did not want to be seen crying in front of the Li family seventh young master.

The young man held the folding fan in his right hand as he gently tapped it in his left and said: “Alright old Jiang, in future you won’t have to suffer anymore. I’ll look after this little girl and you can rest well at night within this little town.”

“What do you mean?!” Old uncle Jiang began to pant as he hid Ting Ting behind him, staring squarely at the Li family young master.

“This little girl seems capable and clever, I’m prepared to bring

her to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary. She will be by my side aiding me with some matters, it'll certainly be better than staying with you."

"No way, unless I'm dead, you can't bully others like this seventh young master!" Old uncle Jiang was angry and anxious, he seemed to have difficulty breathing and his eyes were red as he trembled.

Ye Fan continued to support him firmly.

"Grandpa, are you alright, don't scare Ting Ting....." Little Ting Ting hugged the old man's legs, her countenance filled with fear and concern as her tears rolled down.

The young man said sarcastically: "Old Jiang, do you have to get so angry? You must understand that once she leaves, she'll be living a different kind of life. Who knows? Maybe she will have a bright and fulfilling life in the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary."

Old uncle Jiang continued to pant heavily and it took a while before he calmed himself down and pleaded: "Seventh young master, please let us go."

"What are you talking about!" The young man's face became gloomy and seemed sinister and cold as he said: "I'm doing you a favour by easing your burden and allowing you to have a good night's rest, you really don't know what's good for you."

"I'll stay together with grandpa forever!" Ting Ting's eyes were

red and swollen as she hugged old uncle Jiang's leg.

"I've still got some important matters to attend to, tomorrow I'll be heading back to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary. After a few days, I'll personally come to take her away." The seventh young master of the Li family said this before turning while glancing at Ye Fan: "When you hit a dog, you have to know who it's master is, although those dogs were kicked out, we still won't allow outsiders to bully them." Having said this, he lightly patted Ye Fan twice on his shoulder: "Reckless people won't live very long."

"Bang!"

Ye Fan was planted on the ground, streaks of blood could be seen from his mouth and the chair which was behind him had even fallen apart.

The young man coldly glanced over before laughing and cockily walking away.

"Kid, are you okay?!" Old uncle Jiang was frantic and anxious as he helped Ye Fan up.

"Big brother……" Ting Ting's face had fear on it as she used her small hands to wipe the blood smearing Ye Fan's mouth.

Ye Fan saw that the Li family seventh young master had gone and quickly stood up as he said: "I'm okay."

“You’re really okay?” The old man was only half convinced.

Ting Ting’s face was filled with anxiety as she asked: “Big brother are you really alright? You’re bleeding from your mouth.”

“Matters almost got out of hand.”

“Then are you alright?” Old uncle Jiang once again had a concerned expression on his face.

“You’ve misunderstood me, I meant that I almost couldn’t bear it any longer and acted. Personally I’m fine. However, that person is really vicious, if it were a normal person, after taking those two blows, they would be dead within half a month.”

“It’s the two of us who have implicated you, if you were alone, you wouldn’t need to bear with this.” Old uncle Jiang blamed himself.

“Uncle, don’t say those words. I forced myself to spit out that blood that I spat earlier.” Ye Fan smiled as he said: “Now that you mention it, I should feel grateful to the seventh young master, he’s given me a big opportunity. Coming here and telling me when he’s leaving.”

“You.....” There was a puzzled expression on old uncle Jiang’s face.

“This world does not need a vicious person like him, he actually

wants to take Ting Ting away, even in his next life I won't allow it!"

This night, Ye Fan continued to monitor the movements of the Li family and only late into the night did he leave the small town, holding a position about twenty miles away at a mountain road, this was a path that one needed to traverse if they wished to travel out of Qing Feng town.

The moonlight was hazy as a cloud floated by, the forest became much darker and several roars from unknown beasts could be heard. The dark night made the forest seem all the more sinister and frightening.

In the later half of the night, the mountain road rumbled as the sound of horse hooves could be heard, under the dim moonlight, a Dragon Scaled Horse whose entire body was flashing with green light could be seen galloping over.

Ye Fan silently waited, only when the Dragon Scaled Horse was right before him did a blazing golden light suddenly rush from his body, especially dazzling in the darkness like a bright sun as it streaked through the air.

"Chi!"

A bloody light burst forth and the miserable cry of the Dragon Scaled Horse could be heard however the person atop it did not dismount.

Ye Fan was shocked as he speedily made the golden book reverse, sending it chopping towards them again. “Chi!” The Dragon Scaled Horse was split in two and its corpse fell heavily to the ground, the person atop if flew over twenty metres through the air before landing on the group.

“Chi!”

A silver light flashed as a half Chi long silver spear was sent flying towards Ye Fan, like a silver bolt of lightning.

“Clink!”

A golden light flashed as the golden book chopped the silver spear, the half Chi long spear was immediately rent in two as it fell to the ground.

Not far away, the person who had fallen from the Dragon Scaled Horse swiftly began to run in the direction of the forest.

At this moment, Ye Fan once again made it difficult for the person as the golden book became a streak of lightning which shot through the darkness and neared within the blink of an eye, its might was like a galloping horse with nothing that it could not overcome as it severed the person’s left leg with a ‘Chi!’.

“Aaahhh!”

The person finally let out a miserable cry as he tumbled to the

ground.

It was only now that Ye Fan finally let out a sigh of relief as he prepared to go forward. This was the first time he was ambushing to kill an enemy and he could not help but feel some nervousness as he missed a couple of good opportunities.

“The Li family seventh young master, we meet again.”

The young man who was continually rolling on the ground as fresh blood flowed and stained the ground managed to clearly see Ye Fan as an expression of disbelief appeared on his face while he exclaimed: “How could it be you?”

“What’s the matter? Is something wrong?” Ye Fan’s expression was flat and gazed at him from a distance.

“I can’t believe that it’s you little bastard, I’ve really misjudged you!” The seventh young master of the Li family had a fierce look on his face, filled with pain and anger as he seemed exceptionally frightening.

“Thank you seventh young master for giving me such a big opportunity.” Ye Fan stood in the distance as he had a faint cold smile plastered on his face.

“You…… you……” The body of the seventh young master suddenly began to tremble, in this moment he felt mad and hopeless, extremely enraged by these turn of events.

“How did Ting Ting’s parents die?” Having said this, Ye Fan’s tone grew colder as a golden light flashed and the golden book speedily shot forth.

“Chi! Chi!”

Two light noises could be heard as both arms of the seventh young master were severed. Ye Fan was still not at ease and he once again sent forth the golden rainbow, gently striking at his sea of bitterness.

“Aaahhhh! Little bastard, even if I become a ghost I won’t let you go!”

“Why do men always say such useless words.” Ye Fan walked before him as he said: “You bastard, doing all manner of bad things without any conscience, this is the retribution you deserve and I will slowly wait upon you.”

“Pa!”

Ye Fan’s slap landed as it sent him flying four to five metres away.

“You!” The eyes of the seventh young master seemed to be spewing fire.

Ye Fan walked over as his leg stepped onto his face which could still be considered smooth: “Heaven is watching the deeds of every person, having done all manner of evil deeds, did you really think you could live a carefree life forever?”

# Chapter 81: Looking For Surnamed Jiang

When Ye Fan saw the old or young disabled and helpless, his heart would often feel sympathy. However, when he met those who oppressed the weak and did all manner of vicious acts, he would become emotionless, absolutely ice cold. It may seem contradictory but this was how it was and an overly compassionate heart existed together with his coldness and emotionlessness, he did not know which side he leaned towards.

For example right now, he was absolutely emotionless without any mercy within him as he stepped on the Li family seventh young master's face, his voice was cold as he said: "If you don't want to continue suffering, answer the questions that are asked. Otherwise, you know what's the outcome."

"Little bastard……"

"Bang!"

Ye Fan sent him flying with a kick, the teeth of the seventh young master all fell out as his delicate and fair face swelled up, blood flowing from his nose and mouth.

"Looking at your soft skin and tender flesh, you're just perfect material for an eunuch. I see that you still don't want to talk, let me fulfil your wish and make it a reality." Ye Fan released his golden book which hovered in the air, its brilliance bright and dazzling.

“You..... What are you planning to do?” The seventh young master was besides himself in fear.

“Allowing you to become an eunuch!”

“No! I’ll talk, I’ll talk about everything!” The seventh young master was so afraid that his face had contorted, to a man this was something that was even harder to bear than death.

“Spineless thing.”

Ye Fan sat not far away on a limestone as he quietly listened to him talk about the past. Ting Ting’s parents had really been killed by the few cultivators of the Li family. They had used all their means to acquire an extremely rare medicine from other cultivators. It could cause extremely strong wild beasts to go crazy as they secretly doused the bodies of Ting Ting’s parents. Thereafter, when they went out to gather spiritual medicine, they had been torn to shreds by the Lightning Bird.

There were also other shady dealings and sinister plots that if heard would make one feel resentment. Ye Fan sighed: “Be it the ordinary realm or the cultivator world, there isn’t much difference. A place with people will always be complicated because a human will bear grudges, even a cultivator is not exempt from this.”

Ye Fan searched and found a wooden case within his bosom, kicking him aside then borrowing the light from the moon and the stars, he slowly opened this slightly heavy sandalwood case.

Inside, there was a faint yellow piece of rock that was about thick as a thumb and as long as a segment of a finger. Although it was a very small piece, it seemed very heavy to hold and Ye Fan could fill it brimming with vigorous life.

“Based on ancient texts, during the era which all living things were formed, the plants and trees were abundant and living things were formidable, spiritual medicines were endless and many ‘sources’ were formed, like sparkling and translucent amber crystals, they contained large amounts of the qi essence of life. Was this the ‘source’?”*

[T/N* This may seem familiar because the author previously used this exact same sentence]

Ye Fan constantly inspected it under the moonlight and discovered that this piece of ‘source’ had many impurities within, the sparkling and translucent portion of it barely covered a third of it. This made him feel a little regretful, this was not a pure ‘source’.

Even so, he was already extremely satisfied. This miraculous amber stone contained an extremely vigorous qi essence of life and something that was like mist and multicoloured lights seemed to be circulating within.

“Good stuff! I wonder how much it can assist me to establish the sea of bitterness!”

“That is mine!” The Li family seventh young master groaned within his pool of blood, he grit his teeth, clearly filled with anger and bitter resentment.

“Wasn’t this piece of ‘source’ found within an ancient cave within the deep mountains? Could it be that there was only such a small piece, nothing else?”

Under Ye Fan’s ministrations, the seventh young master was willing to say anything and hid nothing. There was a cultivator within that died in a seated posture, too many years had passed and even the bones had turned to ash, leaving only this piece of ‘source’ behind.

“It’s too regretful, i thought that I would be able to obtain a few pieces.” Ye Fan felt rather greedy for these ‘sources’.

“I’ve said everything, can you leave a way out for me?” The seventh young master had an expression of hope, he knew that this was having excessive expectations and more likely than not the enemy would not let him off.

“When you were planning to kill Ting Ting’s parents, did you ever have mercy in your heart? When you forced old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting into such bitter states, did you think of leaving them a way out?”

Ye Fan kicked him away as he said: “I’ll give you a chance to kill yourself so you won’t get tortured anymore. I have never killed anyone before and don’t feel like staining my hands.”

“You…… you’ve never killed before…..” As the seventh young master said this his body trembled: “You….. you will be struck by lightning!”

Ye Fan used his feet to kick him before a mountain rock and said: “Knock yourself to death, if you force me to act, I’ll make you an eunuch first before killing you.”

At this moment, the Li family seventh young master was dismayed to the point of going mad, this method of death was simply too stupid and cowardly, the other party could not be bothered to act and wanted him to kill himself.

“Little bastard, you’re really an ass! I…… even if I become a ghost I won’t let you go!” The seventh young master was infuriated to the point of spitting blood out.

Ye Fan sat on a limestone not far away and said: “Don’t talk so much nonsense, hurry and send yourself off. I don’t really have much patience.”

“You….. I……” The seventh young master was dismal to the point of not being able to talk before he finally howled: “You will die a terrible death!”

“Bang!”

His head slammed into the mountain rock, immediately dying on

the spot.

“You killed yourself by knocking your head, I never killed anyone.” Ye Fan stood up as he began to mop up any traces. He spent a full two hours before wiping away all traces and headed back to the small town.

Although he looked calm, his hands were already drenched in sweat. This was the first time he had killed an enemy and although the seventh young master was guilty of many monstrous crimes and deserved this end, it still made him feel very uncomfortable.

After acquiring the ‘source’, Ye Fan did not immediately cultivate. He knew that the ‘source’ contained a vast amount of qi essence of life and after breaking it, there were would be waves of source energy and if he was not careful it would be noticed by others. Under the current circumstances, it was better to be more prudent.

In the next two days, the town of Qing Feng was extremely peaceful, it was only when the two other cultivators from the Li family rushed back from the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary that an uproar was caused, affecting the entire small town.

“The seventh young master of the Li family has gone missing.”

“How could a person who cultivates just suddenly go missing like that?”

“This is the retribution of the Li family!”

“What retribution, it must have been done by the people of the Wang family. Besides that rival family, who else would dare to do this? Who else would have the strength to do so?”

“That’s right, I heard the servants of the Li family saying that it’s likely a disaster that was brought about by that ‘source’.”

……

Even the normal people of the town of Qing Feng were discussing this, it could be seen how big a commotion this had caused. The entirety of the Li family was in an uproar but at the same time they felt fear.

Initially, Ye Fan did not mind because the two cultivators of the Li family had not reached the Spring of Life stage and could not ride on mystical rainbows to travel, thus he was not really afraid of them. However, after a few days, things manifested past his expectations and the waves seemed to have gotten much larger.

The people of Yan Xia immortal sanctuary actually came and a few cultivators at the Spring of Life stage actually personally arrived, allowing the people of the Li family to lead the way as they went to the ancient cave where the ‘source’ was discovered. Thereafter, the cultivator of the Wang family also invited the people from his sect and entered the deep mountains to look for that ancient cave, the two groups had almost engaged in a vicious conflict.

“Could it be that this area has a ‘source’ vein?” On this day, over ten people on mounts arrived at the town of Qing Feng, all riding on mystical beasts that were covered in scales, seemingly very grand.

The mount right in the centre was the most exceptional, its entire body was covered in golden scales, a lustrous divine splendour swirled around it like a golden fire that was blazing. Its four hooves did not touch the ground and actually hovered three inches above the ground, it traversed by stepping on the air and it could be imagined how strong and fearsome this beast was.

Sitting on the ‘golden deity’ was a young man who looked to be twenty four to twenty five years of age. He wore white clothing and seemed very cultured, a gentle smile on his face, extremely handsome, a faint glow could be seen around him, his countenance really could make one lose themselves.

By his sides were two other mounts that moved in tandem. The left one was a green beast, its form was that of a liger, its green fur was very long and pristine, like jade as it sparkled, a pure glow circulated, dazzling and bright. Its head had a jade horn that was actually releasing a five coloured divine glow. This five coloured beast was also traversing on air without touching the ground, an exceptional mount. On it was a sixteen to seventeen year old male youth, wearing green clothing, a heroic aura emanated from him but hints of arrogance could be felt, as though this small town was nothing in his eyes.

On the other side, a beast flashed with a silver glow, its form was

like a divine deer, its body covered in silver scales. On its forehead was a vertical eye and its body was covered in a pure and holy glow that flashed. It also traversed through the air, not contaminated by any dirt. Atop it was a sixteen to seventeen year old female youth, her skin seemed to be covered in rouge, eyes misty like limpid autumn waters, bright red lips, extremely beautiful but gave one a feeling of being too high to reach, filled with a kind of arrogance.

The ten odd beasts behind these three were also exceptional and each were very rare breeds. Either covered in scales or their body like jade, each flashed with a glow and the ages of the people atop them varied from within the range of twenty to forty. Both males and females carried an austere air and the area around them seemed to be filled with a strong desire for battle.

In the distance, Ye Fan took this all in as he breathed in a gasp of cold air, what was the background of these people? They were definitely not ordinary people!

Not mentioning the three people in the lead, just the ten over riders behind them were not any inferior to the people from the Sacred Grounds or ancient aristocratic families previously at the demon emperor's burial mound. A strong fighting intent and killing pressure pressed down.

"Are there any families within this town with the surname Jiang?" At this moment, a rider received orders and asked the people of the town.

Ye Fan's heart was racing, why were they searching for people who were surnamed Jiang?

# Chapter 82: Ancient Aristocratic Jiang Family

"Why would such a group of experts come to this small town to look for those surnamed Jiang?" Ye Fan found it hard to calm his emotions as he hurriedly made his way over to old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting.

Never had the town of Qing Feng seen so many unique beasts before, over ten mounts with flashing scales, divine splendour swirling around them causing the people by the street to be astonished as they swiftly hid.

A middle-aged horseman of about thirty years of age sat on a beast that was covered in jade scales as he tried to show an amiable expression on his face: "All of you don't have to be afraid, we don't come with any ill intentions. We only want to find out if there are any with the surname Jiang within this town."

Although he tried his best to maintain a gentle expression, these horsemen were clearly men who had seen over a hundred battles and toughened through fighting and bloodshed, they naturally emitted an oppressive aura that made the normal people feel trepidation.

An old peasant pointed towards the west street and said stutteringly with his lips trembling: "That..... That street..... The biggest house..... That's it."

"Many thanks." These people rode their ferocious beasts as they

slowly headed towards the west street of the small town.

Not far away, Ye Fan's heart relaxed. This town actually had other families whose surname was Jiang, he ran swiftly to the east street and rushed into the small store.

"Old uncle Jiang……"

"Child, what's the matter?" The old man came walking out of the kitchen.

Ting Ting had just finished washing a bright red wild fruit and was obediently carrying it over, her bright wide eyes were blinking and flashed with a curiosity as she asked: "Big brother, what's the matter?"

"It's like this……"

Ye Fan told old uncle Jiang about all he had heard and seen before asking: "Old uncle, have you ever interacted with these people before?"

Old uncle Jiang shook his head: "I've already lived for over seventy years but almost never left this small town. It's impossible for me to know these people."

"Are there really so many unique beasts? I want to see what they look like……" Ting Ting's watery eyes seemed to flash with many little stars as she ran to the street by the small store to look into the

distance.

Ye Fan noticed that Ting Ting had ran out and softly said: “Would it have anything to do with Ting Ting’s parents?”

“It shouldn’t be the case.” Grief could be seen in the old man’s eyes as he continued: “They’ve always been cultivating within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary and have never travelled far before, all their friends are people from the same sect.”

“So many unique beasts, they actually don’t need to walk on land.....” Ting Ting stood by the door of the small store, her rosy face had astonishment and elation on it as she shouted: “Grandpa come see! They’re coming towards us.”

Ye Fan and the old man rushed over and saw the over ten mounts galloping speedily over without causing any dirt to fly, all the beasts traversed three inches above the ground.

“They’re so fierce.” Ting Ting was a little frightened because all the horsemen besides the three in the centre seemed to be releasing a strong killing intent, filled with an inherent thirst for battle.

Ye Fan hurriedly held onto Ting Ting’s hand as he supported old uncle Jiang, normal people would find it hard to bear such pressure and if they faced it for too long they would be scared witless.

Over ten beasts stopped before the small store, shaking their heads and swaying their tails, their scales flashing and releasing different glows, extremely magnificent. However, the divine glow was insufficient to cover up their bloodthirsty aura, it was clear that each had been through many bloody battles and were not domestic animals that were kept at home.

“Is this the Jiang family?” From the centre of the group, the young man who seemed cultured and handsome asked. He wore white clothing, eyes like water, occasionally releasing divine glow as he rode atop a golden deity* which had an otherworldly aura, totally different from the horsemen who were filled with a killing intent.

[T/N* This is the name of his mount]

Old uncle Jiang whose face was covered in wrinkles had an expression of befuddlement as he asked: “That’s right, is there something we can help you with?”

The old man was already in his seventies and the wear of the years could be seen on his face, creases could be seen etched all over his face and his old eyes were beginning to dull.

Looking at his aged visage which showed the wear of years, the sixteen to seventeen year old youth that sat on the five coloured beast frowned as he said: “This is only a normal village elder who’s at the end of his life, he can’t be the one that we’re looking for.”

The young man atop the golden deity swept his gaze at him and

the youth on the five coloured beast seemed to be apprehensive as he cut off the rest of his words, no longer speaking.

"Old uncle, have you always been living within the town of Qing Feng?"

"That's right, I've almost never travelled far before." The old man stated plainly.

"Did your ancestors originally live here or did they move to this town?" The young man atop the golden deity continued to ask.

"We moved here during my father's time and I was actually born here. You people..... what exactly are you here for?" Old uncle Jiang had a puzzled expression on his face.

Hearing these words, the young man atop the 'golden deity immediately jumped down as his white clothing fluttered, even his boots were untainted by a single speck of dust. He seemed exceptionally handsome and could be considered a pretty man, describing him as being able to make people lose themselves really was no exaggeration.

"Old uncle, I'd like to seek your guidance regarding some questions, I hope you can answer them."

"You flatter me, if I know the answer I'll definitely answer." Old uncle Jiang was an ordinary old man and faced with these horsemen with unique beasts, his heart was filled with reverence.

Ting Ting was very nervous as she held tightly onto Ye Fan's hand, hiding between him and the old man, as she observed the beasts and horsemen with fear and curiosity in her eyes.

"I offer my apologies in advance, I'd like to ask if your parents are still on this earth?" The white clothed young man asked with nervousness.

Old uncle Jiang was puzzled as he answered: "They have already passed away some fifty over years ago."

"What……." The white clothed young man seemed stunned as an expression of alarm appeared on his jade like face before he sighed.

"I said so earlier, this is only an ordinary old man in dregs……" The youth atop the five coloured beast had an expression of impatience as though he really wanted to leave this place as soon as possible.

"Shut your mouth!" The white clothed young man glared at him before turning back and continued his questioning: "Old man, I apologise for his behaviour, is your father called Jiang Zhe?"

"You….. how did you know?" Old uncle Jiang had an expression of shock on his face.

The female sitting atop the divine deer that was releasing a silver glow had an astonished expression as she said: "It seems that we've

really found them.” Her figure was slender and her skin was snow white like jade, her complexion was good and extremely beautiful, there seemed to be a sliver of arrogance on her face that made one feel that she was too high to reach.

The youth atop the five coloured beast frowned as he said: “Such an ordinary village elder, how could he have the blood of our Jiang family. If they are really the descendants of grandfather Jiang Zhe, how could they not know how to cultivate, I think it’s just a case of similar name and surnames……”

“Old man can you tell it all to me in detail?” The white clothed young man’s attitude was still gentle and went forward to support old uncle Jiang as he said: “Can we go in for a comprehensive discussion?”

The horsemen all guarded the outer area as the white clothed young man supported old uncle Jiang into the small store. The arrogant youth and the very beautiful girl also followed along.

Ye Fan noticed that the other party did not have any ill intentions and wordlessly pulled Ting Ting to sit by the side.

“Was there a red birthmark on grandfather Jiang Zhe’s left arm?”

“There were five of them, how did you even know this?” Old uncle Jiang had an expression of astonishment on his face.

“Grandfather Jiang Zhe really hid in the Yan state, who knew that he would have passed away fifty over years ago.....” The white clothed young man sighed gently before continuing: “Old man, maybe I should call you great uncle.”

“I wouldn’t dare, wouldn’t dare!” Old uncle Jiang noticed that the other party wanted to bow to him as he hurriedly pulled him up.

“The two of you! Why aren’t you coming over to pay your respects!” The white clothed young man shouted at the two people behind him.

“Greetings great uncle.” The beautiful girl did a full bow as she glanced over at Ye Fan and Ting Ting.

The youth seemed reluctant as he murmured: “Greetings great uncle.” before doing a quick perfunctory bow.

“This is.....” Old uncle Jiang had a befuddled expression, he did not understand why they were doing this.

“Big brother, big sister, do you recognise my grandpa?” Ting Ting had a puzzled expression as her long lashes constantly blinked, her clever large eyes were filled with questions.

Seeing her innocent and cute countenance, the white clothed young man dotingly patted her head and said: “We come from the same family.”

“What family?” Ting Ting’s eyes widened in curiosity.

“An ancient aristocratic family that has been around since ancient times, the Jiang family. In the future you will slowly understand how exceptional our family is within the eastern badlands.”

Ye Fan’s heart trembled, an ancient aristocratic family was an existence that could match that of a Sacred Ground, their place within the eastern badlands could not be looked down upon.

Based on what Ye Fan knew, the Jiang and Ji surnames could be traced back to ancient China. Recorded in history books, those surnamed Jiang were the descendants of the Yan emperor and gained their surname because of where the Yan emperor was born, ‘Divine Farmer born by Jiang River, so his descendents are named as such.”*

[T/N* First of legendary Flame emperors in history and creator of agriculture]

Ye Fan was shocked, he did not expect that on the other side of the stars, the Jiang surname would also be so exceptional, exceeding his expectations.

“Grandfather Jiang Zhe was an exceptional talent back in the day, before coming of age his name had already resounded across the heavens. Thereafter his might had astounded the eastern badlands, with each stomp of his foot, the clouds in all directions

would move, shaking the entire world. Who would have guessed..... “ The white clothed young man seemed to sigh with regret, he could see that the old man had not lived a very good life and could not imagine how the descendents of a peerless expert could fall into such such a plight.

The girl by the side was also puzzled as she asked: “Back then didn’t grandfather Jiang Zhe teach you cultivation techniques?”

“What cultivation.....” Old uncle Jiang was thoroughly confused as he muttered: “I don’t know what you guys are talking about.”

“That year, many things happened and it’s difficult to explain everything at one go. Old man, are you willing to go with us?” The white clothed young man spoke to the old man before looking over at Ye Fan and Ting Ting.

“My surname isn’t Jiang, Ting Ting is the only granddaughter of old uncle Jiang.” Ye Fan hurriedly explained.

“The descendents of the master of our family owe grandfather Jiang Zhe too much, the truth of the past that is covered in dust will eventually come to light, I wish to bring you and Ting Ting back to the Jiang Family.”

The old man was in a stupor and although he had not totally understood, he had a rough understanding and this was difficult for him to accept.

The girl by the side saw that Ting Ting was very cute and smiled at her: “Ting Ting, what desires do you have? Sister will help you to make them a reality.”

“I don’t have any special desires, I only want to be together with grandpa and big brother and I’ll be happy.”

“Do you have any other desires?”

”

Ting Ting tilted her head as she earnestly thought before replying in a young and tender voice: “Able to eat a full meal each day without anyone bullying me or grandpa.”

Hearing these words, the girl was dazed.

A slight change in the expression of the white clothed young man could be seen as he said in a heavy voice: “Have you been bullied on a normal basis?”

“That’s right, before big brother came there were bad people who bullied us everyday.” Ting Ting’s innocent words made the faces of everyone change.

“Old man, I’ve forgotten to ask, where are Ting Ting’s parents?”

Old uncle Jiang had a hurtful expression as he said: “I gained a son in my later years but still ended up sending him off before I passed.”

“How could it be like this?!” The girl’s eyes widened.

“Even I don’t know if they were killed by people or merely died unfortunate deaths……”

By the side, Ting Ting heard these words and her eyes began to redden.

“Tell me everything in detail!” The white clothed young man seemed to have light shining forth from his eyes.

The old man explained everything simply and the white clothed young man stood up as he said: “Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, I have never heard of it before. Later we’ll go there for a visit, if anyone dares to block our way I won’t mind exterminating their entire sect!”

The beautiful girl by the side also had a cold smile as she said: “They even dare to bully people from our Jiang Family, let’s go to the Li family first before going to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary!”

The horseman outside heard these words and immediately exploded with a frightening killing intent and battle hunger, at this moment the entire town of Qing Feng was shrouded in this frightening atmosphere.

# Chapter 83: Who Could Possibly Block?

The white clothed young man came from an ancient aristocratic family, the Jiang Family. His name was Jiang Yi Fei, like his name, he seemed otherworldly and transcendent.

He did not speak much about the past of grandfather Jiang Zhe, however, much information could be gleaned from what he had said. Old uncle Jiang's father Jiang Zhe had left the Jiang Family in the past and never returned, there was a past that no one knew of and it certainly had connections with the descendents of the family head.

"Grandfather Jiang Zhe had such wondrous accomplishments in his cultivation, how could he have passed away fifty years ago?" This was what Jiang Yi Fei was confused about.

"When he passed away, he actually coughed out large amounts of blood." Old uncle Jiang recounted the past but was not overly sentimental, some things would slowly become dull with the passing of time.

"So that's what happened." Jiang Yi Fei did not say much and merely nodded as though he understood the secrets within.

The beautiful girl who stood by the side was called Jiang Cai Xuan, her figure was slender, neck long and graceful, complexion clear and attractive. As a female from the Jiang Family, she exuded an aura that made one feel as though she was eminent and unapproachable.

However, she really liked Ting Ting and did not put on any airs as she held onto Ting Ting's hand and constantly chatted in a very gentle tone.

The extremely arrogant youth was called Jiang Yi Zhen, although he learned of old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting's identity, he was not warm and actually maintained a cool disposition.

Jiang Cai Xuan's voice was clear and moving as she said: "Old man, why don't you head back with us to the Jiang Family. My grandpa has said that the Jiang Family has let down your family line and no matter what we have to find you and bring you back."

"It's okay, what you just said is something that I simply cannot comprehend. Your lives are far too distant from mine, we are just two people of the world. I'm already used to everything in this place……" Old uncle Jiang was an ordinary old man and having lived to such an old age, he had experienced many things and he felt that they would be unable to integrate into such a Family as he tactfully declined.

"If you don't think for yourself, you also have to spare a thought for Ting Ting, she is a little princess above the clouds and should not be bullied by anyone, what she needs is a different kind of life." Jiang Cai Xuan brought up the future of Ting Ting and persuaded the old man: "Follow us back, the elders of our Family really wish for the descendants of grandfather Jiang Zhe to return back to the Jiang Family."

“You people can bring Ting Ting along, I’m already used to the life here and don’t wish to move to other places……”

“Ting Ting immediately held onto the old man’s arm as she said: “I’ll be together with grandpa, where grandpa stays Ting Ting will also be there.”

At this moment, a gentle smile floated onto Jiang Yi Fei’s face, he seemed to really dote Ting Ting as he rubbed her head and said: “The sky here is too small……”

Jiang Yi Fei was a smart person and understood that simply talking and trying to persuade old uncle Jiang was a futile endeavour, only by showcasing the greatness of the Jiang Family would there be a chance for the old man to change his mind. He stood up and continued: “Let’s head over to the Li Family first.” His tone was calm but seemed to contain a certain fascinating charm, the beasts outside all began to roar as a bloodthirsty aura surged out, all the horsemen exploded with a strong battle hunger.

Jiang Yi Fei’s expression was calm and composed as the golden deity followed closely behind him. He slowly his footsteps to walk together with old uncle Jiang, the others noticed this and followed behind.

No one rode on their mounts but rather walked towards the Li Family, Ting Ting nervously held onto the old man and Ye Fan’s hand, protected in this manner like the stars surrounding the moon made her feel slightly uncomfortable. At this moment, Jiang Yi Fei and Jiang Cai Xuan were walking together with them but did not stand in the centre and actually stood by the left and right of

them.

The people on the big street were shocked, they noticed that old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting were actually protected in such a fashion and had expressions of incredulity. Many people trembled with fear as they saw the ferocious beasts and retreated to the two sides of the street.

“What’s going on? Does old Jiang know these people?”

“Look at those unique beasts that traverse without touching the ground, they may even be able to fly to the heavens, what relationship does old Jiang have with these people?”

“The bitter life of old Jiang has finally taken a turn for the better, good people will have good karma.”

“The Li Family is in big trouble, they seem to be headed in that direction.”

“That’s great, we’ve been pining for this for untold years, finally someone is going to teach the Li Family a lesson.”

……

By the sides of the street, more and more people gathered. Although they were all filled with fear and did not dare to get close, they had expressions of excitement and elation as they followed from afar in the direction of the Li Family.

When old uncle Jiang came before the big door of the Li Family, he seemed hesitant. Jiang Yi Fei noticed this and supported him up the stairs as he said: “Don’t mention this little Li Family, even if it were the imperial palace of the eastern badland’s most powerful nation, no one would dare to block us.”

“Bang!”

Up ahead, the large cinnabar red doors were suddenly sent flying off their hinges, as though a ten thousand catty sledgehammer had smashed onto it.

There was confusion and disarray within as several curses could be heard from within the gatehouse.

“Who did it?”

“Actually daring to behave atrociously before the Li Family, looking for death!”

……

In no time, over ten people had rushed out, each person vicious looking but when they saw the ten odd beasts, they were immediately stunned as the person who cursed swallowed his words and stared agape and became tongue tied, all the fierceness on his face receded and became panicked as he swiftly ran backwards.

“Look at your pathetic appearances, what’s there to be afraid of, our Li Family also has cultivators.” A supervisor received the information and scolded as he walked: “F***, who has the balls to actually dare to come to the Li Family and make a ruckus, don’t they know that we have several immortal masters temporarily living here.”

“Bad people!” That supervisor had just walked out when Ting Ting suddenly retreated a few steps as though she were extremely afraid of this person.

“You people…….” The supervisor who walked out also seemed afraid, golden deity, five coloured beast, divine deer with a vertical eye, he had never heard or seen of such terrifying beasts before and was completely subdued.

“This is a bad person?”

“That’s right, he took people to snatch our restaurant and beat grandpa till he spit blood.” When Ting Ting said these words with her young and tender voice, it actually multiplied the anger they felt.

Jiang Yi Fei waved his hand and a horseman immediately went forward, pressing towards that supervisor.

“You…… what are you doing, this is the Li Family. We have several immortal masters within and will not stand for you acting so arrogant!” He seemed tough on the outside but was shaking

inside as he loudly shouted while continuing to back away.

“Don’t act here in case you scare the child.” Jiang Yi Fei was meticulous in his thinking and was afraid that the bloody scene would frighten Ting Ting.

“Yes!”

The horseman whose body was covered in armour grabbed the collar of the supervisor and tossed him out, a jade light flashed as another horseman rode a beast through the air and brought the supervisor out of the small town in an instant.

“Heavens, It can fly!”

“It really can fly!”

“That ferocious beast can actually run in the sky, it’s simply inconceivable.”

All around, the commoners who were spectating had expressions of shock as their mouths hung open, their hearts filled with astonishment.

Ting Ting’s mouth was formed in the shape of an ‘O’ as she gazed at the sky.

Jiang Cai Xuan smiled as she crouched down and said: “Do you

want to have a precious beast and fly through the skies with it?”

Ting Ting almost wanted to nod her head but seemed to think of something as she held on tightly to the old man’s arm as she shook her head: “I only want to be together with grandpa.”

Jiang Cai Xuan never expected that Ting Ting would actually understand her intentions and did not continue to tempt or persuade her.

Not long after, a green figure appeared in the sky and the horseman which had flown away returned, his hand held a tuft of hair with some traces of blood on it.

By the side, Ye Fan was extremely shocked. The horsemen of the Jiang Family all seemed frighteningly strong and their strengths were difficult to measure, he could feel them surging with a military might.

The group continued inwards and the surrounding commoners also followed behind, wanting to see the evil people of the Li Family taught a lesson.

“Who dares barge into my Li Family to cause a ruckus?” At this moment, a few middle aged man wearing silk garments as well as several elders came out, their faces filled with anger.

“Old Jiang, it’s you?!” It was clear that they had not understood the situation and when they saw old uncle Jiang within the

courtyard, they immediately berated: “Who allowed you to come in, scram!”

“Second master you shouldn’t talk so loudly, look what’s behind him.” A servant softly advised.

The person then noticed several unique beasts by the large door outside and his face became panicked as he retreated and said: “Quickly, invite those immortal masters here.”

Jiang Cai Xuan’s expression was cold as she said: “Such a small Family that only has a few cultivators actually dares to repress the weak, treating them like fish or livestock to be slaughtered, really don’t know what’s good for you.”

She waved her hand and all the people seemed like fallen leaves as they flew away and slammed into the wall before falling to the ground, unable to stand back up. These were all important people of the Li Family and they were currently crying miserably.

A light flashed as two figures suddenly rushed out into the courtyard. These were precisely the two cultivators of the Li Family and looking at the situation before them, their expressions changed.

“Friends, who are you people? Have we offended you in any way? Why did u barge into my Li Family, hurting people?” The two people were around twenty seven years of age and felt shocked and angry but did not dare to act out.

“Just you? You don’t have the right to know.” Jiang Cai Xuan laughed coldly.

Jiang Yi Fei had a calm expression as he asked: “Were the deaths of Ting Ting’s parents caused by you people?”

“You…… what are you talking about? Don’t slander others!” The faces of the two people changed and looking at old uncle Jiang who was surrounded in the centre, they felt shocks in their hearts.

“Who are you accusing of slandering others?” A horseman walked forward, his gaze like a sharp knife as he flashed before them and with two crisp sounds, “Pa! Pa!” sent the two people flying backwards. The faces of the two people of the Li Family suddenly had two blood red palm prints on them which immediately swelled up.

They immediately felt fright and anger as they held their faces and retreated: “Friend, don’t be too overbearing. We are disciples of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary and a few of our masters are currently here within our residence!”

“Masters? Such a grand manner of speaking! We were just planning to head over to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, I think we’ll allow these masters of yours to lead the way.”

# Chapter 84: Strength

“Such arrogance!” The two cultivators from the Li Family had ugly expressions as they said: “You..... Are you planning to have a big battle between sects?”

“A big battle between sects? Do you have the qualifications to do so? I’m afraid you aren’t worthy of that.” The horseman whose entire body was covered in armor said in a cold voice.

“Good!, Good!, Good! You people are bold but I’m not sure if you’ll be able to walk out of Yan State!” The expressions of both the Li Family cultivators were gloomy and a cold light flashed through their eyes, they were thinking rapidly and were prepared to incite the anger of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary elders.

“Could it be that you’re actually planning to make us stay within the Yan State with just your bunch?” The horseman had a cold smile as he said: “Just based on you bunch of random fishes, even tens of thousands of you would not be enough.”

“You.....” The Li family cultivators felt humiliated and shocked at the same time, it seemed that the background of the other party was very big otherwise they would not simply mouth off like that. They had no way back and needed to tie themselves to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary. Only in this way was there a possibility of the other party being exterminated and he grit his teeth: “Since you people don’t place Yan Xia immortal sanctuary within your eyes, I will report it as such and the sect elders will let you know how high the heavens are and how deep the earth is!”

“You aren’t worthy!” The horseman strode forward fiercely and did not use any real strength but already sent the two people of the Li family flying like strawman and heavily knocking into the wall, their bones in their bodies made crunching noises as blood flowed from their mouth, nose and ears.

“You!” Half the bones in their bodies had been broken and they laid against the wall like mud, their eyes filled with fear.

As per Jiang Yi Fei’s earlier instructions, this horseman did not kill and they were kept alive for questioning.

“Were the deaths of Ting Ting’s parents caused by you?” Jiang Yi Fei’s tone was still dull but in the ears of the two people from the Li family, it was like frightening thunder and the calm looking young man dressed in white gave them a feeling of being the peak of a mountain which they needed to look up to.

“We will talk…….”

“Who dares to act so arrogantly, not putting our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary in their eyes?” At this moment, a middle aged man strode out into the courtyard and when he saw the ten odd unique beasts, the colour on his face changed as he said: “What matters do the few esteemed ladies and gentlemen have here? Why would you ruin a disciple of our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary?”

“We’re only here to vanquish evil.” A horseman strode forward and blocked his path.

“What do you mean? Could it be that our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary is this ‘evil’ you speak of?” The middle aged man shouted.

The horseman coldly replied: “Whether the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary is evil or not I wouldn’t know, I only know that these two people have harmed the lives of other people and are definitely hoodlums.”

“This is only the perspective of the few of you, before the matter has been thoroughly investigated how could you act in such a vicious manner. Furthermore, these are disciples of our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, even if they have erred, we should be the ones to deal with them and not you outsiders.”

Jiang Yi Fei’s expression was dull but his words were cold as he said: “They have been committing atrocities for years but I have not seen the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary taking any action. Till now you still wish to exonerate them, finding means and ways to shelter them. It seems that we really have to go to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary to seek justice.”

“Such arrogance, what do you treat our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary as, aren’t you afraid that you won’t be able to walk out of Yan State?” The middle aged man glared coldly at the people before him.

Jiang Yi Fei had a faint cold smile as he said: “Is the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary very strong? It’s a pity I’ve never heard of it before, in a moment we’ll head there to receive their instruction.”

“You actually dare to consider everyone beneath you.” The middle aged man said in a cold voice: “The Yan Xia immortal sanctuary is one of the six sects within the Yan State, if you people still want to cause trouble, there will be an unavoidable big battle between the sects!”

Jiang Yi Fei shook his head and replied: “The eastern badlands is vast without limit, there are an innumerable amount of countries within and a mere Yan State is but the size of a pellet in comparison. The sects that reside here are ones that I certainly have never heard of.”

“Such arrogance, I’d like to experience exactly how powerful you are.”

The middle aged man rode on a mystical rainbow as he rushed into the air, spitting out an amethyst gold shield as well a blood coloured lance.

The roar from a ferocious beast could be heard as a horseman rode a unique beast into the sky and seemed like a green flash as it rushed over.

“Aaahhh!”

The middle aged cultivator from the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary immediately let out a miserable cry as the amethyst gold shield was instantly sliced apart, the blood coloured lance was also broken in two and his chest was cleanly cut, immediately falling to the

ground as fresh blood gurgled forth.

If it were a normal person, the person would have already died but the cultivators body was exceptional strong and he quickly halted the bleeding and stabilized his injury. His face was pasty white as he retreated to the side.

Ye Fan felt deeply impacted by this, he could sense that the ten odd horseman were really exceptional and far superior to the people of the Ji Family and Alkaid Sacred Ground which he had seen at the Demon Emperor's burial mound.

At this moment, the few immortal masters who were at the rear garden could not bear with all the commotion and had walked out.

"Who are you people?" One of the elders frowned, he had heard the words of the people within the courtyard and these people clearly did not put the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary within their eyes, making him feel annoyed and uncomfortable.

"I'll have to trouble the few of you to lead the way and bring us to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary." Jiang Cai Xuan had a cold smile on her beautiful face as she said: "Please lead the way."

The expressions of the people from Yan Xia immortal sanctuary changed and one of them spoke up: "So young yet so arrogant, didn't the elders in your family teach you how to be respectful to your elders?"

Jiang Cai Xuan's voice was cold as she retorted: "The disciple you have instructed has victimized lives, bullying orphans, forcing an old man in his seventies to have no other path. What right do you have to be lecturing us about respect for elders? You don't have the qualifications!"

"What proof do you have?"

"They've already admitted it themselves."

That elder who had been speaking frowned and replied: "Let's not talk about you people forcing confessions through torture, even if they really did evil acts, it isn't the business of you people to handle. Our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary will deal with them via our sect rules."

"Such a wonderful 'deal with them on your own'. It has already been two years, the dead are aggrieved and the culprits are still free, continuing to oppress the young and old, are these the rules of your sect?" Jiang Cai Xuan sympathised with Ting Ting, having said this her face seemed to grow even colder: "Even now, you still wish to exonerate them and shelter them, it's no wonder you are their teachers, really made from the same mould."

"You!" The elder who was in front immediately tensed up but he did not dare to act out, the might of the other party was evident and merely the golden deity made him feel trepidation.

At this moment, Jiang Yi Fei commanded: "Take them all down!" The few horsemen immediately acknowledged and moved

forward.

The elder immediately shouted: “Let’s go!” as he rushed to the sky while riding on a mystical rainbow. He could see that the background of these people were not simple and not something they could deal with. The other people all rushed in different directions as they rode on mystical rainbows and shot towards the horizon.

Roars of ferocious beasts could be heard as the sky seemed to tremble, several unique beasts with their riders each flew in a different direction as they chased.

“Aaaahhh!”

Miserable cries continued to sound out and several horseman quickly returned as they caught people and dragged them like dogs. Inclusive of the elder who had spoken previously, all the people had frightening injuries on their bodies.

By the side, Ye Fan was extremely shocked, an ancient aristocratic family was really a colossal figure, these horsemen were simply terrifying.

Jiang Yi Fei pointed to two horsemen and commanded them to stay behind to take care of the people from the Li family. At the same time, he instructed them not to kill the innocent and only kill those who had committed atrocities.

“Let’s go to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary!”

Jiang Yi Fei personally helped old uncle Jiang onto the golden deity as he mounted it together with him. Jiang Cai Xuan hugged Ting Ting onto the divine deer and sat her in front of her. As for Ye Fan, he sat on one of the unique beasts with a rider as they all flew to the sky.

“We don’t have to go to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary anymore. Those two bastards have already died and the grievance has been settled……” Old uncle Jiang found out that his son had been killed by the plans of others and his old eyes were misty as tears streamed down.

By the side, Ting Ting also began to cry.

“Go, we must go! The people of our Jiang Family aren’t people who can be killed just because someone wants to!”

Ye Fan lamented, the road he had to walk was long and in comparison to the colossal figure of an ancient aristocratic family, he was simply too insignificant.

The people of the small town were all wide eyed and speechless before bursting into cheers, the poison within the town had finally been removed by somebody.

Faced with life and death, the few captives from the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary had no choice but to lead the way.

Over ten unique beasts were soaring on clouds and riding on mists as they flew in the air, rumbling sounds could be heard like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses or a tsunami that was surging to the skies.

At this moment, Ye Fan felt as though someone was inspecting him and looked back to notice that it was actually the arrogant youth Jiang Yi Chen.

Noticing him looking back, Jiang Yi Chen shifted his gaze as a cold smile floated onto his face.

Ye Fan felt a lurch in his heart, why would the other party act like this, could it be that he discovered something?

In no time at all, the group had arrived at the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary. Ahead of them were tall mountains and lush greenery, faint mist could be seen in the air as a multicoloured sunlight seemed to shine down, it really was a place befitting of the its name.

“Who dares barge into the sacred grounds of my sect?” A loud voice could be heard from up ahead.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

The captives were all flung to the ground and sounds of astonishment could be heard from up ahead.

“The enemy is here!” There was immediately a huge commotion within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary.

In an instant, haze filled the sky as the Dao Inscriptions that were laid down immediately activated, releasing streaks of blazing divine splendour which blocked the path of all the people.

“This isn’t much, let me break it.” At this moment, the youth with the arrogant disposition Jiang Yi Chen suddenly acted, an amethyst gold gourd flew out from within his body and a dazzling purple light could be seen as it swiftly grew larger in the sky, like a whale which was taking a big gulp, all the haze was sucked into it. In the blink of an eye, the might of the Dao Inscriptions was suppressed.

Thereafter, the amethyst gold gourd was like a small mountain as it pressed downwards, spewing forth thick purple mist and cries of alarm could be heard as many figures were sucked into the amethyst gold gourd.

Ye Fan was shocked, he did not expect this ancient amethyst gold gourd to be so powerful, easily breaking the Dao Inscriptions which were protecting the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary and also sucking several cultivators into it. It was certainly fearsome.

“The background of an ancient aristocratic family is simply too terrifying, a sixteen to seventeen year old youth was actually bestowed such a terrifying precious treasure.....” Ye Fan continued to lament in his heart.

“There’s no need to do this……” Old uncle Jiang was by the side as he tried to persuade them to stop.

Jiang Yi Fei shook his head and responded: “Ting Ting’s parents committed no atrocities but were killed by others. We are going to seek justice, our Jiang Family has never been afraid of finding trouble!”

“Bang!”

At this instant, a strong fluctuation shot out in all directions from within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, knocking away the amethyst gold gourd as an ancient voice spoke up:” So it’s the people from an ancient aristocratic family, I wonder how has our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary offended you?”

# Chapter 85: Danger Approaches

Within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, a grey mist expanded outwards, knocking away the amethyst gold gourd and confining it there, preventing it from continuing to suck up cultivators.

A grey figure swiftly flew out, this was an old man who seemed difficult to see through, his hair was white but his face was extremely rosy, the head of an old man but the countenance of a child, he brought the amethyst gold gourd over and said: “Esteemed guests, please don’t be angry.” as he handed the amethyst gold gourd over. Jiang Yi Chen coldly harrumphed before keeping his treasure.

“Who are you?” Jiang Yi Fei asked.

“This useless old man is the sect leader of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary.”

“No wonder you have such strength, able to suppress the amethyst gold gourd.” Jiang Yi Fei nodded before continuing: “However it seems like it will be difficult for you to stop us.”

“That’s correct, this useless old man understands.” The sect leader of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary calmly admitted before continuing: “I wonder how our Yan Xia immortal sanctuary has offended you, causing esteemed guests to bring such a large party here. If we have really offended you, I’m willing to disband the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary and obey whatever punishment you mete out.”

This old man in grey was very frank, he was currently really pressured and helpless. If they really fought with an ancient aristocratic family, the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary would surely be exterminated, the two were not on the same level and if they faced them as enemies, there would be absolutely no suspense.

“Seeing how forthright you are, I won’t cause too big of a commotion.”

Jiang Yi Fei looked to be about twenty four to twenty five years of age but actually spoke like this to the Yan Xia sect leader. The old man did not find it disrespectful but rather accepted it as a difference in their strengths.

“Young master is wise, please enlighten me, why were so many troops mobilized to come seek justice?”

“Two years ago, did a disciple with the surname Jiang of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary die?”

The sect leader of Yan Xia immortal sanctuary heard this and replied: “If it were other people, I may have forgotten but that young man with exceptional aptitude left a deep impression in me.”

“That was a child of our Jiang Family, his death was caused by some people within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary.” Jiang Yi Fei calmly stated.

“What! His death was caused by someone?” The sect leader of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary was shocked as he said: “Who would have the gall to do so!”

“Now you should understand why I have come.”

The sect leader of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary immediately felt a headache, why would a child of the Jiang Family enter the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary, his death was even caused by someone within the sect. This was certainly a thorny problem.

“You need not be overly worried, I haven’t come here to make trouble without reason.”

“Young master Jiang, rest assured, I will definitely severely apprehend the culprits, there will be no leeway!”

“The main culprits have already been executed, however, I have suspicions that their teachers may be involved and even the person who provided them with the medicine also needs to be seized……”

“Young master Jiang, please follow me into the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary. This useless old man will give you a satisfactory accounting, exterminating any who took part in this travesty.”

Jiang Yi Fei nodded: “The most important thing is to allow this old man and child to be satisfied.”

At this moment, old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting had tears misting their eyes.

“I understand……”

Jiang Yi Fei commanded Jiang Yi Chen to retrieve his amethyst gold gourd and remove the people within. Thereafter, he went with old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting together with the sect leader to enter Yan Xia immortal sanctuary. The others did not follow and descended to the ground as they waited outside.

At this moment, Ye Fan once again had a feeling that he was being spied on and found that it was that arrogant youth Jiang Yi Chen. What was going on? He felt that he did not offend this child of the ancient aristocratic Jiang Family and did not know why the other party constantly stared at him.

Jiang Cai Xuan walked over, each step was graceful and leisurely taken, talking with a shallow smile as she said: “Little brother Ye, after this matter is concluded, Ting Ting will be returning with us to the Jiang Family. If you wish to you may also come along.”

“This……” Initially, Ye Fan had indeed thought about this. The Jiang Family was exceptional and was an old sect that had been around since ancient times. They would possibly have some information regarding the secrets concerning the divine body. However, after careful consideration, he felt hesitant. What if someone found out about his secrets? He had the mysterious aurichalcite which made the entire eastern badlands go into an uproar. If the peerless experts within the Jiang Family noticed, the outcome would be unthinkable. Also, the volume of Dao Scripture

within him would also bring calamity and if it was discovered, his situation would be bleak.

"What's wrong? Aren't you willing?" Jiang Cai Xuan felt surprised, many cultivators tried all means and ways but failed to enter the Jiang Family, she had invited this youth but he was actually hesitant and constantly muttering to himself.

Ye Fan tactfully declined as he said: "Many thanks for the good intentions of Miss Jiang, I'm sincerely grateful. However, I'm used to being weary and lazy, upon entering the Jiang Family I'm afraid I will commit many errors. I think it's better for me to continue travelling outside. If my living conditions become tough and I seek out the Jiang Family in the future, hopefully Miss Jiang will still accept me."

At this moment, Jiang Yi Chen by the other side laughed coldly: "What place do you treat our Jiang Family as? An inn? The Jiang Family is not a place which you can freely enter and leave. If you wish to join, don't talk so much nonsense."

"Jiang Yi Chen, shut your mouth!" Jiang Cai Xuan reprimanded Jiang Yi Chen before turned around and laughing: "Little brother Ye, please ignore him. This is the way he behaves, he's been spoiled rotten. Don't worry, our Jiang Family will leave our doors wide open for you and if you have any difficulties feel free to come to the Jiang Family to look for me."

"Many thanks Miss Jiang." Ye Fan gratefully replied but at the same time he found it weird, he had not provoked the young master of the Jiang Family, why did the other party react like this.

This made Ye Fan more staunch in his decision to never step into the Jiang Family. His divine body, Dao Scripture and mysterious aurichalcite were all taboos and he did not wish to take the risk.

“Little fellow you must know, the number of people wishing to join our Jiang Family is like the carp crossing the river*, if you give up on this chance you will regret it for life.” Jiang Yi Chen coldly smiled at him.

[T/N* Messy and numerous]

Ye Fan’s heart shivered and he felt shocked, this young master of the Jiang Family actually wished for him to immediately join them, what was going on?

Jiang Cai Xuan once again reprimanded Jiang Yi Chen with a few words, he did not speak any further as he stood at a distance and constantly measured Ye Fan.

“This bastard couldn’t possible be a homosexual right? F***!” Ye Fan mumbled in his heart.

After a while, Jiang Yi Chen finally stopped measuring him and began to wander around the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary. This finally allowed Ye Fan to breathe a sigh of relief. He suddenly recalled that there should be two of his classmates here within the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary but he could not remember who they were.

Two hours passed before Jiang Yi Fei brought old uncle Jiang and Ting Ting out, the sect leader as well as several important

figures of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary personally escorting them. The eyes of the old man and little girl were swollen red, it was clear that they had cried heavily inside.

“Sect leader, please return. There’s no need to send us off any further, our Jiang Family is not unreasonable and this matter has been settled, you don’t have to feel anxious anymore.”

The old sect leader finally breathed a sigh of relief, anyone would be nervous and fearful of such a colossal figure like the Jiang Family, there were not many powerful sects who dared to stand up against and challenge them.

The people of the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary stood there as they watched them leave, only when they were out of sight did they finally return to the sect.

Jiang Yi Fei and the group headed straight for the small town of Qing Feng to satisfy the old man who wanted to look at the small town one last time. For the sake of the future of Ting Ting, old uncle Jiang had decided to join the Jiang Family, no longer wishing to see his granddaughter be bullied.

“Big brother, please come along with us.” Ting Ting lifted her small face and pleaded.

Ye Fan rubbed her nose and replied: “Big brother can’t be of much help anymore. There are so many experts within the Jiang Family, I’m not even worthy to be a small soldier there. Ting Ting will have a good life there.”

“Big brother, I really don’t want to be separated from you. Come together with us, otherwise Ting Ting will think of you daily.” Ting Ting seemed as though she wanted to cry.

“I have some other matters to attend to, right now I really can’t go there. I promise you that in the future I will definitely go there to visit you.” Ye Fan softly consoled.

“No way, if big brother doesn’t go, I won’t go either.” Ting Ting actually made such a decision.

“You’re still young, some matters you won’t understand them. Wait till you grow older you will naturally understand them. Go to the Jiang Family, don’t be too playful there and properly learn their cultivation techniques. Who knows, maybe in future I will need Ting Ting’s help.”

Old uncle Jiang also did not understand, he really wished that Ye Fan could follow them but failed to persuade him.

Parting ways outside the small town of Qing Feng, Ting Ting began to bawl loudly as she hugged Ye Fan’s leg and did not want to let go, her tears forming two streams as they rolled down.

Ye Fan helped to wipe her tears as he gently said: “Don’t cry, Ting Ting must remember what I’ve said, in the future we will meet again.”

Ting Ting was still reluctant to part as she sniffled: “I will definitely learn how to cultivate and find big brother in the future, if people wish to bully big brother, TIng Ting will beat them up.”

Ye Fan laughed: “Go, they’re already waiting for you.”

At this moment, Ye Fan noticed that the young master of the Jiang Family, Jiang Yi Chen, was looking at him, a cold light seemed to flash through his eyes which made his heart beat faster.

“Jiang Yi Chen, there’s something wrong with your gaze.....” Jiang Cai Xuan suddenly spoke up.

“Sister Xuan why would you say that?” Jiang Yi Chen felt shock in his heart.

“Stop doing immoral acts and always having evil intentions. It seems that Grandpa has really spoiled you rotten.” Jiang Cai Xuan coldly said: “I’ve noticed it long ago, you seem to want to take action against little brother Ye, has he provoked you?”

Jiang Yi Fei looked back at the two of them and asked: “What’s going on?”

“Nothing much.” Jiang Yi Chen seemed guilty.

“Speak!” Although Jiang Yi Fei looked cultured, he seemed to have a lot of prestige and Jiang Yi Chen seemed frightened of him.

“I…….”

“Quick, speak!”

Jiang Yi Chen had not choice but to speak the truth: “There is a precious treasure on that little kid and it isn’t some ordinary precious treasure. You guys know that my mount’s prowess lies not in its combat ability but its sensitive jade horn, it can sense divine objects and it has been continually flashing with a five coloured glow, exceptionally bright and dazzling.

His mount was a green unique beast that looked like a liger, its green fur was very long and pristine and it had a jade horn on its head, sparkling and translucent as it released a five coloured divine glow, able to sense the presence of precious treasures.

“I could have gotten into trouble…….” Ye Fan noticed that the three people in the distance had glanced over.

“Child, what’s wrong?” Old uncle Jiang asked.

Ting Ting wiped her tears as she said: “Big brother, what troubles are you facing? I’ll ask sister Cai Xuan to help you.”

Ye Fan bitterly smiled.

At this moment, Jiang Yi Chen had a cold smile as he walked

over, Jiang Yi Fei and Jiang Cai Xuan were also walking over.

“I’m really very curious, what precious treasure do you have on you?”

Ye Fan’s heart trembled, he had never expected that Jiang Yi Chen would say such words, could it be that he really discovered something?

Jiang Yi Fei laughed: “Little brother Ye, don’t worry we don’t have any evil intentions. The Jiang Family has no lack of precious treasures and will not snatch your treasure.”

Jiang Cai Xuan warned: “With a precious treasure on your body, you must be careful in future……”

Hearing her explanation, Ye Fan now understood the uniqueness of the five coloured beast. It could actually sense spiritual treasures and this made his back fill with cold sweat. If the aurichalcite or Dao Scripture were to be exposed, the outcome would be unthinkable.

“It’s fortunate that I did not agree to join the Jiang Family…….” Ye Fan muttered in his heart.

“Alright, we’ll part ways here. Be careful, I’ve already warned Jiang Yi Chen and he will not have any further ideas.” Jiang Cai Xuan smiled as she said.

Finally, the group of people rode on their unique beasts into the air, Ting Ting cried pitifully and constantly clenched her little fists until they disappeared into the horizon.

Ye Fan felt a strong sense of danger and did not return to the small town, rather, he continued into the depths of the mountains and wanted to leave this area as soon as possible.

# Chapter 86: Life And Death Situation

The surroundings of the town of Qing Feng were big mountains, ancient trees that reached the sky, dense primitive forests and deep mountains with many unique beasts, ordinary people would not dare to traverse too deep.

Ye Fan had stayed in the town of Qing Feng for a period of time before finding out that this endless mountainous region was actually the outer region of the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land.

From the south to the north of the Yan State it was about two thousand miles and from the east to the west it was about three thousand miles. The Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land was in the centre of this country and was surrounded by endless big mountains, the area occupied by it was over eight hundred miles.

Ling Xu, Yan Xia, Yu Ding and the other three immortal sanctuaries were all surrounding this area in the outer regions.

At this moment, Ye Fan was continually running into the depths of the forest, he could not wait to rush into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land. He felt a threat to his life and wanted to leave the small town as far behind him as possible.

“I hope my premonitions are wrong……” After running for over two hours, he had passed an innumerable amount of mountains before stopping to rest within a mountainous region.

Suddenly, he heard a ear-splitting roars of a ferocious beast that

sounded like a thunderclap that ripped the vast skies, rumbling and surging as it resounded

“It’s coming from the direction of the town of Qing Feng……” Ye Fan was like an agile monkey as he rushed towards a cliff, pushing aside some vines as he entered a concealed cave. He held his breath and lowered any signs of life to the lowest point, his entire body became cold, seemingly devoid of life.

Not long after, he looked past the vines and saw a unique beast covered with green scales with a horseman from the Jiang Family.

“Really came chasing…….” Ye Fan’s eyes narrowed and his heart felt cold, he had personally witnessed the fearsomeness of the Jiang Family horsemen and if he was caught he would be dead for sure.

A while later, the mighty horseman rode on his unique beast and rushed back, continually hovering between a distant mountainous region and this piece of mountainous region.

“He’s locked on to this region, could it be that he has discovered me?” Ye Fan’s body felt cold and felt that death was just around the corner.

At the same time, his heart was filled with anger. The other party must have rushed over to look for his precious treasure, if he was found, there was no way to live. He did not dare to be agitated and did not move, continuing to lower any presence of life and he seemed like a dried up piece of wood as he hid within the cave.

Four hours passed before the green beast finally flew away and slowly disappeared into the horizon. Ye Fan did not dare to move and only when the sky became thoroughly dark did he nimbly climb out of the cave, swiftly running to another mountainous region.

“Jiang Family……” Ye Fan grit his teeth.

This night, Ye Fan did not light any fires and picked some wild fruit to sustain himself as he hid within the thriving cluster of thistles and thorns.

In the night, the roars of unknown beasts could be heard and it was extremely unsettling, the stars and moon in the sky were dim and a sinister air seemed to be present, the trees in the wild mountainous lands seemed to be shaking like a malicious spirit that was baring its teeth and flashing it claws.

Suddenly, the sounds of roaring wild beasts within this area vanished and the forest became absolutely silent. Ye Fan’s heart tensed and his body seemed to have withered as he stood there immobile.

It was unknown when the unique beast suddenly appeared in the sky with a man sitting atop it, giving the beasts below a feeling of immense danger.

It was only late into the night before the horseman finally disappeared from this area. Ye Fan felt cold sweat covering his

entire body and knew that if this continued, he would certainly be caught sooner or later.

“If i clash with them head on I’ll certainly die, how can I get rid of him……” Ye Fan could not think of any ideas and could only choose to continue running.

In the next two days, Ye Fan continued to travel through the mountainous region while hiding, there were a few times where he was almost discovered by the other party and it could be said that he had a close brush with death.

It was on the third day where he met with the greatest danger, the other party seemed to sense that he could be hiding in the region and ruthlessly attacked, using a spiritual weapon to slice through several rock cliffs and dissected the entire mountainous region, destroying much undergrowth and causing the entire region to become barren.

Ye Fan was hiding within the swamp not far away and did not dare to move a whisker, his entire body was covered in mud and dried leaves as he held his breath, silently waiting for the horseman to leave.

The other party did not even leave the swamp unscathed and used his spiritual weapon which turned into a blue lightning, sweeping past the swamp causing many ravines to form, totally destroying the swamp.

“Chi!”

Suddenly, the spiritual weapon which was light a blue lightning flashed past, slicing through the mud and although it did not hit his body, the blue light brushed past his chest and Ye Fan felt a stinging pain but bore with it and did not move. If his body were not exceptionally strong, a normal cultivator would have his waist cut off by that frightening blue light!

An hour later, everything finally became peaceful again. Ye Fan grit his teeth as he extricated himself from the mud, fresh blood was gurgling from his abdomen and actually dyed the mud red.

“Jiang Yi Chen, sooner or later I’ll kill you! Even an ancient aristocratic family will not be able to save you!”

Ye Fan suddenly felt the as thought the sky were falling, he had lost too much blood and his abdomen had almost been split apart. If it weren’t for the mud that obstructed the blood flow, he would have long died to blood loss.

He hurriedly found a mountain spring and used the water to wash his wound, thereafter he took off his clothes which were filled with mud and used the cleaner parts of his clothing to wrap his wound. The wound on his waist was too serious and his intestines could also be seen as blood continued to flow without stopping.

Losing too much blood, Ye Fan felt his body losing its strength and even his hands were dyed with blood. He tore all the clean clothing he had and used them to press on the wound. However,

the blood still continued to flow and his lower half was dyed red, his skin was already becoming pale.

Ye fan used his two hands to press against his wound, blood continued to flow out from between fingers, he bit his lips to maintain consciousness, unwilling to faint. Slowly circulating the Dao Scripture, utilising all the life force within him to try and stabilize the injury.

“It is the way of heaven to take from what has in excess in order to make good what is deficient…*”

[T/N*: Excerpt from Laozi’s classics]

Just as he was about to faint, from the depths of his mind a sound could be heard, several hundred ancient words flowed like a stream within his innermost being, allowing his consciousness which was blurry to gradually become clearer.

Ye Fan gradually regained his calm, his consciousness had recovered and he no longer felt dizzy. At the same time, the Dao Scripture was silently circulating, the qi essence of life continually surging towards the area of his wound. Eventually, faint blue light could be seen rushing out of that frightful wound that was wrapped up, the great danger that he faced was finally over as the qi essence of life flowed and managed to stop the blood loss.

Ye Fan was extremely weak but he still grit his teeth as he stood up, swaying as he slowly made his way towards the forest in the mountainous region. He needed to find a secluded area to hide as

his wound was quite serious and he could no longer run.

Initially, Ye Fan had wanted to use these few days to rush into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land, only in this way would the horseman be apprehensive and not dare to go too deep. However, he did not have the strength and after careful consideration, he staggered as he headed back in the direction which he came from.

Finally, he came to an area which the horseman had destroyed and stopped within the rubble, hiding in a crevice within the rocks.

This region had already been searched and Ye Fan attempted to guess at the thoughts of the horseman and felt that this area would be a blind spot for a short period of time.

Ye Fan did not eat or drink and hid within the crevice for two days and two nights before the wound was completely under control. Even so, it was still difficult for him to make any sudden movements.

In these two days, that horseman had been hovering in the air above the mountainous region and much of the mountains and forest had been destroyed by him.

This night, Ye Fan slowly climbed out of the crevice and picked many wild fruits as he changed locations to hide. The new area had recently been ravaged by the horseman, trees were severed, rocks were shattered and the entire area was a mess.

“I’ll slowly follow behind you, wherever you search I’ll be there to hide.” Under these dangerous circumstances where his life could be snuffed out at any time, Ye Fan could only earnestly consider as he carefully hid, choosing to hide himself in the horseman’s blind spot.

This continued for five to six days before he gradually recovered. This could be said to be a form of torture and within these few days, under the shortage of food as well as suffering from the wound, he grew much skinnier.

“If it weren’t for my exceptional physique which is better than an ordinary cultivator, I would have already been killed by that blue light.” Ye Fan gazed at the horizon as he muttered: “I will definitely escape from this ordeal, I cannot die here.”

“Jiang Family…….” Ye Fan grit his teeth.

He did not have sufficient strength now and he could only risk death and hide into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land in order to escape from the horseman. Ye Fan’s body had mostly recovered and he began to diverge his path as he tried to get closer to the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land.

“I’ve eaten the divine fruit and should be able to resist the curse there, going to that region which forbids life may be a good opportunity for me!”

# Chapter 87: Encountering Li Xiao Man

Since a long time back, Ye Fan always had a thought, returning to the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land to receive a heaven sent opportunity!

Be it the experts from the human or other races, they did not dare to enter too deep into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land. The vegetation within was lush and spiritual medicines were abundant, having been baptised by time, many of the spiritual medicines were fast becoming divine medicines and the forbidden land could be considered a priceless sacred ground.

Ye Fan had partaken the sacred fruit and divine spring, he felt that it was likely he could stay within the forbidden land for a period of time and had planned to reach a certain level before returning to that place which was devoid of life.

“My strength is currently very weak, I really don’t wish to head back there, however, I really don’t see any other options……” He did not have any choice and could only risk death and enter.

“Roar!”

In the depths of the mountainous region, the roars of ferocious beasts shook the heavens like heavenly thunder reverberating, causing the leaves in the forest to float about. Ye Fan’s expression changed, he was still quite a distance from the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land and in the outer regions there seemed to be extremely frightening unique beasts, wanting to traverse through

the area seemed exceptionally difficult.

However, if he did not move forward, how would he get rid of the horseman who was currently chasing him? This made Ye Fan very conflicted.

“Jiang Yi Chen, just you wait. Even though you are a child of the Jiang Family, one day I will kill you!” Ye Fan had never felt such deep hatred for a person before, the other party was greedy for his treasures, vicious without any compassion and wanted to exterminate him.

Suddenly, Ye Fan sensed danger as that horseman seemed to be getting closer once again and he swiftly hid.

A green figure appeared in the sky, the expert horseman from the Jiang Family appeared once again but the unique beast that he was mounted on seemed to be frightened as it seemed to flee for its life and rush downwards, landing heavily on the ground causing it to tremble.

Not far away, Ye Fan saw all of this clearly and was alarmed, such a strong unique beast was actually terrified to such an extent? The horseman was also extremely shocked and became a wisp of gentle wind as he hid within a pile of rubble.

At this instant, the entire forest suddenly became dimmer as a fierce squall blew by, several shrubs and trees were blown away and a huge shadow was cast on the ground.

In the sky, there was an immense bird that seemed to cover the sky as it flew by, its entire body was flashing with a golden resplendent light as though it were forged from gold, its body was so immense that it made one speechless, like a golden cloud that was rushing by, it blocked the sun and shrouded the heavens.

“Golden Winged Roc!” Ye Fan was deeply astonished.

The might of the Roc of legend was oppressive and the entire mountainous region became deathly silent, even the roars of beasts had disappeared and only after it had flown off into the distance for a while did the forest regain its normalcy.

The horseman of the Jiang Family remounted his unique beast as it dashed to the sky, even an expert like him could only hide earlier.

Ye Fan was feeling anxious, if he continued to move forward like this, there would be untold numbers of beasts and birds that he would meet, would he really be able to reach that area where life was forbidden?

“The Forbidden Ancient Desolate has nine sacred mountains, connected together to form an endless abyss. It is rumoured that on each of the sacred mountains there is a type of sacred fruit and divine spring, each unique and different……” Ye Fan mumbled to himself to lift his spirits.

“I’ve only eaten a single type of sacred fruit and drank from one type of divine spring and it has already caused my entire being to

change, if I ascend the other eight sacred mountains……." Although he kept encouraging himself, he still felt trepidation that continuing forward would likely have disastrous outcomes.

Only a day had passed and Ye Fan's ideas were shot through, he had continually spotted three expert horsemen who had sealed off the forward route, constantly patrolling in the air above the primitive mountainous region.

"They really want to exterminate me, actually resorting to sending out so many expert horsemen!"

"Roar!"

On a distant mountain, an ear-splitting roar from a beast could be heard, the three expert horsemen in the sky instantly distanced themselves from the area and Ye Fan discovered that a nine headed snake beast was soaring on clouds and ridings on mists as it appeared in the air.

It was as big as a small mountain and gave one a frightening oppressive feeling, black mist swirled around it and its enormous body seemed indistinct, its body was like that of a qilin but it had nine enormous snake heads, looking extremely ferocious.

Its roar immediately scared off the three expert horseman of Jiang Family and the pressure that was occasionally released made one fill with fear and trepidation.

Ye Fan's heart was palpitating, he had not gotten near to the Forbidden Ancient Desolate land but various frightening unique beasts continued to appear, if he continued forward who knew what he would encounter. If he could not traverse through the air and relied only on walking to advance, there was simply no way to get past this primitive mountainous region. It was no wonder that those horsemen from the Jiang Family decided to seal the area from here.

Ye Fan carefully proceeded forward for another day before noticing that the relatively safer areas had all been blocked off by the three expert horsemen and there was simply no way to go through.

"While I'm trying to predict what they're thinking, they are also thinking about my route of escape and must have predicted that I would try to use the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land to get rid of them……"

Ye Fan hid within a dense forest and after careful consideration, he decided not to proceed forward, otherwise, he would simply be looking for death.

"If I can't fly, there's simply no way to get near to the forbidden area……" Ye Fan did not look back as he left, following the path he had taken and used the chance while the horsemen were still there to try and escape from this primitive forest, escaping into the crowds of people.

When Ye Fan escaped to the edges of the mountainous region, he discovered that there was an expert horseman riding on a unique

beast whose body was covered in flashing black scales as he patrolled the air above the forest.

“A fifth expert horseman…….” Ye Fan stared blankly at the sky as he muttered: “Were they all sent here by Jiang Yi Chen?”

“They brought a total of ten odd horsemen with them, now that five of them have already been mobilised, could it be possible that Jiang Yi Fei and Jiang Cai Xuan haven’t noticed? That’s simply impossible!”

“Could it be that the two of them have been have actually acquiesced to this?”

“Or could it be that the two of them have sent people out…….”

Ye Fan felt cold in his heart.

Jiang Yi Fei was clothed in white, cultured and elegant, anyone who looked at him would be dazed and could really be considered to seem otherworldly. Jiang Cai Xuan was lithe and graceful, elegant and moving, although she did have some arrogance in her, she was very compassionate towards Ting Ting and had left quite a good impression with Ye Fan.

Under the current circumstances Ye Fan could not comprehend what role did the two play in the current situation that was playing out. He was unsure if it was really as disastrous as he imagined, humans were complex and were difficult to fathom.

“Hopefully the two of them aren’t involved in this, otherwise, if Ting Ting lives in that sort of complicated family, I really don’t know if it’s a blessing or a calamity……” Ye Fan was beginning to feel worried for Ting Ting and old uncle Jiang.

This night, Ye Fan secretly headed back to the small store of old uncle Jiang. At this moment he could see two unique beasts who were patrolling in the air at the mountainous region just outside the small town. As they saying went, the most dangerous place was the safest place and he relaxed as he finally had a good night’s rest.

It was only when the second night came did Ye Fan sneak out of the small town and continue fleeing into the distance.

Three days later, Ye Fan was sleeping outdoors at a desolate area in the countryside when he saw a horseman of the Jiang Family riding a unique beast as it rushed through the air, flying into the distance. This made him shocked, the other party had caught up so quickly and this made him puzzled, how were they finding clues with regards to where he went?

“An ancient aristocratic family is too frightening, if I can’t enter the forbidden area, how am I going to shake them off?” Ye Fan was feeling anxious.

Finally, Ye Fan entered a large city within the Yan State, he felt that only with a large number of people would he be able to safely hide.

Besides the capital city of Yan State, this was the second biggest city, the number of people was not lower than a million and it was flourishing, the streets were wide and there were endless streams of horses and carriages, people continually went by and on both sides of the street shops stood in abundance, the sounds of buying and selling filled the air.

Ye Fan had been constantly on the run and was currently extremely fatigued. Only when he had entered this city did he finally heave a sigh of relief, the people of the Jiang Family could not possible ride their unique beasts on the big streets right?

It was already midday and Ye Fan's stomach was rumbling with hunger, he touched his bosom but let out a bitter laugh, he did not have a single cent on him. He cut a sorry figure, this period of fleeing for his life had really pressured him into such a state.

"I have to find ways to eat a good meal, I can't starve my body. I still need the accumulate energy to continue fleeing." Ye Fan did not have the mood to sightsee and explore this flourishing town, he needed to find a place where he could have a meal.

Suddenly, Ye Fan concentrated hard as he saw a familiar figure, it was actually Li Xiao Man!

Her looks were no longer aged and decrepit and she had regained her youth. She was about 1.7 metres tall, slender and elegant, wearing a pure white dress which seemed to flutter in the wind, giving off a feeling that she did not eat the food of common mortals.

Whether it be now or the past, Li Xiao Man had always been exceptionally beautiful, her appearance quiet and exquisite, it may have been because she was now cultivating, her skin actually seemed to twinkle with a sparkling and translucent lustre, snow white and tender like that of a fine jade.

Li Xiao Man's white dress danced in the air and her black hair naturally drifted, accentuating and making her skin seem even more sparkling and translucent. Her eyes were big and lashes long, seeming to be full or spiritual qi, her neck was as elegant as a white swan and her small waist could barely fill a grasp. Her legs were slender and perfectly straight, figure lithe and graceful, extremely perfect.

Compared to the past, she had lost a little of her ostentatiousness and gained a bit of nimbleness, she also seemed to have gained an otherworldly aura, like a fairy from the moon descended on earth

Ye Fan had never expected that he would see her here and naturally could not help but think of many past matters. There were sweet moments and also heartless and bitter memories. He turned his body and did not wish to reunite with her under these circumstances.

Li Xiao Man clearly did not notice Ye Fan, she was like a crane amongst a flock of chicken, graceful and nimble, her beautiful and otherworldly appearance attracted many glances and she naturally did not notice a haggard and fatigued youth in the distance.

Ye Fan turned and left, he did not want to remain here but did not expect to knock into someone in his rush.

“Little beggar watch where you go, the street is so wide but you actually knock into me!” A few young males and females were in front and a beautiful girl among them had an unhappy expression, Ye Fan had unintentionally knocked into her.

“Sorry!” Ye Fan hurriedly apologised.

“Junior sister, check if you’ve lost anything. The beggars nowadays resort to such methods to steal.” The young male reminded and blocked Ye Fan, preventing him from leaving.

Ye Fan had been fleeing day and night, his clothes were dirty and in tatters and his face was covered in dirty blots making him seem like a little beggar.

“Senior brother, senior sister……” At this moment Li Xiao Man walked over, although there were many people on the street, the crowd noticed that she was exquisitely beautiful and involuntarily made way for her, allowing her to swiftly draw closer.

“Let him go, I haven’t lost anything.” The girl who had been knocked into frowned as she said.

Ye Fan wanted to turn and leave but Li Xiao Man was already before the group and had noticed him.

“It’s you!”

Ye Fan’s stopped his movements, he did not expect to really run into her.

“Junior sister, you recognise this little beggar?” The few youths by the side had astonished expressions.

At this moment, Ye Fan’s clothes were in tatters and his entire body was covered in dirt. He looked haggard and fatigued. He had been running day and night and his mind was very tired, together with his tattered clothing, no matter how one looked at it, he looked like a person from the dregs of society.

# Chapter 88: Treated Indifferently

Normally Li Xiao Man was quiet, exquisite and otherworldly, seldom showing shock when faced with many things, seeming to always be cool and composed. At this moment, she had an expression of shock on her face and the few youths by the side were very curious as one of them could not help but ask: “Junior sister, you know this little beggar?”

Li Xiao Man quickly recovered as she nodded: “I do.”

“Junior sister Li, how did you get to know him?” One of the females in the group had a puzzled expression, Ye Fan was in tatters and he seemed haggard. No matter how she looked at it, he seemed to be of the lowest hierarchy and was from a totally different world.

“We came from the same place, in the past we could be considered to be..... neighbours.” Li Xiao Man’s expression was indifferent.

Ye Fan heard her refer to him as ‘neighbour’ and faintly smiled before saying “How do you do.” before keeping silent.

“So you’re old acquaintances. Your little neighbour is really so young and impatient, the street is so wide yet he could carelessly knock into me. Earlier senior brother Yang actually thought he was attempting to steal something.”

“This youth really is quite pitiful, such a young age yet reduced to

being a beggar already.”

“The beggars nowadays always beg and steal at the same time, Junior sister Li you better advise him to not walk down the crooked path.

Cultivators and ordinary humans could be considered people from two different worlds, this was especially so for the lowest in the hierarchy amongst ordinary humans, the beggars. It was difficult to have any form of interaction with them and as the few youths spoke they did not put Ye Fan into consideration.

“Senior brothers and sisters, do you have money on yourselves? Lend some to me.” Li Xiao Man took some many from the youths and handed them to Ye Fan before saying: “Go change some clothes, don’t be a beggar. I believe you can feed yourself with your strength.”

“Junior sister Li is so compassionate.”

“That’s so true, junior sister really has such a compassionate heart. They were merely neighbours but she actually gave him so much money.”

“Little beggar, in future you better walk a straight path, do not resort to stealing otherwise you would be doing wrong to junior sister Li.”

The few youths by the side constantly spoke up.

Ye Fan's eyes were clear as he silently looked at Li Xiao Man. He did not reach forth to receive the money and said: "Thank you for your kind intentions, however, I do not require this."

A male youth by the side frowned: "Little beggar what's wrong with you? Junior sister Li is giving you clear money but you don't want it. Could it be that you really want to steal for a living?"

Li Xiao Man's expression was peaceful, her glance was calm like the waters of a lake without any waves as she placed the money in Ye Fan's hands and said: "Keep it, be a normal person."

Ye Fan ignored the people by the side and pushed the money back as he replied: "Don't worry, I'm able to live. I hope you can walk further and further on the path of cultivation and that everything will be smooth."

"This little beggar really wants to keep his dignity and would rather endure suffering. He's already in such dire straits that he has to be a beggar but he still pretends to be virtuous and noble."

"Don't be virtuous and noble now but turn around and steal."

The few youths by the side were unhappy.

Li Xiao Man gazed at Ye Fan and her voice was calm without any fluctuations as she said: "This will be useful to you right now, don't reject it. Hurry and keep it, could it be that you really want

to beg for a living?”

Ye Fan still refused to accept the money as he replied: “Congratulations on regaining your youth.” He could sense that Li Xiao Man was only at the Sea of Bitterness stage and could not compare to him, however, he did not know how she managed to regain her vitality.

“Thank you, I was just lucky.” Li Xiao Man did not insist and kept the money.

One of the female youths amongst them spoke up: “This little beggar really knows quite a bit, he even knows that junior sister Li once lost her youth, it seems they really are old acquaintances.”

“We were merely neighbours that aren’t that familiar with each other. Who knows, in ten odd years, if we meet again we may not recognise each other……” Li Xiao Man continued to be very calm as she indifferently responded as though she were speaking about something that did not concern her.

Although Ye Fan’s face was covered with blotches, he still smiled resplendently and exposed his snow white teeth as he said: “That’s right, one’s memories will fade away with time, there are some people and matters that will slowly become dull with the passing of time.”

“This little beggar isn’t that old but seems to already have quite a character.” A female by the side looked at Ye Fan before glancing at Li Xiao Man and continued: “It’s a pity that junior sister isn’t that

well acquainted with him, otherwise, we'd be able to bring him back to the Zi Yang immortal sanctuary, leave him to handle odd jobs at the main gate, this would surely be better than him begging by the street and walking a crooked path."

A male youth heard this and nodded: "Our sect is very strict in recruiting people, we must know their background before accepting them."

There were no ripples on Li Xiao Man's face, her expression was indifferent as she said to Ye Fan: "Don't walk a crooked path, be a good ordinary person, that is possibly a kind of good fortune."

Ye Fan laughed and did not reply as he waved before taking big strides and leaving.

"The feeling this little beggar gives a person is rather special……" The few youths by the side had such an evaluation.

Ye Fan took big strides as he left, merging into the endless the crowd. Half a minute later he was before an antique store, haggling with the boss.

"What? Fifteen coppers? One must be generous in their dealings, don't be too avaricious."

"Young man, don't be too ambitious, it's merely a wooden case, how could it be worth ten gold.

“This is a red sandalwood case, if you don’t want it, I’ll just go to another shop……” Having said this, Ye Fan turned and left.

“Don’t be so hasty, the price can be discussed.” The boss of the antique store hurriedly pulled Ye Fan back.

Finally, Ye Fan was satisfied as he walked away with an additional ten gold.

It was already midday and his tummy was rumbling but he did not wish to eat a meal without paying. As a result, he took out the red sandalwood case which was used to store the ‘source’ and sold it, using a normal copper case to store the ‘source’.

“A horseman from the Jiang Family!”Ye Fan lifted his head as he gazed at the sky and was shocked to see that a unique beast was patrolling in the air above the city and not long after it flew into the distance. He felt very confused and did not understand how the other party was able to keep track of his movements.

Ye Fan climbed the stairs of a restaurant and ordered a table full of dishes, eating to his heart’s content. Having run for days and nights on end, he had not eaten a single hot meal and he naturally began to gorge himself on the food.

It was only an hour later when he stood up satisfied. The waiter in the shop had been eyeing his table for a long time, seeing his tattered clothes and the way he ate like a beggar, he was afraid that Ye Fan would run away after finishing the food.

Ye Fan was naturally not calculative with him and threw down the money for the food on the table before going down. When he reached the big street he was shocked, the horseman of the Jiang Family had entered the city and sat on a unique beast as he disappeared around a bend.

“What’s going on? How could they possibly keep chasing me? Although they can’t pinpoint my exact location, it seems that they are able to find out my rough whereabouts!” Ye Fan had anxiety written on his face, he felt that the situation was becoming bad and he could not stay within this city for long, otherwise, things would certainly get out of hand. He did not tarry and immediately left the city, speedily heading towards the forest in the distance.

“Really chasing me to the ends of the earth, how am I going to get loose from them?” Ye Fan was crossing innumerable mountains and only stopped when the sky became completely dark.

At this moment, Ye Fan felt that the spiritual qi in the air was denser, denser than the other regions by several times. As he continued forward for over ten miles, he had a shocked expression as he saw four ancient characters carved on a limestone: Purple Sun Immortal Sanctuary.

“How did I arrive here……”

Ye Fan realised that he had arrived at Purple Sun immortal sanctuary. This was Li Xiao Man’s current sect and this immortal sanctuary was not considered far away from that city.

# Chapter 89: Purple Sun Immortal Sanctuary

“Purple Sun immortal sanctuary……” At this moment he realised that the meeting with Li Xiao Man and her group was not surprising, her sect was actually so close by.

Ye Fan turned and wanted to leave, he did not want to have any connections with the sect that Li Xiao Man was in. When they met today, Li Xiao Man was indifferent without any ripples, that sort of coldness and indifference, although she attempted to pass some money to him, she gave one a feeling as though she were way above them, like she was giving alms to the poor.

“Asking me to be an ordinary person and not walk a crooked path, could I really be so useless……” He mocked himself but did not feel hurt or hatred, emotions faded with the passing of time and no markings were left behind. Ye Fan felt that if they met again, a simple smile as they passed was sufficient. There was no need to be overly reminiscent of anything, at times simply brushing shoulders and walking by was possibly a better option.

Ye Fan had already walked several tens of metres away when he suddenly stopped. He had always been contemplating how to escape from the horsemen of the Jiang Family and at this moment he immediately thought of using the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary to get out of this dicey situation.

Right now, he did not have sufficient strength and could not possibly face them head on. He could only use his brain to think of how to deal with the situation as he mumbled: “I haven’t been able to get rid of them, there must be a reason for this. Even an expert

could not possibly have such acute spiritual sense enabling him to constantly find traces……”

Ye Fan felt that Purple Sun immortal sanctuary which was one of the six immortal sanctuaries would certainly have Dao Inscriptions laid down in their area, coalescing all the mysterious energy causing this area to become a self contained world, if he went into the area he could possibly cut off any connections with the outside world.

“Not bad, I’ll borrow this area!” After careful consideration, Ye Fan continued into the depths of the mountainous region.

“Such dense spiritual qi, no wonder it’s an immortal sanctuary.”

The sky was already dark but between the mountain ridges, traces of purple qi could be seen swirling, the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary truly lives up to its name, purple mist could be seen bubbling forth and occasionally purple lights could be seen streaking across the sky.

Even though it was simply the outer region, it was already exceptional with azure peaks among jade green valleys, rippling clear streams and lush green vegetation. Many of the plants and trees seemed to have gained spiritual awareness and had glossy leaves that twinkled.

Ye Fan got closer to the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary and closely inspected, trying to find a way to sneak in. However, he found this task extremely difficult as there were people supervising

the entryway and there were even ferocious beasts guarding.

Two unique beasts were covered in lumps and seemed like huge crocodiles, it was only that they had two flesh wings and seemed like two small mountains as they lay there, their jade coloured eyes which were as big as a face seemed to flash with a cold light.

“Eh, there seem to be a few youths kneeling there, what’s the matter?” Ye Fan was shocked to see that there were several sixteen to seventeen year old youths kneeling before the front door.

A cultivator which was patrolling the mountain happened to walk by and said: “You people should just leave, your aptitudes are too normal and even if you work hard there won’t be much results.”

“Immortal teacher, please give us one more chance.”

The cultivator sighed: “You people have kneeled for several days, I am not a heartless person but your aptitudes are simply too ordinary. There’s no way for you to pass the test, please head down the mountain.”

“Immortal teacher, we aren’t requesting for anything else, we only wish for one more chance.” The few youths were kneeling on the ground as they bitterly pleaded.

“Alright, I’ll give all of you one more chance. Half a month later we will be selecting new disciples, whether you can grasp this

opportunity to stay will depend on yourselves."

"Many thanks immortal teacher!" The youths bowed in unison.

Hearing this, Ye Fan took big strides as he walked forward.

"Who's there?" The cultivator turned to look back.

"Immortal teacher, I've come here to be a disciple." Ye Fan loudly shouted.

"It only begins half a month later, you've arrived too early."

"My home is too far away and I've travelled for six months before arriving. I was afraid of being delayed along the way, please take pity on me immortal teacher." Ye Fan had observed for a period of time and felt that this cultivator's heart was rather soft and should be easily convinced.

"This doesn't conform with the rules."

Ye Fan's face was very sincere as he described how he raised money, even to the point of begging, travelling over land and water, going over thousands of miles and journeyed for over half a year before reaching this area with difficulty.

This immortal teacher was not very old and looked to be about twenty seven to twenty eight years of age, he was soft hearted and

as he looked at Ye Fan with his tattered clothes and face which was stained with blotches, he finally sighed as he nodded: “Alright, you’ll go together with them.”

Ye Fan hurriedly said his thanks as he followed the group of youths into the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary. All the immortal mountains had purple qi swirling around them and they seemed hazy and indistinct, palaces could be seen on each of the mountain tops, simply ephemeral, with a flavour of the land of immortals.

“This Purple Sun immortal sanctuary has even denser spiritual qi than Ling Xu immortal sanctuary……” Ye Fan muttered in his heart as he nodded, this place was clearly exceptional.

Entering into the depths of the immortal mountains, the vegetation was lush and spiritual medicine was abundant, a fresh air blew by, this was an extremely beautiful and peaceful immortal sanctuary.

Ye Fan and the few youths were settled down beside a patch of bamboo forest, there were wooden houses here that were catered for odd labourers, disciples who cultivated seldom came to this area.

Reaching this area, Ye Fan gradually calmed down. If they were still able to find him, he would only be left with the choice to struggle with his life on the line, there were no other options available.

“It’s likely that there’s something on my body that allows them

to sense it and chase."

Ye Fan eliminated the aurichalcite, this mysterious precious treasure, back in the day many cultivators got a hold of it but could not differentiate it, now that it was located silently within his golden sea of bitterness it would be even more impossible to differentiate.

Was it the Dao Scripture? This was also quite improbable, if he did not circulate the mystical arts recorded within, his golden sea of bitterness would be silent, like a divine piece of metal without any fluctuations and outsiders would be hard pressed to sense anything.

"Could it be this piece of 'source' that is exposing my tracks? It shouldn't be the case." Ye Fan contemplated deeply but did not manage to find an answer as he muttered: "I won't care about all this first, let's first absorb this 'source'."

In the next few days, the patch of bamboo forest was extremely peaceful, no outsiders came to disturb and it really was a place suitable for cultivation. The expert horsemen from the Jiang Family also did not appear.

Ye Fan had began to absorb the 'source' and each time he would hold it in his palm as he carefully smelted, each day he would only melt a small amount, he was worried that if he were too forceful, the vast amount of qi essence of life would all rush out, causing waves of source energy, allowing others to notice.

On the sixth day, the bright moon was hanging in the sky and Ye Fan once again smelted a small portion of the ‘source’. At this moment, the sounds of the howling sea suddenly transmitted from within his golden sea of bitterness, the clamor was astounding and he hurriedly stopped as he hid the ‘source’.

“This is so problematic……” The unique physique made him helpless, he had imagined that he would be able to control it but the frightening sound had suddenly erupted. The unique imagery caused by his sea of bitterness was astounding and if it were discovered by others, a huge ruckus would be created.

“It seems that I won’t be able to completely smelt this piece of ‘source’, I can only wait till I leave this area before I continue.”

However, his gains were not minimal and his golden sea of bitterness had grown a full circle, there were eight additional divine symbols swirling above his sea of bitterness. Ye Fan then smelted these eight divine symbols into that lump of divine metal that was already present within his sea of bitterness and constantly molded it on the aurichalcite, copying the Dao Inscriptions onto it.

This day, the silence was broken as several of the young cultivators came here and noticed Ye Fan.

“It’s you…… that little beggar!” There were looks of astonishment on the faces of the few of them, these were the disciples of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary who he had chanced upon a few days back, Li Xiao Man was currently not in their midst.

The previous day, Ye Fan had created a loud clamor and a few cultivators had come to inspect the area. In the night they had not discovered much and the few people were curious therefore came in the early morning to inspect once again.

“How did you enter our Purple Sun immortal sanctuary? Could it be that you came looking for junior sister Li?” The few people were shocked and had never imagined that they would see Ye Fan here.

“The sect leader of your Purple Sun immortal sanctuary chanced upon me and mentioned that my aptitude was exceptional, wanting to take me as a disciple no matter what…….” Ye Fan blatantly lied.

The few people naturally did not believe this as their faces seemed unhappy, a girl amongst them said in a heavy voice: “Little beggar, your skin is really quite thick!”

At this moment, a middle aged man appeared within the bamboo forest as he walked a few rounds around the area before stopping: “I feel the aura of a ‘source’ here.”

“Greetings senior elder!” The few youths hurriedly paid their respects.

Ye Fan was shocked, this person’s spiritual sense was too sensitive, the source had already been sealed by him but was still discovered.

“No need to be overly polite.” The middle aged man’s face was rosy and his hair was jet black, however, his eyes seemed ancient and seemed to be in conflict with his outer appearance.

“This person’s real age must be seventy to eighty years or higher……” Ye Fan estimated in his heart, he felt that this was a frightening expert.

“It’s on your body……” He stared at Ye Fan.

“Greetings elder.” Ye Fan paid his respects.

“You aren’t a disciple of our Purple Sun immortal sanctuary?”

“No, I’m not.”

The middle aged man did not seem to move but suddenly appeared before Ye Fan, as though he had teleported as he grabbed Ye Fan’s hand.

“Elder, what are you……” Ye Fan was shocked and actually thought that the elder was going to act.

“Your physique……” The middle aged man had a shocked expression before he shook his head and sighed. It was clear that he had seen a lot and immediately made a judgement.

In that instant earlier, Ye Fan's heart was extremely nervous. It was fortunate that his sea of bitterness was deathly silent, darkness shrouded the golden sea of bitterness as though it were a desolate piece of land. When the middle aged man had inspected the area, he did not discover any abnormalities.

Ye Fan felt astonished in his heart, if he purposefully chose to hide it, even such an expert personally checking could be easily tricked.

"Do you have a piece of 'source' on your body?" The middle aged man asked.

Ye Fan had no way to hide this fact any further as he retrieved a small wooden case: "I'm not sure if this is a 'source' but this is something that was passed down from my family's ancestors."

The middle aged man opened the wooden case and glanced at the object within before saying: "That's right, it is a source. Although it isn't pure, it's already very rare. I wonder if you're willing to part with it?"

"This……"

"You can't cultivate, this piece of 'source is useless to you. Don't worry, I won't cause you to lose out. If you're willing to make an exchange, you will gain enough wealth to last you ten lifetimes."

"However, I really don't want to exchange it……" Ye Fan had an

awkward expression on his face. He had entered the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary and temporarily got rid of the horsemen from the Jiang Family. However, he did not think that the fact he had a ‘source’ would be leaked and this made him feel very helpless.

“You really don’t wish to make an exchange?” The middle aged man asked with a calm expression, appearing to not be forcing Ye Fan into anything.

“I…….”

“It’s alright, since that’s the case, I also won’t want to make things difficult for you. It’s only a piece of source, to me I can have it or not, makes no difference.” Having said this, he turned and left, only walking a few steps before disappearing from the eyes of the group.

Ye Fan’s heart shivered, this was definitely an expert.

“Little beggar, I did not expect that you would actually have a ‘source’ on you, although it isn’t a pure piece, a small ‘source’ is even more valuable than spiritual medicines.”

The few youths had amazed looks on their faces, they would never have imagined that there would be such an item on Ye Fan and a few of the people naturally began to have greed in their hearts.

“Little beggar, you really don’t know how to grasp opportunities.

Do you know who the person earlier was? That was the number two expert within our Purple Sun immortal sanctuary, he has cultivated for slightly over hundred years but is already stronger than all of our grand masters. If you had handed the ‘source’ over to him and formed this good karma, the benefits would have been endless.....”

The few youths attempted to persuade Ye Fan with various benefits to attain this ‘source’ but Ye Fan was adamant in his refusal.

It was only when the group left before Ye Fan muttered: “Although I’ve temporarily avoided the horsemen of the Jiang Family, the fact that I have a ‘source’ has been leaked, who knows what troubles may come.”

An hour later, Li Xiao Man appeared within the bamboo forest with the few youths who had left earlier in tow.

Li Xiao Man did not ask how Ye Fan had appeared here and instead said in a calm voice: “Ye Fan, you can’t cultivate. Holding onto this piece of ‘source’ is useless, why not use it to exchange for ten lifetimes worth of wealth.....”

Ye Fan immediately shook his head as he rejected: “I’m not exchanging!”

# Chapter 90: Leaving Without Looking Back

This was a peaceful area and normally no cultivating disciples would come here. Amongst the bamboo trees were little wooden houses which odd labourers would live in.

A gentle wind was blowing and the entire bamboo forest swayed, green bamboo leaves emitted ‘Sha Sha’ noises as a gale of fresh air blew past.

Li Xiao Man’s white clothing fluttered in the wind and seemed otherworldly, her jet black hair was thick and lustrous, skin smooth like jade, eyes misty as she looked at Ye Fan: “You are an ordinary human, the ‘source’ is useless to you.”

“Although I’m an ordinary human, I still know the worth of certain items. All of you are cultivators yet view it so heavily, how could this item be useless to me.” Ye Fan seemed to weigh the ‘source’ in his hand as a faint smile floated onto his face: “There exists a large amount of qi essence of life within, i think to an ordinary human, it should at least be able to extend my lifespan.”

“You…… using it to extend the lifespan of a normal human, that’s so wasteful!” The few youths by the side had unhappy expressions.

“If you with to extend your lifespan causing your body to become fitter, there are actually several methods. You can exchange that piece of ‘source’ for some hundred plants extract to use.”

“That’s right, if you’re willing to hand over the ‘source’, we will definitely make you satisfied.”

The few youths all spoke up in the same manner, this piece of ‘source’ was simply too tempting and each of them wanted to acquire it.

“Sorry, I won’t be exchanging it. All that you have just said does not interest me.” Ye Fan would not exchange the ‘source’ no matter what and even sternly rejected.

The colours on the faces of the youths changed, this ‘source’ was simply too important to them but was currently held by an ordinary human, this was akin to a pearl being covered in dirt, it was too wasteful and they wanted to have it for their own.

Li Xiao Man silently stood there, her white clothes and black hair fluttering in the wind as she said: “Don’t you know what consequences will occur for an ordinary human having a ‘source’? It isn’t a fortune, it will bring calamity to you. You are merely a normal human and simply do not have the strength to protect it.”

“Could it be that the few of you wish to snatch it away from me?” Ye Fan kept the ‘source’ as he gazed at the group before him.

Besides Li Xiao Man who continued to be indifferent, the others seemed to have ill-intentions written on their faces as they stared at Ye Fan.

“Earlier the number two expert of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary did not use his might to pressure me, could it be that the

few of your wish to forcefully acquire it for yourself?”

Li Xiao Man spoke without any fluctuations in her tone: “You possessing a ‘source’ is no longer a secret, once this information leaks out, you may be able to avoid trouble for now but sooner or later trouble will come finding you.”

“What you mean to say is, I only have the option to exchange it?”

Li Xiao Man nodded as she continued: “Exchange it with a cultivator and you will no longer need to struggle, happily being a wealthy man, enjoying the riches of life.

“Your strengths aren’t all that powerful, the qi essence of life contained within this ‘source’ isn’t something you people can refine.

Noticing that Ye Fan seemed hesitant, the few people by the side started persuading.

“Although we can’t refine it, we can always pass it to our elders to refine it.”

“That senior earlier is simply refined and is the work of heaven, he is our Purple Sun immortal sanctuary’s number two expert. Previously he was the one who helped junior sister Li regain her youth. If junior sister Li is able to send this piece of ‘source’ to him, she will surely be well rewarded and the few of us will be able to get closer to that senior and listen to his teachings.”

Ye Fan smiled but did not say anything as he gazed at Li Xiao Man.

“That’s right, I’m actually planning to hand this ‘source’ over to that senior.” Li Xiao Man’s expression was calm as she gently adjusted her fringe while silently looked at Ye Fan: “I won’t owe you anything, I’ll make sure you’re satisfied.”

Ye Fan shook his head and indifferently smiled: “Just like the same old you……”

Li Xiao Man did not retort but rather walked forward as he looked at Ye Fan: “I understand that you are very confident and have the capabilities, unwilling to be a normal human. But the reality is as such, your physique cannot cultivate and you can only be a normal human. I wish that you can live a good life as an ordinary human, don’t think too much and come to your senses, give up on those unrealistic dreams. This ‘source’ is really of no use to you. Accepting reality and being a normal person could be a sort of fortune.”

“It seems that we don’t really understand each other.” Ye Fan did not say much.

“Humans always struggle to climb higher……” Li Xiao Man paused before continuing: “Immortals and mortals belong to two different worlds.”

“Immortals and mortals belong to two different worlds?” Ye Fan

laughed as he indifferently replied: “Who knows what the future may hold, I may well appear on your path of cultivation. By then be careful not to be overtaken by this ordinary human.”

By the side, the few youths of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary had weird expressions on their faces, they felt that the two people seemed to have a deeper meaning in their words and were not merely simple neighbours. Especially Ye Fan, he did not seem like an eleven or twelve year old kid.

“No matter what, I won’t be handing this ‘source’ over. Please leave.” Ye Fan stretched out his hand motioning them to leave.

“You……”

The faces of the disciples of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary were ugly and Li Xiao Man turned to leave as she took a final look at Ye Fan: “Accept reality soon and become a normal person.”

Suddenly, a loud disturbance could be heard outside the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary. Sounds of berating could be heard as scarlet rainbows streaked through the sky, cultivators had began fighting in the distance.

“Go! Let’s go take a look!” The few youths within the bamboo forest swiftly headed in the direction of the noise.

Ye Fan’s heart was palpitating, someone was barging into the sect, he instantly thought of the horsemen from the Jiang Family

and he decided to blend into the crowd and take a look, allowing himself to prepare for any situation.

At this moment, the entire Purple Sun immortal sanctuary was in a mess and many cultivators hurried to the main door of the sect. When Ye Fan rushed to the area, he saw that many people were injured and several people were being carried back.

“Which person is so daring, actually barging into my Purple Sun immortal sanctuary. After being discovered the person actually dares to strike?”

“It is an expert horseman riding on a frightening unique beast, he has defeated five experts of our Purple Sun immortal sanctuary and almost managed to escape. However, he is now trapped by our senior elder”

Hearing the discussion of the group, Ye Fan was almost sure that the Jiang Family horseman had managed to find this area.

“Really can’t get rid of them!” This made him frown deeply.

At this moment, a clamor could be heard in front as someone shouted: “Senior elder is indeed formidable actually managing to hold down that fearsome horseman.”

A thirty six to thirty seven year old middle aged man was walking in the air, calmly returning. This was the number two expert of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary and not long ago Ye Fan had seen

him. At this moment he was carrying the unconscious horseman as well as the ferocious beast back as he heavily flung them to the ground: “Lock them in the rock prison.”

“It’s time to leave, the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary has already done a big favour for me. It would be for the best if they continued to imprison this scalding hot sweet potato for another few more days.....” Ye Fan could imagine that when the people of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary learnt of the identity of the horseman, they would surely regret their actions.

Ye Fan left via the main door of the sect, swiftly running as he headed into the distant mountains. At this moment, several people noticed that he was leaving as they exchanged glances before chasing.

“If I’m able to get through this ordeal, I must find a peaceful area to properly cultivate!” Ye Fan had gone through multiple ordeals and sincerely hoped to become stronger, he wanted peerless strength.

After running for tens of miles, Ye Fan gradually felt that something was amiss, as though some people were following him. Their speed was not any slower than him and seemed to be catching up soon. His heart shivered and immediately rushed into a rubble forest, hiding behind a large boulder as he observed.

“It’s him.....”

The person was a twenty six to twenty seven year old, he was

precisely one of Li Xiao Man's senior brothers and not long ago he had been pining for Ye Fan's 'source'. His speed was very quick and in the blink of an eye he had entered the rubble forest.

"I can see you. Come out and leave the 'source' behind. I can allow you to live."

"So you really wish to snatch my 'source'……" Ye Fan continued hiding behind the large boulder without recklessly taking action, this person was not weak otherwise he would not have been able to chase him.

"Even if he gains the 'source', he will definitely not let me go. In that case, I should strike first!" Ye Fan made a decision.

"If you still don't come out and are found by me, don't blame me for not allowing you to continue living." This person was very cautious, he realised that Ye Fan's speed was too fast and had almost left him in the dist. As an ordinary human this was clearly far from normal.

When this person came near the huge boulder, a golden light suddenly shot forward, streaking through the air with a 'Shuaaa' as it chopped towards him.

"Chi!"

Blood splashed out as a head tumbled to the ground. A headless corpse was spurting out blood like a fountain reaching two metres

high before falling to the ground with a ‘Plonk!”.

Ye Fan kept his golden book and at this instant his expression changed, there were several figures coming from behind and speedily getting closer. He hurriedly shot a glance before speeding away, he did not know if Li Xiao Man was amongst the people chasing, the vegetation in the mountainous region was too dense and it was difficult to see clearly.

“I hope you aren’t chasing behind……” Ye Fan did not look back as he rushed into the distance…

# Chapter 91: It's A Small World

Ye Fan swiftly ran, cresting mountains as he moved vigorously like a nimble ape, rapidly like a cheetah. However, he was not able to thoroughly get rid of the people behind and the few figures followed closely behind, their cultivation levels were clearly not weak and were likely to be in the middle stages of the Sea of Bitterness realm.

Suddenly, Ye Fan seemed to concentrate, ahead of him was a ravine and two figures were there blocking the way, it seemed that besides the people chasing behind, there were even two others who went ahead to block the forward route.

At this moment, wanting to turn back to retreat was not an option as he stopped: "Two fellows, not long ago we were still chatting, why are you blocking my way now?"

Ahead, a male and female were blocking the way exit from the ravine and their ages were around twenty five to twenty six years old. The girl's mouth was curled up in a cold smile as she said: "You were doing well within the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary, why did you run? Could it be that you did something that couldn't be seen by others?"

The male walked forward as he looked condescendingly at Ye Fan: "You couldn't have stolen anything right? Otherwise, why would you run away to hurriedly. Indeed, a leopard would never change its spots, the natural roguish behaviour of a beggar, you got your hands dirty even after coming to the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary."

“I think that piece of ‘source’ on you also has questionable origins, it could even have been stolen from our Purple Sun immortal sanctuary. Otherwise, how could a small beggar like you have something so precious.” That female began to draw closer.

Throughout this process, Ye Fan was continually moving forward. He was very natural and did not seem like he was going to run past them, his face was calm but he was laughing coldly in his heart, these two people clearly wanted to steal his ‘source’ but actually came up with ridiculous crimes to his name.

“Big brother and big sister, how could you mock me like this? This piece of ‘source’ is my family inheritance, don’t malign my good name……” While speaking, Ye Fan had already arrived before the two.

At this moment, the people from the back had already gotten close as they loudly shouted: “Careful!”

The warning came too late and Ye Fan had already firmly acted, leaping into the air, his actions were extremely rapid as his two hands flew out like lightning, smashing the heads of the two people together instantly causing them to faint.

These two cultivators would never have imagined that a small beggar of barely eleven or twelve would have such frightening prowess, they were unprepared and in the blink of an eye had fallen to the ground unconscious.

Ye Fan did not use his golden book because there were two people

blocking and he was not confident in killing two people with it instantly. Also, he wanted to create a false impression for the people behind, incorrectly assuming he had killed the first person like this and did not know any cultivating arts.

At this moment, Ye Fan pulled a small crescent blade from the female's body and seemed poised to chop them before a loud shout rang out from behind him.

Ye Fan did not chop down but a cold smile appeared on his face: "I hope this can mislead all of you." He pretended to panic as he continued running into the distance.

Indeed a voice filled with hatred could be heard behind him as someone spoke up: "This bastard is really crafty, Senior brother Yang must have been killed in this manner by him."

"It's fortunate that we were following closely behind, otherwise, Senior brother Wang and Junior sister Zhang would have been killed."

Ye Fan muttered: "It's fine if you guys can't catch up. However, if you continue to pester me, I'll let you have a taste of something good."

He did not have sufficient strength and if he exposed all his trump cards too early, once he was surrounded, the outcome would be disastrous. Now that he had successfully fooled the few people, he suddenly gained additional trump cards he could use against them.

Rushing for another ten odd miles, the three figures finally managed to outflank him and the female in the centre smiled coldly: “You aren’t a disciple of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary, although your speed is decent, you’ve went through many unnecessary paths and still got caught by us.”

The other two male disciples had sinister looks on their faces as one of them said in a cold voice: “Pitiful Senior brother Yang actually got killed by a little beggar, actually falling for the evil schemes of a little bastard, so hateful!”

“If we did not reach in time, I’m afraid that the sneak attack on Senior brother Wang and Junior sister Zhang would have been successful and they would have been killed.” Another male disciple said with a cold face.

Ye Fan pretended to be scared, exposing an expression that an eleven or twelve year old would have as he stuttered: “Esteemed few……. You can’t blame me……. They wanted to kill me……. Steal my ‘source’, I had no choice…… grabbing the chance when their guard was down to knock them……. unconscious.”

The female amongst them had a cold expression and she said in a cold voice: “Senior brother Yang was killed by you……”

“I……. I thought that I had managed to knock him unconscious, who knew that he did not really faint and actually grabbed my legs. I…… was really afraid and took out my blade, accidentally……. Chopped at his neck.” Ye Fan had the expression

of fear that a child would have on his face.

"Accidentally?!" The female's face became sinister and her good looks seemed frosted over: "Accidentally killing senior brother Yang, is this a joke or ridicule?"

"There's nothing more to be said, take the 'source' and kill him, take revenge from senior brother Yang!"

"Killing him immediately seems to be too good for him……"

Cold light flashed through the eyes of the two males, exposing their killing intent.

At this moment, Ye Fan was already silently shifting his feet, although he seemed to be nervous, he was actually adjusting his position such that the two males would be standing in the same straight line.

"Chi!"

At this moment, a blazing golden light flew out from within Ye Fan, like a streak of golden lightning causing the sun above to seem dim, the golden book was dazzling and flew through the air in the blink of an eye.

"Chi! Chi!"

Two soft sounds could be heard as the two males died aggrieved, their bodies were separated at their waists as fresh blood spurted high into the air. Their upper bodies fell to the ground as blood continued to spurt and their lower bodies stood there rigidly for a second before falling into the pool of blood.

“You.....” The female was shocked but she managed to react speedily, immediately releasing a purple divine net and threw it towards Ye Fan.

“Dang, Dang”

The golden book was like a golden sun, golden raging flames seemed to be igniting and combusting as he rushed towards that purple net, the two collided and emitted a loud resounding noise.

The purple divine net began to break as it fell to the ground, the golden book rushed by with a ‘Shuaaa’, a soft ‘Chi!’ sounded out as the female’s head was lopped off.

Ye Fan wiped the cold sweat from his forehead, if he had not hidden his trump card and successfully tricked the few people, he could have been the one lying in a pool of blood.

“Thinking of stealing my ‘source’, your deaths cause me no guilt.” After simply handling the matters here, Ye Fan sped away, not daring to tarry any longer.

He had just rushed away barely hundred odd metres when a loud

shout suddenly rang from behind. There were still several people and they were hot on his heels. Ye Fan hurriedly turned his head to glance and his expression became rigid as he actually saw Li Xiao Man!

He felt an indescribable feeling well up within him, they had shared a romantic past but it had ended and became passing smoke, but this scene before him was out of his expectations.

They could be cold to each other or even act as strangers when they passed by but the current situation……

“Is she chasing to kill me? Or is she trying to stop her senior brothers and sisters? I hope it’s the latter…..” Ye Fan muttered. Their relationship had ended and could no longer cause ripples in his heart, but if it was the former reason for her coming after him, that would be too cold blooded.

Ye Fan continued to run through the mountains as though he were traversing through flat land, his speed was extremely fast when suddenly the sounds of bells ringing could be heard from the back, reverberating through the mountains.

“This sound is coming from the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary……” Ye Fan looked back and realised that the few figures had stopped after hearing the bells as the swiftly headed back.

“The sound of bells that could travel tens of miles…… upon hearing it they immediately retreated, could the Purple Sun

immortal sanctuary be gathering all the disciples back to the sect?" Ye Fan's mind was churning and instantly thought of a possibility, something extraordinary must have occurred within the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary, it was most likely that they had found out about identity of the Jiang Family horseman.

"Not good!" He began to swiftly flee.

Upon passing by a river, he took out the 'source' and tossed it into the riverbed.

"The number two expert of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary can sense the presence of the 'source', the other experts must also be able to do so. I can't carry it on my body, I'll collect it in the future." Ye Fan was afraid that the experts of the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary would aid the horseman of the Jiang Family, if that was the case it would indeed be troublesome.

"I can't continue running through the mountains, I shall act contrary to their expectations." Ye Fan swiftly ran and quickly came before a large waterfall where he rushed in and stuck to the stone wall, allowing the flow of water to continually fall on his body.

Although his cultivation was not very high, he could still hold his breath for long amounts of time and if he really needed to, he could always stick his head out for a breath of fresh air.

In this manner, Ye Fan hid for three full days, within this period several people flew past the area but no one noticed the waterfall

below. Thereafter, Ye Fan swapped to several different areas to hide and stayed within the deep mountains for half a month without being noticed by anyone.

This night, Ye Fan silently left the mountainous region where Purple Sun immortal sanctuary was located.

Several days later, he appeared several thousand miles away, thoroughly leaving that area behind.

Thinking back to his experiences at Purple Sun immortal sanctuary, what left the greatest impression on Ye Fan was Li Xiao Man's indifferent expression, persuading him not to be unrealistic, accept reality and to become a normal person and giving one a feeling of being lofty.

"I should get rid of the horseman from the Jiang Family, I'll have to quickly find a safe place to cultivate."

Ye Fan could not believe it when he saw a horseman from the Jiang Family above the city he was in three days later.

"Really can't shirk them off, the problem isn't that piece of 'source.'" Ye Fan placed all the things on his body before him. The piece of white jade pendant that elder Wu Qing Feng gave to him should not be a problem. There was also a piece of broken jade that seemed like a worn-out rock, the unscrupulous cultivator had given it to him and it should not be a problem either.

Thereafter, he took out a Bodhi seed that was the size of a walnut and muttered: “Could it be this?”

If he threw away this Bodhi seed, it would be such a waste because it could help one comprehend the Dao. Ye Fan had never treated it like a spiritual treasure and always treated it as a seed of the divine tree, now that he thought about it, he felt that this could be where the problem laid.

“Maybe the precious treasure that Jiang Yi Chen felt was this Bodhi seed……”

Not long after, Ye Fan went into a restaurant and ordered some food as he prepared to eat.

“It’s really a small world……” Suddenly, an ancient voice rang out from beside Ye Fan’s ear and a skinny and emaciated old man with a head full of white hair appeared before him like a ghost.

“Elder Han!” Ye Fan was shocked to the point of almost falling from his chair, when it rains, it pours, he actually met him under these circumstances.

“It seems we do have quite an affinity with each other, I was just looking for you.” Elder Han of the Ling Xu immortal sanctuary sat opposite him.

“Why is elder Han looking for me?”

Elder Han was thin like a dried piece of firewood, his flesh was shrivelled and seemed like there was only a layer of skin over bone, together with his white hair that covered his face, his appearance was terrifying as he said in a sinister voice: “I’ve prepared endless amounts of spiritual medicine for you but was unable to find you, who knew that we would meet again.”

“Prepared many spiritual medicines for me?”

“You’re the primary medicine, the other spiritual medicines are there for supplementary purposes.” Elder Han said calmly.

“F***, you damn old man!” Ye Fan slapped the table as he could no longer endure it anymore.

# Chapter 92: Primary Medicine

Elder Han did not become angry and was unflustered as he continued to pour himself a cup of tea, moving aside the white hair covering his face, lifting the tea cup to gently sip.

In this moment, Ye Fan felt a bone-chilling cold.

Elder Han's fingers were like strips of iron, dried up and only old skin was wrapped around his finger bones. As he shifted the hair from his face, the exposed face made one's goosebumps stand on end, like a piece of waste paper that was kneaded and wrinkled, many creases without any lustre. What was most eerie were his gums and teeth that were exposed from his thin lips, completely black without any sign of blood or life, even his tongue was dried up.

"Follow me and let's head off together." Elder Han finished the cup of tea before gently placing it down, talking in an unflustered manner, his voice not containing a single ounce of vitality.

Ye Fan really wished to send the golden book flying out but he did not act rashly, he knew deep down that the difference between cultivators of different realms was simply too wide.

"Elder Han, acting in this manner aren't you afraid of the wrath of heaven? Using a living person to make medicine, even if it were people from the same sect, I'm afraid they would not be able to tolerate this……" Ye Fan talked while trying to think of a plan to cope with the situation, if he really fell into the others' grasp, that

would certainly be more frightening than death.

"I've long made preparations, no one will know of this." Elder Han was like a piece of dried up wood as he silently sat opposite him, his calm demeanour seemed to become more sinister and frightening.

Ye Fan took out the jade pendant that elder Wu Qing Feng had given to him and replied: "If you kill me, elder Wu Qing Feng will know."

Elder Han gently waved his finger and a sinister aura pressured down, thereafter the piece of jade disintegrated with a 'Bang!', the piercing cold did not disperse for a long time.

Elder Han said indifferently: "This place is thousands of miles from the Ling Xu immortal sanctuary, I've destroyed the jade but elder Wu Qing Feng will not have any inkling of this." Having said this, he laughed sinisterly: "Thinking about it, you're actually quite astute for a young fellow, back then I lightly patted you and secretly left a mark on you, wanting to catch you in the future. Who knew that you would actually take off so quickly and run out of my perception radius, only being found by me today."

"You damned old fogey……"

"We should leave." Elder Han stood up, the people in the restaurant avoided him like a malicious spirit as they opened a path for him.

Ye Fan was as nimble as a panther and wanted to escape from the window.

“Why bother doing such useless actions.” Elder Han stretched out a dried up palm as he restrained Ye Fan, using an immense amount of force to drag him down the restaurant.

Different realms were separated by a chasm that was a moat between heaven and earth, simply impossible to overcome and Ye Fan’s heart was in shock, the other party had restrained him and he could not gather any strength in his body.

Arriving outside the city, elder Han mumbled: “I’ll go visit an old friend first, he previously agreed to help me collect various spiritual medicines, now that I think about it the timing is about right. Since I’ve found the primary medicine, once I’m back I can sacrifice it in the cauldron to refine the medicine.”

Ye Fan quietly gazed at the sky, he was looking for the figure of the Jiang Family horseman, he would rather be killed by the Jiang Family than be refined into medicine while alive.

Half a day passed and the sun was setting, elder Han brought Ye Fan into a mountainous region and they were almost reaching their destination.

“Why isn’t the horseman from the Jiang Family appearing……” Ye Fan was feeling extremely anxious.

“The enemy is here……” Elder Han rushed into a valley as he shouted, the rumbled noise reverberated through the mountains.

At this moment, a figure appeared in the sky as it swiftly rushed to this area. The horseman of the Jiang Family had always been within the area, attracted by the noise he swiftly rushed over.

The horseman was extremely strong and released a frightening killing intent and battle hunger, his entire body was covered in armour and the ferocious beast he was riding on rushed down, causing a gale to form which sent the surrounding vegetation flying away.

“Who goes there?” Elder Han pulled Ye Fan as he swiftly retreated.

At the same time, from the valley came an old man with flowing white hair whose face looked treacherous, one look and a person could tell he was not a good person.

“Leave this youth behind!” The horseman of the Jiang Family was extremely cold as his gaze swept past elder Han and the old man who walked out from the valley.

Elder Han could feel the strength of the other party but he still decided not to let Ye Fan go as he rushed towards the old man at the entrance of the valley shouting: “Quickly, assist me!”

“Chi!”

The horseman of the Jiang Family acted decisively as a streak of bloody light slashed through the air, it was a blood coloured metal spear that released a bloody light, it was unknown how much blood it had soaked from countless cultivators as it released a frightening energy fluctuation.

“Klang!”

Elder Han released a green wooden ruler as a jade light flashed, colliding but instantly being sent flying away. His entire person trembled as he pulled Ye Fan and swiftly retreated, rushing towards the entrance of the valley.

At this moment, the old man at the entrance of the valley acted, releasing a bronze mirror as it shone, dazzling lights emitted from the mirror and shot towards the horseman of the Jiang Family.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

At the same time, Elder Han released twelve green wooden swords which flew out in a profound manner, locking down all directions and trapping the horseman within.

“Child’s play!” The horseman did not have any fear on his face as he urged his mount into the sky, dodging the rays from the mirror as the blood coloured metal spear swept away the twelve green wooden swords.

“This person is too strong, don’t hold anything back, get rid of him!” Elder Han was extremely nervous and sealed Ye Fan’s abilities while tossing him into the valley.

“Bang!”

Ye Fan fell to the ground and did not dare to tarry for even a second as he swiftly circulated the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture, attempting to break the seal. It was fortunate that elder Han had acted in haste without knowing of Ye Fan’s capabilities, the seal was very simple and the mystical arts from the Dao Scripture swiftly broke through the seal.

“Fight it out to your hearts content, it’ll be best if both parties become severely injured!” Ye Fan was within the deepest parts of the valley and climbed sheer cliffs and precipitous rocks to get out of the place. He rapidly rushed out of the mountainous region, seeing a torrential large river, he did not hesitate as he immediately plunged in.

Sinking into the large river, untold number of miles passed till the stars in the sky appeared before Ye Fan got back to shore. In the wilderness, there were no signs of human habitation and he rested for a moment before taking big strides into the distance.

An hour later, lights could be seen ahead and he was not far from a city.

“Hahaha……” Suddenly, a cold sinister laugh that could make one’s hair stand on end resounded from behind him.

Ye Fan was shocked and did not look back as he immediately dashed forward. However, the cold sinister laugh constantly revolved around him like the cries of an owl, resounding near and far.

“Old fogey, your life is really tough!” Ye Fan stopped, he knew that he could no longer flee.

Within the darkness, elder Han’s dried up figure appeared as he floated out like a spirit, his left arm was already chopped off and his hair was disheveled, traces of blood could be seen all over his body and he seemed like a malicious spirit in the night.

Ye Fan felt chills from the top of his head to the soles of his feet, this old fellow was not killed by the horseman of the Jiang Family and he was now at an impasse!

“It’s a pity my old friend was chopped into meat pulp, I used all my abilities to barely escape……” Elder Han’s voice was extremely cold, like a malicious ghost that was gritting its teeth.

“He didn’t take your life, that’s such a pity.” Ye Fan mocked.

Two cold lights shot out from Elder Han and he silently floated over, his withered body released an aura of death.

Ye Fan wished to wait for the right distance before releasing the golden book, staking his life on the line with that single blow.

However, he did not have such a chance as a streak of green light lit up the night sky, like a ghostly fire as it shrouded him and sealed him. In the darkness, Elder Han's body which seemed like a dried up piece of wood drew closer, his white hair was flying, revealing his wrinkled face, it was extremely malevolent and terrifying, his two eyes seemed to be released a sinister light.

"I like fresh lives, your body is vigorous and full of youthful energy, i think the blood must be exceptionally sweet……" Elder Han grabbed Ye Fan's hand as he brought him soaring to the sky.

Ye Fan felt stupefied, he had used all means and ways, fleeing for days on end but finally could not escape from this fate of death.

"I left a mark on your body, there's no way for you to flee!" A lush green light flew out of elder Han's body and binded Ye Fan as they disappeared into the horizon.

He did not return to the Ling Xu immortal sanctuary but rather brought Ye Fan to a wild mountainous region within the Yan State, entering a cave situated by an overhanging cliff as they travelled deep into the mountain.

"Don't be afraid, death isn't painful……" Elder Han's eyes flashed with a terrifying light.

The cave dwelling within the belly of the mountain was hidden extremely deep, the path was inlaid with several bright pearls which lit the way. Elder Han carried Ye Fan and swiftly came to a wide stone room, the smell of medicinal plants was in the air and

over ten medicinal cauldrons were placed there, each other a metre tall, carved with complicated patterns yet simple and unadorned.

"I've finally collected all the required spiritual medicines, hahaha……" Elder Han cackled, his voice was extremely jarring like a malicious spirit crying, making one's scalp feel numb.

Within the stone room, besides medicinal cauldrons there were also over ten medicinal cabinets. Elder Han opened them all and the scent of medicines assailed the nostrils.

"Look at what I've prepared for you, they are all priceless spiritual medicines!" He opened a wooden case and immediately a pigeon-sized lotus seed could be seen, black and translucent, as though he were carved from black jade as a dense aroma drifted out and seemed to seep into the bone.

"Do you know what this is? This is the lotus seed of a Black Jade Divine Lotus, only one seed appears every five hundred years and its value is simply inconceivable, it contains endless amounts of the qi essence of life.

Elder Han placed the wooden case down and opened a simple and unadorned jade case, immediately a resplendent green aura seemed to swirl, a green colour fruit the size of a chicken egg was there, it seemed to have been carved from green jade and a gentle light circulated around it, sparkling and translucent as it flashed.

"Do you know what this is? This is the fruit from the Green Jade Snow Lotus of legend, it grows on the peak of snow mountains that

are tens of thousands of miles high, it has not seen sunlight from a thousand years and frightening demons protect it, it took me eight years before finally being lucky enough to pick one.

All these items contain exceptionally strong qi essences of life, if Ye Fan was able to absorb them, his golden sea of bitterness would definitely become much bigger.

Elder Han continued to walk forward and picked up another wooden case, upon opening it a faint red light shot forth. A strange nine leafed grass which seemed to be carved from red jade was within, sparkling and translucent as its unique fragrance filled the air.

“Do you know what this is? This is the Nine Leafed Phoenix Grass of legend!” Elder Han was very excited as he continued: “It’s rumoured that only areas which have been stained with the blood of a phoenix have a chance to grow such a divine grass. I spent over ten years of time, leaving Yan State and walking through endless ancient lands and inheritances before finally finding this single one, it’s price is astronomical and is a spiritual treasure rarely seen in the world!”

Elder Han constantly opened cases and placed over ten different types of spiritual medicines, each one was unbelievably precious and rare, their value was incalculable!

Within the cave dwelling it was brilliant and resplendent, the myriad of spiritual medicines released different coloured lights, releasing a fragrance that deeply penetrated into the heart.

Even under such circumstances, Ye Fan felt dazzled, this rare spiritual medicines were too precious and if he could absorb them, his cultivation would surely advance by leaps and bounds.

Elder Han had a sinister laugh as he said: “Don’t be so envious, I’ll be placing all of them together with you in the same medicinal cauldron to simmer and refine.”

“You’ve already picked so many spiritual medicines to extend your lifespan, they should be sufficient. Why do you still need to capture me?”

“If I’m merely refining a Yang Returning Pill, that would certainly be enough. But since you’ve eaten the divine fruit of legends and drank from the divine spring, my demands naturally had to be increased.”

# Chapter 93: Refining One Into Medicine

“What pill are you refining?” Ye Fan was doing his best to delay time, even now he did not wish to give up.

“Naturally it’s a celestial pill that can allow one to overcome the sea of bitterness, cross the spiritual bridge and reach the other shore.” Elder Han could see through his intentions and coldly smiled: “Stop trying to delay time, no one will save you. Just set your mind at ease and be ready to be the primary medicine to be refined.”

“Aren’t you afraid of that horseman appearing once again?” Ye Fan did not panic nor was he terrified as he calmly answered: “Maybe you still don’t know that person’s identity.”

Elder Han’s expression did not change as he asked: “What background does he have?”

“He comes from an ancient aristocratic family, the Jiang Family.” Having said this, Ye Fan lightly sighed: “You’ve created a calamity for Ling Xu immortal sanctuary. You may not know my real identity, I have dealings with people of the Jiang Family and that horseman was looking for me……”

Ye Fan pretended to speak earnestly as he attempted to preserve his life.

Elder Han’s expression did not change as he quietly listened before replying in a cold voice: “Just you? How could you possibly

have any dealings with the Jiang Family."

"I've previously saved a young girl of the Jiang Family who was estranged from the family, thus forming this good karma with them. If you don't believe it, you can go to the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary to investigate and check if I'm lying. Not long ago I went with the people of the Jiang Family to raid the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary."

"This....." The expression on elder Han's face finally changed, Ling Xu immortal sanctuary was one of the six immortal sanctuaries within Yan State, they naturally knew the incident of the Jiang Family barging into the Yan Xia immortal sanctuary.

Elder Han grit his teeth: "No matter what you say, you won't be spared."

Ye Fan had a serious and stern expression as he replied: "Elder Han you have to consider the repercussions of offending an ancient aristocratic family. Don't think that you can hide it from everyone, you recently exchanged blows with the horseman of the Jiang Family and they will definitely be able to find clues."

"You little bastard aren't that old but really have many schemes, don't think you can fool me like this. You're looking down on me." Elder Han suddenly laughed in a sinister manner: "One will leak information if they speak too much, I finally understand what's going on. That horseman is indeed from the Jiang Family, not long ago he barged into the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary and must have gone dare to capture you!"

Elder Han had lived for a long time and was experienced, he could link all the events that had occurred recently and made his deduction.

Ye Fan was startled in his heart: “Elder Han, you’re assuming too much. Just wait for calamity to strike!”

“Little bastard you can really keep your cool, till now you still try to trick me. Just wait till I refine you.” Elder Han once again laughed as he lifted Ye Fan: “Don’t worry, there will be no outsiders interfering. This area has been covered with endless Dao Inscriptions, since we stepped into the cave dwelling, we have been separated from the outside world and no one will be able to find this place.”

The horseman of the Jiang Family was searching for Ye Fan and this made Elder Han puzzled and concerned. He had snatched the meat from another person’s mouth and he began to carefully search Ye Fan’s body.

“There’s only useless stuff on his body.” He first removed the jade which had a corner of it broken off and carefully inspected it before throwing it to the ground.

Ye Fan cursed at the unscrupulous cultivator in his heart, that damned fatty had promised that this piece of jade would save him at a critical juncture but it was clearly useless.

“Duan De, Duan De, your granddaddy, so lacking in morals!”

“What’s this?” Elder Han held the Bodhi seed and carefully inspected the Buddha picture on it: “Naturally occurring vein lines forming a picture……. Why does this baldy look so familiar, I seem to recall seeing this baldy from somewhere outside the eastern badlands.”

“Baldy……” Ye Fan was speechless.

Elder Han kept the Bodhi Seed before looking towards Ye Fan: “Alright, it’s time to send you into the medicinal cauldron.”

“Elder Han, I won’t live for much longer, could I possibly have a full meal first?”

“Don’t waste your effort, even if you drag out the time, what’s the point? Just hurry and go in.” Elder Han lifted Ye Fan before the medicinal cauldron: “Choose one, this is the only option available to you.”

Ye Fan knew that he had no chance and began to loudly curse: “Old fogey, screw your ancestors, send a greeting to your ancestors and know that i had intimate relations with eighteen generations of your female relatives…”

No ripples could be seen on the expression of elder Han as though he heard nothing and immediately threw Ye Fan into a medicinal cauldron. Thereafter, he walked to the corner of the stone room and began to carry several large porcelain pots and began to pour some unknown liquid into the medicinal cauldron.

“What is this?” Ye Fan could smell a fragrance drifting up from the liquid.

“This liquid is refined from several different kinds of medicinal plants, it’s something that cannot be lacked when refining medicine. If one continues to refine and purify it, it will eventually become the hundred plants extract.” While speaking, elder Han had poured all the liquid within the large porcelain pots into the medicinal cauldron.

Elder Han then took the precious spiritual medicines from the medicinal cabinet: “I’ve finally gathered all the necessary spiritual medicines, hopefully it can be successfully refined into the divine panacea that I require.”

Having said this piece, he first took out the lotus seed of the Black Jade Divine Lotus, the pigeon-sized lotus seed was black and translucent, sparkling as it released a black light, a fragrance seemed to directly enter a person’s organs, this fragrance alone made one feel awake and refreshed.

“Little bastard, don’t you wish you could just swallow it in a single mouth?” Elder Han coldly smiled as he stared at Ye Fan: “Don’t harbour unrealistic thoughts.” Saying this, he placed the lotus seed into the medicinal cauldron as he removed a dagger and pierced it into Ye Fan’s left arm with a ‘Chi’ before plucking it out, allowing fresh blood to gurgle forth.

“You……”

“Refine medicine, refining medicine, you are the primary medicine, all your essence is within your flesh and blood. Naturally your fresh blood has to flow out first to be sacrificed in the cauldron. Elder Han had shown an extremely cruel side as he held his broken arm: “In order to find you, I’ve lost an arm. Naturally I have to properly sacrifice and refine you, there can only be success, failure is unacceptable!”

“Chi!”

Blood splattered as elder Han used the dagger to pierce Ye Fan’s right arm, blood gurgled out as the medicinal cauldron was immediately dyed red by the blood. Elder Han’s expression was ferocious and no longer filled with a death aura, his eyes seemed to shine with a sinister light as he also pierced Ye Fan’s legs.

Ye Fan’s four limbs were in excruciating pain and his face was becoming pale.

“Don’t think that any miracle will occur!” Elder Han said this and immediately pierced the dagger through Ye Fan’s chest as he said in a sinister voice: “I won’t pierce your heart causing you to die immediately. Soaking in the liquid from hundreds of medicinal plants, I believe you will be able to live for a long time. I will make sure you stay conscious for the longest time to slowly boil and refine you into the divine medicine which I require.”

Elder Han was like a malicious spirit as his dried up tongue licked the traces of blood on the dagger, seemingly exceptionally

ferocious as he continued: “Such a sweet and beautiful taste, I really look forward to the moment when the pill is completed.”

“Damned old fogey…….” Ye Fan grit his teeth as he glared, he felt intense pain throughout his body and could feel his vitality slowly slipping away.

At this moment, Elder Han opened a simple and unadorned jade case, retrieving the fruit of the Green Jade Snow Lotus which seemed to be formed from green jade and placed it into the medicinal cauldron. The green splendour even made the liquid within seem dazzling.

“Little bastard, be content. Being able to be refined in the same cauldron as so many spiritual medicines, this is the good fortune you have gathered for ten generations.”

“Fortune your granddaddy, check with the females of your entire family……” Ye Fan cursed, he wanted to slice elder Han alive, his blood was continually flowing out and he could feel his vitality slowly drying up.

Elder Han then took the Nine Leafed Phoenix Grass which was like red jade, flashing with a scarlet light, dazzling and resplendent. According to legend only soil that had been stained with the blood of a phoenix could allow such a rare spiritual medicine to grow.

After placing the Nine Leafed Phoenix Grass into the medicinal cauldron, he suddenly frowned as he muttered: “This won’t do, if I

throw all the spiritual medicines in and it fails, that would be like using a wicker basket to draw water, achieving nothing in the end……." He hesitated: "I think I should first boil and refine the primary medicine, if it's successful I will add the other spiritual medicines."

He only placed three of the precious spiritual medicines in before stopping.

The medicinal cabinet was glowing and a fragrance assailed the nostrils as a myriad of unique spiritual medicines had varying colours swirling around them, each not one whit inferior to the three medicinal plants that had been placed inside the cauldron.

"I'll first refine these three spiritual medicines together with the primary medicine and see the effect." Elder Han made this decision as he kept all the other spiritual medicines which were glowing with a divine splendour.

"Little bastard, do you have any last words?" Elder Han had a mocking expression on his face as he took the lid of the cauldron from the side and prepared to shut the lid.

Ye Fan was extremely weak as he spoke up: "Old fogey, can you bang your head and kill yourself with this medicinal cauldron?"

"Bang!"

Elder Han placed the bronze lid on the medicinal cauldron before

beginning to kindle a fire and refine the medicine. A normal fire could not refine a spiritual pill and he kindled a ‘Demonfire’, it was milky white as a silver white sheen could be seen flickering and jumping about under the large cauldron.

The reason why he dug such a secretive cave dwelling was precisely because of this ‘Demonfire’ that could be found here, this was the strongest fiery blaze that someone of his level could control.

“Little bastard, in order to find you I actually lost a left arm. I will refine you for seven days and seven nights, making you endure all the torture before refining you into a pill!” Elder Han held his broken arm as he said in a sinister voice.

# Chapter 94: The Ancients Did Not Deceive

Silver coloured flames flashed, continually released from the ground, emitting a gentle glow with fluctuations of spiritual energy, the pure light continually entering into the medicinal cauldron.

The entire stone room was bathed in a pure light, as though a faint mist were swirling about, it was hazy all around as though it were the dwelling of an immortal, spiritual energy dense in the air.

This Demonfire was not ordinary, besides having a suitable temperature, more importantly it contained spiritual force which could dissolve medicinal plants, congealing the qi essence of life to form a spiritual pill.

The silver coloured flame continued to dance, the bronze medicinal cauldron was shrouded by the milky white spiritual energy and seemed to to be alive, the engravings on it also seemed to come alive.

Elder Han silently sat by the side as he closed his eyes, guarding the medicinal cauldron as his withered up body did not release a single sign of life.

At this moment, sealed within the medicinal cauldron, Ye Fan had a feeling of intense pain. His four limbs were pierced through and even his chest had a hole, blood was flowing out and all five wounds were serious, he was beginning to feel weaker and weaker. However, as Elder han had mentioned, he would not be able to die

within a short period of time. Under the nourishment of the jade coloured fluid, his wounds were being nourished and the blood loss was slowly stopping.

At this point the cauldron was becoming hotter and hotter, bubbles started appearing on the surface of the medicinal fluid as the temperature continued to rise. Ye Fan who was submerged till his mouth wanted to struggle but his body had been sealed by Elder Han and could not make a single movement.

“This method of dying is too depressing, I’m not reconciled with this!”

“Slurp Slurp”

Ye Fan began to drink the medicinal fluid in big gulps, he could only move his mouth now, if he could move his hands as well he would definitely take the Nine Leafed Phoenix Grass which was flashing with a scarlet light nearby and swallow it.

Because he had lost a lot of blood, Ye Fan’s consciousness began to grow blurry and he bit his lips: “I cannot die!”

He had lost a large amount of blood and if it were a normal person they would have already passed away. Although his wounds were nourished by the medicinal fluid and his bleeding had stopped, he was teetering on the edge and had entered a sort of semi-conscious state.

“I can’t totally faint……. otherwise I will really die…….” Ye Fan was groggy, half awake and half blur as he struggled to hold on.

In this disorientated state, many familiar people and scenes flashed through his mind, his parents with they head full of white hair urging him home, male cousin who had a shotgun marriage requesting his presence at his wedding, eighteen year old female cousin who managed to get into her ideal educational institution as she stretched her hand to request a gift from him, good friends reprimanding him for disappearing for such a long time……

The relatives and friends of his old hometown began to float through Ye Fan’s mind, many people were loudly shouting as they stretched their hands towards him, wanting to pull him over. He continued to run forward but simply could not get closer to those people.

Thereafter, the people and events of this world began to appear within his mind one after another, Pang Bo who was emitting a frightening demonic aura bitterly struggling, little Ting Ting’s teary eyes within the Jiang Family, Elder Han’s sinister cold smile……

Even the figure of Li Xiao Man also flashed through his mind, from hoping to see each other from an ocean’s distance apart to hoping to forget one another before finally treating him coldly, telling him that immortals and ordinary humans were of two worlds and he should not have unrealistic expectations and be a decent ordinary human.

“I can’t die…… I need to go home……. There are so many

relatives and friends waiting for me……” Ye Fan’s consciousness was blurry and he seemed to be raving deliriously.

Elder Han opened his eyes as he said: “Slowly savor the taste of death.”

At this point the spiritual energy released by the Demonfire under the medicinal cauldron increased, the pure silver flames danced about and actually shrouded the entire bronze medicinal cauldron.

Within the medicinal cauldron, the jade coloured medicinal fluid was releasing endless amounts of bubbles, surround Ye Fan as streaks of silver lights seemed to circulate, this was the unique spiritual aspect of the Demonfire.

Just as Ye Fan was about to lose his consciousness, a fine trickle appeared within his innermost being, several hundred ancient words began to float by, stabilising his mind allowing him to slowly come to his senses.

Ye Fan gradually began to gain clarity and he felt shocked, the previous time when the horseman of the Jiang Family had severely injured him causing him to faint, this ancient scripture had allowed him to come to his senses, it was also aiding him now.

At this moment, the temperature within the medicinal cauldron was becoming hotter and the jade coloured medicinal fluid seemed like it would boil at any time. Ye Fan did not have any other option but to mouth the ancient scripture as he grit his teeth and

endured.

Suddenly, he felt a unique transformation as streaks of silver light began to rush into his body, swimming throughout his body filled with vitality.

That was the spiritual aspect contained within the Demonfire, it could dissolve medicinal plants, congealing the qi essence of life to form spiritual pills. At this moment it treated Ye Fan as a spiritual medicine and rushed into his sealed and immobile body, the sealed qi essence of life within began to come alive as the seal which Elder Han placed on him slowly loosened.

Finally, Ye Fan was elated and startled to find that he could actually move, his shackles had been removed! Elder Han would have never expected that the unique spiritual force within the Demonfire would have broke through his seal.

At this very moment, the medicinal fluid within the medicinal cauldron began to boil and Ye Fan could feel an intense pain as though his flesh were lacerated, he hurriedly circulated the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture as large amounts of the qi essence of life began to be released from his sea of bitterness, flowing to his four limbs and all the bones in his body, his body began to flash with dots of brilliance, blocking the boiling medicinal fluid.

Ye Fan was silent and still as he sat down, continually circulating the mystical arts within the Dao Scripture causing the large amounts of qi essence of life within the medicinal cauldron to gather and be absorbed into his body.

An hour later, Ye Fan opened his eyes as two streaks of cold electricity appeared within the medicinal cauldron, stretching his hand, he grabbed the lotus seed formed from the Black Jade Divine Lotus.

The lotus seed was huge, its form like a pigeon's egg as its entire body was sparkling and translucent as though it were carved from black jade, lights flashed as a misty splendour began to swirl, causing Ye Fan's palm to become brightly lit.

This rare spiritual medicine could not possibly be dissolved in a short amount of time otherwise Elder Han would not have needed seven days and seven nights to smelt and refine the pill.

Ye Fan placed the lotus seed within his mouth as he gently chewed before slowly swallowing, his mouth seemed to be filled with innumerable pieces of broken divine jade that were flashing, large amounts of the qi essence of life was emitted and his mouth seemed to contain a divine object, its splendour absolutely dazzling.

Beside the bronze medicinal cauldron, elder Han seemed to have heard something as he sat there motionlessly, an emotionless cold smile floated on his face: "Can't hold on for much longer? Steeped within the raw fluids of life, with the temperature continually rising the skin will lacerate, causing unimaginable pain, within a short period of time you will cease to breathe."

Elder Han did not have a shred of mercy or sympathy within him

as he closed his eyes once again returning to his silent and desolate state.

Within the bronze medicinal cauldron, Ye Fan had no expression on his face, qi essence continued to bubble within his mouth as black lights flashed, the lotus seed had been chewed apart and swallowed. Thereafter, he closed his eyes as he began to calmly circulate the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture, a dazzling glow flashing around his entire being.

Two hours passed as the golden light within Ye Fan's sea of bitterness suddenly expanded vigorously, all the qi and blood he had lost were all recovered as the qi essence surged. At the same time, the golden sea of bitterness began to surge, almost causing the howling sea and frightening imagery to appear!

Ye Fan used his willpower to forcefully suppress it, stopping the sea of bitterness from establishing further. At the same time, he purposefully made hissing noises to attract the attention of Elder Han causing him to open the lid of the cauldron allowing him to send the golden book out and deal a lightning fast blow.

"What's that sound? Why does it seem like waves surging?" Elder Han opened his eyes and a strange expression appeared on his face as he muttered: "When exceptional spiritual pills are formed, certain unique events will follow it, could it be that the refining of my pill will not only be successful but also be of the best quality?"

Ye Fan grit his teeth, he had hopes that Elder Han would open the lid of the cauldron but hearing his words, he decided to allow a portion of the indistinct sound of waves to transmit out of the bronze cauldron.

“It really is the sound of waves……” Elder Han had an irritated expression on his face: “People of the past have met with such a scene when refining pills, it’s rumoured that when the noise reaches a crescendo, it will be ear-splittingly loud as though there were a real surging and swelling sea, could it be that I’m about to make an unparalleled exceptional pill?”

“Your granddaddy!” Ye Fan wanted to curse, Elder Han did not have any intention of opening the lid of the cauldron and his sure-kill blow could not be used.

“Kaboom……”

Ye Fan began to allow the noise to grow louder, as the sounds of the howling sea surged, golden light expanded vigorously from his body as the sea of bitterness gently established.

“The ancients truly did not deceive me!” By the side of the bronze medicinal cauldron, Elder Han repeatedly sighed with feeling: “This Han has been refining pills throughout his life, facing this unique scene for the first time, this must definitely be an unparalleled good pill.”

Ye Fan could no longer suppress it as the frantic qi essence within his sea of bitterness exploded, causing angry waves to form in his golden sea of bitterness, the frightening sounds of the howling sea thoroughly exploded.

In an instant, divine lights blazed as raging waves repeatedly

surged, stormy seas overflowed to the heavens as deafening sounds boomed!

As though a magnificent army or thousands of men and horses were marching or innumerable meteorites crashing into the ground.

Within the frightening sounds of the howling sea, sounds of thunder could also be heard, lightning streaked through the sky interweaving with the sky above the golden sea of bitterness, the scene and sounds were astonishing.

At this moment, Ye Fan was extremely nervous and his golden book flashed, he was ready to release it at any moment to kill his enemy!

However, Elder Han had an agitated expression as he said: “The ancients truly did not deceive me..... the legends are real!”

He had already stood up as he walked around the medicinal cauldron, elated to the point of wanting to dance with his hands and feet.

“The sound of the howling sea, the roaring of thunder, identical to that recorded in ancient texts. According to legend, these are the signs that appear when an unparalleled pill is refined!”

Ye Fan did not know whether to laugh or be angry, he was focused and prepared to kill but elder Han did not open the lid and

even came up with such a reason to fool himself.

"Your granddaddy!" Ye Fan cursed in his heart before calming down and earnestly began to establish his golden sea of bitterness.

"The ancients truly did not deceive me……" Elder Han continually danced in his excitement.

# Chapter 95: A Splendid And Magnificent Scenery

Elder Han had never been as carefree in his life before, the wrinkles on his weathered face seemed to melt away as he excitedly danced, while he laughed loudly.

At this moment, Ye Fan was already calm without any ripples as he focused on cultivating, establishing his sea of bitterness.

The sound of waves continued, the howling sea shook the heavens, thunder roared and lightning flashed, the loud sounds reverberated throughout the stone room, Elder Han's heart was filled with expectation, urgently wanting seven days to go by quickly.

The bronze medicinal cauldron was shrouded by the silver fire and continued to absorb the spiritual aspect of the flame, a pure glow was emitted and spread into the surroundings, causing the entire stone room to be misty.

This continued for four hours before the sound of waves gradually faded away, the roaring sounds of thunder also gradually dissipated and the inside of the bronze medicinal cauldron finally calmed down, only the silver flame continued to burn brightly.

Elder Han was not concerned, he had to smelt and refine for seven days and nights before opening the lid of the cauldron, the unique scene could not possibly go on for that long a period of time, his heart had long been set on the notion that this was an

unparalleled pill because this was exactly the same as what was recorded in ancient texts.

In this manner, a day and night had passed. The medicinal cauldron maintained its calm and only the Demonfire continued to dance as the milky white glow continued to flicker.

Within the bronze medicinal cauldron, Ye Fan had entered into a state of emptiness, only now did he gradually come to his senses, his golden sea of bitterness had once again been established and grew larger, as large as the peeled skin of a lychee fruit, dazzling gold, as though the resplendent stars in the universe had been plucked and placed into his body.

There were twenty seven more divine symbols, each was like a divine metal chain or a streak of lightning, floating in the air above the sea of bitterness. The most unique change that had occurred was within his sea of bitterness, ripples could actually be seen within it and bubbles continued to be released, when they burst they would form a bright mist which shrouded above the golden sea of bitterness.

Ye Fan opened his eyes as he clearly felt the change within his sea of bitterness. There was a flourishing vitality within his body, divine lights seemed to shine forth from his eyes but he was not content with merely this as he stretched his hand to grab the fruit of the Green Jade Snow Lotus.

This green fruit which was the size of a chicken egg had a resplendent green glow that was shimmering around it, making one’s heart ache, as though it were molded from the essence of

green jade, shimmering with a gentle light, sparkling and translucent as the green glow continued to flash.

The fruit of the Green Jade Snow Lotus was very rare and each fruit would grow on the top of snow mountains that were tens of thousands of metres high, only forming after not seeing the rays of sunlight for a thousand years and protected by several strong demonic monsters, it had taken Elder Han eight years of time to successful pick a single one.

Once the fruit entered his grasp, Ye Fan felt a piercing cold, the boiling medicinal fluid did not cause the fruit to dissolve and he felt as though he were biting an apple as he delicately began to taste. This time, Ye Fan was very careful and did not make a shred of noise, everything was done in absolute silence, a day and night had already passed and based on logic he should have already been cooked.

The taste of the fruit was sweet, fresh and tasty but was cold like ice, it caused Ye Fan's body to involuntarily shiver as the vigorous qi essence of life swiftly spread to his four limbs and the hundreds of arteries and veins within his body.

Finally, streaks of green light shrouded Ye Fan, his skin was green and lush like a jadeite, flashing with a unique glow, causing the temperature within the medicinal cauldron to continually drop and the medicinal fluid no longer boiled.

An hour later, the sound of the howling sea once again emitted from within the bronze medicinal cauldron, the clamor was even louder this time, accompanied by thunder and lightning as the

entire giant cauldron gently trembled.

The entire stone room was rumbling and elder Han felt as though he were facing a vast and boundless angry sea, his mood surged with the tide and muttered: “The unique scene appears once again, the precious pill will definitely form!”

Elder Han seemed to grow younger by over ten years in an instant, he had a wide carefree smile, his heart was filled with expectation and could not wait for seven days to immediately pass.

Tens of thousands of raging waves continually repeated, thunderous sounds abound, lightning streaked through the sky as thunder roared, causing the entire stone room to continually tremble.

“The day the pill forms is the day I make a breakthrough!” Elder Han was in high spirits, he was filled with a sense of accomplishment. He felt that once this unparalleled pill was within his grasp, he would be able to breakthrough the barrier he faced and going up several stages would not be an issue.

Within the bronze medicinal cauldron, sound shook the heavens and the unique scene was brilliant. Elder Han who was outside and could only hear the sounds found it difficult to keep calm as he continually walked around the cauldron, his excitement already reaching an extreme.

This time, the sounds of the howling sea and roaring thunder lasted for six hours before gradually calming down, the entire

stone room slowly regained its calm.

"After the medicinal cauldron has been closed, it can only be opened seven days later....." Elder Han felt regretful for being so cautious and not placing his other rare and precious medicinal medicines within, otherwise, maybe even more unique scenes would appear, the auspicious rainbow falling from the heavens mentioned in ancient texts might even become a reality.

Even so, Elder Han was still extremely confident. He believed that he had already grasped a huge opportunity and nothing could change this fact.

Another day and night passed as Ye Fan slowly opened his eyes, a divine glow seemed to be contained within them, his body was full of vitality and the wounds on his four limbs and chest had completely vanished without a single blemish remaining.

Changes had once again occurred to Ye Fan's golden sea of bitterness, it had grown wider by an entire circle and in its centre, the ripples and undulations were more violent, bubbles were continually frothing like a spring and the bursting of them formed a coloured mist, thoroughly shrouding that area causing the sea of bitterness to seem even more mysterious.

At this moment, Ye Fan was like elder Han and his heart was filled with a sense of accomplishment, the emotions of the two could be said to be identical.

He could not possibly be satisfied with only this as he once again

reached out and grabbed the Nine Leafed Phoenix Grass. It was extremely hot to the touch and allowed one to feel bursts of fluctuations of divine energy. According to legend, only soil that had been stained with the divine blood of a phoenix could grow such a divine grass, elder Han had spent over ten years to explore endless amounts of ancient lands before finding this single one, it was a priceless treasure!

The Nine Leafed Phoenix Grass was covered in a bright and dazzling glow like a cornelian, penetrating deeply into the heart and making one feel intoxicated.

Ye Fan placed it into his mouth and began to chew, this divine grass actually became a gorgeous scarlet mist that rushed into his body, shrouding his body in a red glow as though an extremely red fire was burning.

If it were the body of a normal person, they would have already become ash. However, Ye Fan's physique was extremely unique and his sea of bitterness was like a bottomless pit without any boundaries, all the dazzling scarlet mist entered into the sea of bitterness and was finally completely absorbed.

In this moment, his flesh, blood, organs and bones were sparkling and translucent, free from dust or dirt, like a beautiful piece of art, splendid and dazzling, his skin seemed to flash with a translucent glow and energy of life seemed to be continually circulating.

When the sound of the howling sea and roaring thunder occurred once again, elder Han was startled as he stood up and began to

walk around the bronze medicinal cauldron again: “This Han has indeed been shown concern by the heavens……”

When Ye Fan came to his senses again, he noticed that his golden sea of bitterness had grown by another full circle but did not grow by a lot. When one cultivated further it would become harder and the quality of the three spiritual medicines did not differ by much, the first one ingested had still yielded the greatest results.

After absorbing the three precious spiritual medicines, a startling transformation had occurred within Ye Fan’s sea of bitterness. At its very centre, a coloured mist was hanging in the air as countless divine symbols swirled, the sea of bitterness was like an active volcano as bubbles continued to froth, continually releasing lights from within the sea.

Ye Fan was clear at what was happening and did not feel perplexed.

Cultivators at the Sea of Bitterness realm needed to go through several stages. Initially, only small amounts of qi essence of life would swirl above the sea of bitterness, over time, the essence would grow and congeal to form divine symbols which were like divine metal chains floating above the sea of bitterness.

As the sea of bitterness continued to establish and one’s cultivation continued to grow deeper, bubbles would form, bursting to form clouds. In the end, the bubbles would froth like an active volcano, clouds would continually rise, dazzling and resplendent.

When the day came and the ‘volcano’ within the sea of bitterness thoroughly came alive, the dazzling clouds would gradually become fluid, at that moment one could try to break into the Spring of Life realm, if one was successful, a gurgling divine spring would form at the mouth of the ‘volcano’.

Cultivators at the Sea of Bitterness realm would need to go through these three stages before attacking the Spring of Life realm. Ye Fan had already experienced two of these stages, the centre of his golden sea of bitterness was flaring up as qi gushed out. A splendid and magnificent scene, it was like a volcano coming to life, constantly erupting, simply brilliant

“If I were able to absorb all the ten odd precious spiritual medicines of Elder Han and find a place to cultivate in silence, carefully meditating on the Dao Scripture, I might actually be able to attack the Spring of Life realm in one or two years……” Ye Fan mumbled in his heart as he felt a sense of anticipation well up within him.

However, he would first have to overcome the dangerous situation before him, preserving his life otherwise everything would be for naught.

After completely absorbing the three precious spiritual medicines, Ye Fan did not move recklessly but rather sat there silently as he waited for a chance. Three days had already passed and the lid would only be opened in four more days.

There was half a cauldron of medicinal fluid which could be used to form the hundred plants extract, although it could not be compared to the precious spiritual medicines, it still contained large amounts of the qi essence of life. It was still early and Ye Fan would not let it go as he silently cultivated, streaks of essence continued to be absorbed into his body.

Two days later, Elder Han felt that something was strange. No unique scenes appeared again and the medicinal scent inside the bronze cauldron actually became more and more faint, in the end no smell was emitted from the cauldron.

“What’s going on……” He was feeling doubtful but seemed to have thought of something as he muttered: “Could it be that the precious pill has become the basic form and all the essence has been stored within?”

“That’s right, this must be the case! According to legend, once the unparalleled pill forms, all the essence will be stored within causing all the fragrance to disappear, not wasting a single drop of medicinal effectiveness.” Elder Han was extremely agitated: “I can now be sure that I’ve refined a precious pill mentioned in the legends!”

Over the past two days, Ye Fan had absorbed all the essence contained within the medicinal fluid. Within his sea of bitterness, qi continued to gush, red clouds were ascending like a volcano coming to life. It was on the verge of erupting as multicoloured rays of the sun shone, the spiritual qi was thick and dense resulting in a rainbow misty fog.

Measuring the time, there were two more days before the opening of the cauldron and Ye Fan was extremely cool as he quietly waited for his chance. He began to refine the spiritual aspect of the Demonfire as silver light continually flowed into his body.

Time passed by quickly as two days flew by swiftly, Elder Han was cackling loudly like a owl wailing as he prepared to open the lid of the cauldron to retrieve the ‘precious pill’.

“Little bastard, you can only blame yourself for eating the divine fruit and drinking from the divine spring of legends. Find a good backing in your next life, this life you were meant to be absorbed by me.”

# Chapter 96: Greatest Regret In Life

Ye Fan was extremely calm as he composed himself to his best state, prepared to release a severe blow at any moment as the golden book within his sea of bitterness flashed with a unique glow.

Elder Han felt as though he were blessed by the heavens and his emotions were riled, trembling as he stretched his right hand to grab the lid of the cauldron, forcefully lifting it. In his mind, the appearance of a precious pill could definitely be dazzling and resplendent with divine lights shining in all directions.

Indeed, an eye-piercing golden light, exceptionally dazzling and bright instantly flew towards Elder Han. Initially, Elder Han thought that the precious pill had gained spiritual awareness and had rushed out of the medicinal cauldron on its own but immediately felt his own soul departing , as though he were knocked straight down from heaven into hell.

What precious pill, this was obviously a dazzling piece of divine metal that was swiftly slicing towards his neck, there was even a youth with delicate features sitting within the bronze medicinal cauldron without a single scratch on him, clearly not refined into a pill as he stared at him.

“Not good!” Elder Han felt cold sweat covering his entire body as he shouted, wanting to back away but it was too late, the golden light flashed like lightning with a ‘Chi!’ as it sliced through his throat.

Blood gurgled forth as an intense pain made elder Han dizzy, black spots filled his vision as he collapsed heavily into a pool of blood.

The golden paper was extremely sharp and had immediately sliced through elder Han's neck, only a layer of skin held the head in place as blood shot out like a fountain.

Elder Han was, after all, a strong cultivator and even though he was aged and seemed as though he could die at any moment, his body contained large amounts of energy. Even though his neck had been severed, he did not immediately die and actually stretched his right hand to press down his head, attempting to connect it back.

At the same time, a green light flashed within his sea of bitterness releasing a dazzling light, his divine spring gurgled and frothed as it provided large amounts of vitality to him. At the same time, several green wooden swords flew out towards Ye Fan.

Ye Fan's heart shivered with cold, different realms really had such a wide gap between them that was simply impossible to overcome! If it were not for him being cautious and patient, releasing such a devastating blow at the most crucial moment, there was simply no chance of killing Elder Han.

He was nimble as a panther as he leapt, hiding at the back of the medicinal cauldron as he controlled the brilliant golden book to chop again.

Elder Han had already suffered a serious injury and his life was

hanging in the balance, the green wooden swords that rushed out were still dazzling as their sword aura was still sharp, green light shot in all directions but the light swiftly dimmed as several of the green wooden swords swayed, seeming like they would fall to the ground at any moment.

"Clang Clang Clang"

The golden paper was even more sharp than divine metal and its dazzling radiance was like the blazing sun as it seemed to burn, instantly chopping through all the wooden swords with loud resounding noises.

Ye Fan did not dare to be complacent as the golden book became a mystical rainbow, like a bright moon piercing through the darkness of the night, bursting forth with a frightening energy fluctuation as it rushed towards Elder Han's abdomen.

under the brilliant light, a bloody light burst with a 'Chi!' as Elder Han's sea of bitterness was instantly destroyed, his body was instantly sent flying as he heavily smashed into the wall of the stone room leaving behind a bloody human imprint as he slowly slid down.

Golden lights shot everywhere as an auspicious rainbow appeared, the golden book became a streak of light as it shot back into Ye Fan's body.

Even so, Elder Han had not completely died, his left arm was holding tightly onto his head, not allowing it to fall to the ground.

It could be imagined how frightening cultivators who were above the realm of the Sea of Bitterness were, they were simply people that could not be taken down by just anyone.

Ye Fan wiped away the cold sweat on his brow, if he had not been cautious and patient, waiting for seven days without recklessly moving, there would have been no way to eliminate Elder Han.

At this moment, elder Han's eyes seemed to be spitting out fire, he could not accept this reality! He had not seen the unparalleled precious pill and what came for him was actually the blade of the death god, this was simply unbelievable, he had fallen from heaven to hell in an instant and this unbearable feeling made him go insane.

"Eee……aahhh……guuuh……" Elder Han's severed neck was leaking blood as his mouth also spat blood, it was difficult to form any words and his eyes were wide as he stared at Ye Fan.

"Wh……. Why……." In the end, Elder Han managed to spit out some unclear words, he could not bear with the current situation and did not wish to die in this pathetic manner.

"You really thought I was a monkey*?" Ye Fan did not mind as he calmly stared at Elder Han: "It's a pity you aren't a Taoist Monk*."

[T/N*: Journey to the west reference]

Elder Han had plenty of blood flowing from his wound as he

struggled to speak: “You..... I..... hate.....”

“Chi!”

He spat out a large mouthful of blood as his eyes filled with unwillingness and despair, his heart was filled with anger, everything had been so perfect but finally the outcome was so tragic, leaving him unable to accept it.

“You really thought I was a pushover? You could simply deal with me however you wanted to? Actually placing me in here to refine me into a divine medicine, this is a fitting end for such a sinister and evil person.” Ye Fan stood not far away as he said emotionlessly: “Your death is totally justified, I’ve endured for seven days and seven nights before releasing this killing blow, be a good man in your next life otherwise you will also not have a proper end.”

Elder Han’s heart was filled with anger and his neck was hanging by a thread, he simply could not bear with this humiliation as he constantly spat blood and grit his teeth to speak: “I..... am unwilling..... You.....deserve to die.....”

Ye Fan looked at Elder Han as he opened all the medicine cabinets, immediately various fragrances assaulted the senses as he took all the precious spiritual medicines which were not any less precious than the Nine Leafed Phoenix Grass.

“Old fogey, you’ve been very industrious, working hard your whole life like an old cow to collect so many precious and rare

spiritual medicines. Normal people would not even dare to dream of this, you've really gained my respect. All I want to say is, thank you, I'll kindly accept it all!"

"You……." Elder Han spat out a large mouthful of blood in his anger, his eyes seemed to spit fire and if he were able to move, he would have swallowed Ye Fan alive.

"Relax, I won't let all your hard work go to waste. All these precious heavenly treasures will be well utilised by me, I'll take this chance to attack the realm of the Spring of Life within one or two years."

"You……. f******!" These words were spat out from Elder Han's mouth, it was certainly shocking and one could feel the intense rage within his heart.

"One must be calm when faced with different situations, opportunities will be grasped by those who are prepared for them……" A faint smile could be seen on Ye Fan's face as he mocked: "The ancients truly did not deceive me!"

When Elder Han heard the words 'the ancients truly did not deceive', he totally lost it as blood gurgled from his mouth like a fountain as he spat out his final words: "Ancient people…… I……. hate……"

Elder Han had been angered to death as his right hand relaxed and fell, his head rolled off with a plop sound as he died, his eyes were very wide and had clearly died aggrieved.

“Be reborn in a better family in your next life……” Ye Fan said the words which Elder Han had said to him earlier, both parties had the same feelings when they spoke these words but the outcomes had been totally different.

If Elder Han learnt of this matter in hell, he would certainly spit blood as he struggled to climb out of there.

Ye Fan took big steps as he walked into a corner of the stone room, taking the bodhi seed from a stone table as he kept it within his bosom.

This divine bodhi seed could help one comprehend the Dao and was definitely a priceless treasure, if this information were spread all the experts within the eastern badlands would definitely come to snatch it. Also, the stronger the person the more he would yearn for this seed, cultivating became harder at the later stages and each understanding and comprehension that came was a great opportunity.

Ye Fan’s realm was still low and could not understand how difficult this was. Only in the later stages of cultivating would one experience this problem where all the precious treasures and divine medicines would be useless and only ‘comprehension’ could allow one to break through.

# *Chapter 97: Rising To The Spring Of Life Realm*

Once all the dust had settled and Elder Han was taken care of, Ye Fan sat down calmly on a stone chair as he began to earnestly think how to proceed from here.

The horseman of the Jiang Family was still chasing him and he did not have sufficient strength to resist in any way, under the current circumstances it would be best to hide and not appear until he raised his cultivation level.

Without question, this cave dwelling within this mountain was the best place to hide, Elder Han had mentioned that there were many Dao Inscriptions carved into the mountain rock, creating a separate space which others could not possibly sense.

“Alright, I’ll continue cultivating here.”

Ye Fan made his decision as he began to clean the stone room starting with Elder Han’s corpse which he placed inside a medicinal cauldron and firmly shut the lid.

“You’ve refined medicines all your life, this medicinal cauldron will serve as your coffin. Rest well within your own cave dwelling.”

This cave dwelling was exceptionally wide and seemed like a hidden palace, Ye Fan carefully made markings as he proceeded,

shifting the medicinal cauldron into the innermost depths of the mountain before sealing it within a stone cave.

Returning back to the stone room, Ye Fan continued to tidy up, the few medicinal cabinets were all shifted back to their original positions as he placed the ten odd rare and precious spiritual medicines back into them, that was the best place to store these medicinal plants.

Besides medicinal cabinets, this vast stone room also had ten odd bronze medicinal cauldrons as well as several stone tables and chairs. Atop one stone table were two ancient texts that were actually made from beast skin, they seemed to be well weathered with age and had at least been around for several hundred years.

It was obvious that Elder Han often read them, both the stone chair and table were clear of dust and a book was open with Elder Han's annotations within.

"Ehh!"

Ye Fan had an alarmed expression, the ancient text which was left open only had a few pages made of beast skin and there were several strange dao veins carved on it, there were almost no words and merely seemed like scribblings, without any way to decipher. If it were not for Elder Han leaving behind some annotations, Ye Fan would definitely not be able to understand the meaning of these strange dao veins.

"They are..... Dao Inscriptions!" He felt shocked, although there were merely a few pages, this was clearly a precious book that had

recorded Dao Inscriptions.

It was rumoured that Dao Inscriptions were comprehensions of experts of the past with regards to nature, they would carve these understandings on items and a small portion of these items had managed to survive the passage of time.

From a certain perspective, Dao Inscriptions were carvings of the comprehensions of experts of the past, the stronger the cultivator the more interested he would be in analysing the Dao Inscriptions which had been passed down for years.

Ye Fan carefully perused and from the limited ancient words in it, he realised that this was merely an ordinary Dao Inscriptions ancient text and there were two base words written atop it.

Even so, an ordinary Dao Inscriptions ancient text was very taxing for Elder Han and he had placed many annotations, it was clear that there were several areas which he had not been able to understand.

“It seems Dao Inscriptions are really profound, only real expert cultivators will be able to analyse them, even Elder Han was only able to have a very basic level of understanding.

“Although I can’t understand this book, I will have to mull over the annotations he made in order to get out of this cave dwelling.”

Ye Fan opened the other beast skin ancient text and similarly

there were only a few pages, it was merely a thin book and there were some ancient methods of pill refinement which would have great benefits for a cultivator once successful.

However, Ye Fan had a minimal understanding of spiritual medicines and even if the medicinal plants mentioned within were placed before him, he would not be able to recognise them not to mention attempting to refine them into pills.

The beast skin ancient text clearly recorded, if a person was able to find divine medicine which allowed one to shed their skin and transform their bones, they could refine an exceptionally precious pill which could not only increase a cultivator's life span but also cause a large increase in cultivation, it would greatly benefit a cultivator at any realm.

"No wonder that old fogey wanted to catch me at all costs……"

Thereafter, Ye Fan found a mountain spring within the cave dwelling, there was also much food which Elder Han had kept and this settled his immediate concerns, allowing him to cultivate in peace.

In the following days, Ye Fan carefully studied the annotations within the Dao Inscriptions ancient text and finally gained a basic understanding which allowed him to walk out of the cave dwelling.

From then on, Ye Fan would very rarely head out and only go out to gather some berries or wild vegetables, spending most of his

time cultivating and comprehending the Dao Inscriptions.

Time passed by swiftly and a year had already passed, Ye Fan had already ingested all the spiritual medicines and his golden sea of bitterness was already half the size of a fist, dazzling as essence continued to swirl about.

Within the centre of the sea of bitterness, clouds roiled like a beacon of fire as they rushed up, no longer filling the area or swirling but rather spurting out like a live volcano!

It was difficult for Ye Fan's golden sea of bitterness to maintain its calm and there would often be spurts, as though it would connect with the wheel of life at any moment, releasing a divine spring.

Each time he entered a state of emptiness, the sea of bitterness would have the sounds of the howling sea, the indistinct sound of waves would emitted from his body and a layer of divine light would shroud his entire being.

Also, a unique scene would occasionally appear from the sea of bitterness, the centre most area would continually spurt like a volcano under the ocean and lightning would occasionally streak across the sky.

Upon circulating the mystical arts recorded within the Dao Scripture, a strong fluctuation of life energy appeared within his body, his golden sea of bitterness was as bright and dazzling as the sun. Essence seemed to flow endlessly and his four limbs and bones

within his body absorbed it as nourishment, his already abnormally strong body grew even tougher and became much stronger as compared to the past.

"It is indeed difficult to break through to the realm of the Spring of Life……" Ye Fan lamented, he had already attempted to break through five times but had not succeeded.

Within this year, he had earnestly comprehended the Dao Scripture as he continually molded his 'artifact', that lump of divine metal within him had already been smelted multiple times as the Dao Inscriptions on the aurichalcite were continually engraved on it, already having a mysterious air around it giving it a sort of ancient and natural feel.

Much time had passed and Ye Fan believed that the horseman of the Jiang Family had already left, it was impossible for them to still be searching.

This day, he left the cave dwelling as he attempted to control the divine energy while within the mountainous region. Raging waves appeared within his sea of bitterness as a blazing divine light shot out of his body, shrouding him and actually lifting him three inches off the ground as he flew forward.

"Plonk!"

It was a pity that after flying for merely thirty odd metres, he fell straight to the ground.

“Without entering the Spring of Life realm, it will definitely be difficult to maintain flight for long periods of time. The divine spring of energy must continually gurgle forth to allow one to fly freely.

Although he could not fly up into the sky, flying for such a short distance was a very fresh feeling for Ye Fan as he continued to practice, making him realise that he could at most fly for over one hundred metres. Compared to his running, the speed was much faster and his feet did not need to touch the ground as he drifted like the wind.

Without reaching the Spring of Life realm, Ye Fan did not wish to leave this cave dwelling. He felt that his strength was too low and travelling would be too dangerous. Also, the Demonfire within the mountain could help him to cultivate, the spiritual aspect contained within was unique and although it was not very thick, its strong point was that it seemed endless.

“I should head over to the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary and get that piece of ‘source’ back……” Although he felt that travelling too far was not wise, he still decided to leave this area. His physique was too unique, like a bottomless pit which required endless amounts of spiritual energy in order to cultivate faster.

Ye Fan carefully proceeded along the way, the horseman of the Jiang Family had indeed left long ago and would not pose a threat to him, the Yan State was currently very peaceful.

Reaching the mountainous region where the Purple Sun immortal sanctuary was located, Ye Fan became more cautious in

avoiding people from the sect. Not long after, he came before a river and fiercely jumped in. Half a minute later, water splashed as Ye Fan emerged from the river, a sparkling ‘source’ within his hands.

“It’s lucky that it’s still here……”

Initially when he had arrived here, his heart was beating fast in fear that someone had already taken the ‘source’.

In reality, this area was very desolate and unless top-notch experts of the Purple Sun passed by this area, the others would not be able to feel the aura of the ‘source’.

Ye Fan did not wish to tarry here and followed his initial path back.

“It’s her……” Ye Fan suddenly stopped as he looked at a few young figures, amongst them was Li Xiao Man.

Ye Fan did not stop but rather swiftly ran off into the distance, disappearing among the cluster of mountains.

Half a month later, rumbling sounds could be heard from the cave dwelling which Elder Han had created. Thereafter the sounds of an immense howling sea could be heard roaring to the heavens together with deafening claps of thunder.

“Boom!”

At this moment, a strong aura exploded out and the entire cave dwelling began to tremble, all the essence within Ye Fan began to surge as a golden divine fire burned outside his body.

Divine light seemed to shine within his eyes, like two bolts of lightning that were shooting out, causing the entire cave dwelling to be brightly lit.

Ye Fan straightened his body as he stood up, at this moment he seemed to carry a dignified and imposing presence, the aura which he released made the entire cave dwelling tremble violently causing large fissures to appear.

“I’ve finally managed to enter the Spring of Life realm!”

He became a streak of golden lightning as he rushed out of the cave dwelling, a blazing mystical rainbow shrouded him as he slowly flew into the air.

At this moment, within the centre of Ye Fan’s sea of bitterness, there appeared the mouth of a spring, he had connected with the wheel of life and the divine spring was gurgling forth, a bright coloured mist could be seen swirling above it.

# Chapter 98: A Single Artifact Breaks Thousands Of Techniques

This was a completely new experience and Ye Fan stood tall in the sky, a strong wind caused his clothing to flutter in the wind and the endless mountain range was below his feet, he felt a sense of controlling everything well within his heart.

His field of vision was vast allowing him to view far off into the distance, this was a totally new sensation, using his own strength to fly into the blue dome of heaven, looking down on all life in the world, filling him with amazement.

Magnificent mountains and rivers, vast areas of land, all this filled the eye and made one feel satisfied and free from worry. Within the lofty heights, all living things in this world such as a blade of grass or a piece of wood faded into the background, filling one with the grandiose aspirations of swallowing mountains and rivers.

“So this is the Spring of Life realm, I can feel an exceptionally strong energy…….” Ye Fan stood tall in the sky, his body unencumbered by dirt, his being was sparkling and translucent flashing with dots of light, like a beautiful art piece, giving him a feeling of shedding the mortal flesh and exchanging one’s bones.

At this moment, he finally understood how large a difference there was between realms. The fleshly body was completely filled and almost perfect, if he met a cultivator of the Sea of Bitterness realm, he could exterminate the other party in no time at all, this was not a blind confidence but rather because of the exceptionally

strong amounts of energy that continually filled his body.

Ye Fan rode on a mystical rainbow to travel, traversing through the world as a dazzling rainbow streaked through the sky, seemingly like a comet rushed towards the ground at one moment then like a brilliant moon rising above the ocean the next, an azure dragon rising to the sky.

It was only an hour later before he finally managed to calm himself down as he stood on top of a mountain allowing the fresh wind to blow at him, his black hair was gently dancing in the wind and his eyes were like two stars that shone.

Ye Fan was silent as he suppressed the strong and imposing aura, making him seem to gain a peaceful and tranquil manner, he seemed perfect without any dirt as his clothings fluttered, like a banished immortal who came to earth, graceful and elegant giving one a feeling of nature and otherworldliness.

Within his body, the sea of bitterness that was half the size of a fist was completely calm, there was no longer the berserk ‘volcano’ nor the surging waves that were roiling.

The golden sea of bitterness was exceptionally peaceful and in the very centre, the mouth of the spring gurgled and frothed, vigorous amounts of qi essence of life was being released, that was the Divine Spring of Life flowing.

The wheel of life which was submerged within the sea of bitterness had been linked and the endless amounts of spring water that contained the essence of life surged up, this was the

foundation for a cultivator's strength.

Ripples formed from the spring of life and undulated in all directions forming gentle billows, adding a sense of naturalness and nimbleness to the undulating golden sea, the divine spring gurgled as the two merged together, divine energy continued to flow and vitality was abundant.

At this moment, the mysterious piece of aurichalcite had changed a location as it firmly stood within the eye of the spring at the bottom of the sea, continually accepting the baptism of the divine spring of life. As for the golden book, it was still squeezed to the outer edges and had no way to get near the mouth of the divine spring.

The 'cauldron' which Ye Fan wanted to smelt already had a rough outline but had not managed to fully take shape, it was about the size of a cherry and floated above the sea of bitterness.

Based on common sense, the four great realms of Sea of Bitterness, Spring of Life, Spiritual Bridge and Other Shore, each realm would allow one to sacrifice and refine an 'artifact' however, Ye Fan had already reached the second great realm but did not even have a single 'artifact'. This made him frown, a 'cauldron' was indeed difficult to forge.

He was not overly worried, it was clearly recorded within the Dao Scripture that the more complex and profound the artifact, the more difficult it would be to form because they contained the Dao and Truths of the world.

Based on what was mentioned within the Dao Scripture, one could focus on forging a single artifact, hinting that a strong artifact would be one that was formed from all four of the great realms. This meant that if one wanted to have the strongest artifact, they would only forge one artifact from the Sea of Bitterness, Spring of Life, Spiritual Bridge and Other Shore realms, not four different ones.

This was what was meant by the term ‘Great artifacts would take ages to complete’ but once a person was successful, they could used a single artifact to break tens of thousands of techniques, once the flower blossomed it would be able to kill off hundreds of other flowers.

In the entire eastern badlands, only a small number of ancient scriptures recorded this profound technique of forging a single artifact throughout the four realms, a normal cultivator would never have this chance.

However, even for the few Sacred Grounds and ancient aristocratic families who had these few ancient scriptures, their disciples did not dare to take such a risk, with great opportunity came great risk, if one wanted to gain more they had to be able to risk a similar amount and many could not bear with this risk. Using four realms to forge a single artifact, since ancient times till now, a large number of people were unsuccessful in forging even a single artifact as they wasted countless years of their life. Without their own artifact, they would not be able to utilise an artifact and would be not much different from a crippled person. As such, disciples of the Sacred Ground or ancient aristocratic families would seldom make such a choice.

At the Sea of Bitterness realm, Ye Fan did not need to make a choice and only needed to focus his will on forging the cauldron, however, upon breaking through to the Spring of Life realm, his artifact had not formed and he had to make a decision.

“Although it’s filled with risk and at the end I may end up with nothing, I don’t have any way back. I’ve already decided to forge the cauldron because I want to obtain the strongest artifact, it could one day gain the Dao and Truths of the world. Using four realms to forge a single artifact isn’t contradicting to my choice, it could even said to be in line with it. I don’t have any reason to shrink away.”

Ye Fan was not concerned about other people having many artifacts while he would have less artifacts. Faced with a difficult situation, he believed that the firm words ‘one artifact to break tens of thousands of techniques, once the flower blossomed hundreds of other flowers could be extinguished’ recorded within the Dao Scripture.

“I sincerely hope that a great artifact will be formed after much struggle and I won’t end up with nothing……”

After reaching the Spring of Life realm, one could fly through the blue dome of heaven. Ye Fan began to consider venturing into the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land but he needed to make sufficient preparations otherwise that area could very possibly be his burial ground.

He was not in a rush to set out and continued to consolidate his new found strength, after a breakthrough in cultivation a period of time would be required for one to get used to it. In the days that followed, the cave dwelling was dug into a messy state in order for Ye Fan to acquire more spiritual aspects within the Demonfire, he constantly dug till into the depths and almost caused a fire vein to explode forth.

Time passed swiftly and Ye Fan cultivated for almost another full year, the entire fire vein had nearly been exhausted by him and his realm had thoroughly stabilised to the extent that it had even increased considerably, the gurgling divine spring seemed to be filled with even more vitality.

This was of course not the biggest gain, what made him most satisfied and excited was that the rough form of the cauldron had finally been forged, using the unique spiritual aspect of the Demonfire and forging thousands of times had finally resulted in a three legged circular cauldron to appear.

“It seems that if I want to be successful in forging the artifact, the unique spiritual aspects of various divine flames will be most effective. Just like how the forging of weapons would require a fire to smelt in order to forge divine and precious armaments, the cauldron within me also seems to require this!”

Above Ye Fan’s sea of bitterness, a small cauldron which was roughly formed could be seen, it was about the size of a cherry, all its dazzling splendour had receded and it seemed natural, simple and unadorned. In this one year, after forging repeatedly for thousands of times, engraving the Dao Inscriptions of the

aurichalcite on the divine metal, the small cauldron already have an exceptional aura, giving one a feeling that it was made by the heavens itself.

Ye Fan willed it and the small cauldron instantly flew out of his body without a sound as it easily pierced through the ten odd metre thick stone wall of the cave dwelling and rushed towards the sky.

“A cauldron with two ears and three feet. The Dao gives birth to one, one gives birth to two, two gives birth to three, three give birth to thousands of objects, thousands of objects bears Yin but embraces Yang……. Good! Good! Good!”

Ye Fan was extremely satisfied, the natural, simple and unadorned small cauldron gave him a natural feeling of the Dao, it seemed to already contain the Dao and Truths of the world, seemingly mysterious and profound.

“I really look forward to the moment where one artifact can break tens of thousands of artifacts……”

Once the small cauldron was formed, it could already be considered a strong weapon which could attack and defend, able to conquer any obstacle. The mysterious Dao Inscriptions on the aurichalcite gave it a mysterious energy which allowed it to constantly transform.

Ye Fan had already been in this world for three years, he had lived for a small period of time within the Ling Xu immortal

sanctuary before cultivating in this cave dwelling for close to two years. His body was much taller and was about 1.7metres tall but still seemed young and tender like a fourteen year old child.

The short hair that he had earlier was longer by ⅔ metres, black and thick as it naturally fell before his chest and back, gently floating in the wind making him seem extremely delicate, no one would be able to guess that such a youth would actually be a cultivator of the Spring of Life realm.

“It’s time to leave……” Ye Fan took a final glance at the cave dwelling behind him before flying just above the treeline towards the distant mountains.

Ye Fan dragged a deer as he entered a small town, using it to exchange for some money to buy some suitable clothes for himself. Two years had passed and he was already much taller, the original clothes he wore were in tatters, ragged and shabby. The moment he entered the small town people actually began to point at him.

“In order to cultivate within this world, one has to first assimilate into human society.”

Ye Fan found a place to eat and chose a seat that was near to the window. By the side was a table of people who seemed to have extraordinary demeanours, different from that of normal humans.

Real cultivators did not have much interaction with ordinary humans, they would not usually showcase their prowess and even if they were right before you, normal people would not have a

single clue. It was clear that these people were all cultivators and followed this principle, they did not wish to startle the people in the surroundings as they softly discussed, unless one's spiritual sense was exceptionally sharp, normal people would have no way to hear them talk.

"The burial mound of the demon emperor is too demonic in nature, over these two years countless numbers of cultivators have died but it still remains closed."

"The entire eastern badlands has been shocked, several large sects have sent experts to that area of the ruins but have no way to open that Yin grave."

"The main reason for this is that the really unparalleled experts are concerned and dare not easily act, that Yin grave is extremely evil and seems to have already gained spiritual sense. Unless one had the most precious treasure of the human race of the eastern badlands, even if an unparalleled expert were to break the sure-kill formation, he would be unable to stop the Yin grave from rushing into the ground beneath the eastern badlands, like a dragon returning to the sea without a trace to be found.

"It's rumoured that three bigwigs have already died, is it true?"

"Naturally it's real, within these two years countless cultivators have died and this deep pond should soon be filled to the brim with corpses, of the bigwigs, several of them have already died and even more are said to be at death's door.

Ye Fan was extremely shocked, who knew that after two years, the Yin grave was still closed and the sure-kill formation within it had actually killed large numbers of cultivators. He sat quietly by the side as he listened and ate without any change in expression as he did not wish for these cultivators to find out he was eavesdropping.

“The surroundings of the deep pond already have a pile of corpses the size of a mountain, it has completely become a plot of demonic land and even looking from a distance one can feel their hair stand on end, the resentment in the area was thick and every inch of the land was stained with the blood of cultivators.

“Since that deep pond is an area where one can enter but never return, creating a mountain of corpses and a bloody sea, why are there still an endless number of cultivators advancing wave after wave to that area?”

“Without any benefits to gain who would risk their lives like that? That is the burial mound of the demon emperor who managed to unite the entire demonic race of the eastern badlands, there must be endless amounts of precious treasures buried with him.”

“That’s right, even those superbly strong bigwigs have been startled, it’s rumoured that the Desolate Pagoda is actually located within!”

“The Desolate Pagoda that is rumoured to be able to seal even immortals?”

“That’s exactly it, otherwise, how could those bigwigs endure such risks to venture into the depths.”

“It’s already been two years and the disciples of various sects have begun to fear that piece of ruin. However, these sects are unwilling to give up and many people have thus lost their lives.”

“You people probably don’t know this but it’s rumoured that even people of the Central Province have been shocked into action and recently some mysterious people have rushed into the eastern badlands.”

“Could it be that they wish to steal our most precious treasure within the eastern badlands, the Desolate Pagoda?”

“This probably isn’t the case, they wouldn’t extend their reach so far away. Although the might of the cultivators of the Central Province are unequaled and able to suppress the other four regions, they would not dare to easily make the entire eastern badlands an enemy. If a big battle were to erupt, an impossibly high number of people would die, it’s rumoured that they are actually looking for the most precious treasure of the Central Province……”

Not far away, Ye Fan’s heart began to beat faster, he did not need to ponder to know that these bigwigs from the Central Province were clearly here to look for the aurichalcite.

# *Chapter 99: Birds Of A Feather Flock Together*

Ye Fan did not feel overly concerned, the mysterious aurichalcite was silent within his sea of bitterness and till now no one had noticed, there would certainly be nobody who came looking for him because of this.

“Maybe the Central Province will work together with the Eastern Badlands since both parties may have their most precious treasures buried within the depths of the Yin grave.”

“It’s rumoured that the Desolate Pagoda can even thoroughly suppress immortals, if it reappears it will definitely be able to seal movements of the demon emperor’s burial mound.”

“The Desolate Pagoda is within the Yin grave, what you just said means that there is simply no answer and no method to break into the Yin grave.”

“What exactly is the most precious treasure of the Central Province? How could it have gotten lost in our Eastern Badlands?”

“The Central Province is ancient and mysterious, it is rumoured that their most precious treasure has existed since the world existed, it is not something that people of our level would know.”

“What’s been lost within the Eastern badlands seems to be a broken fragment and what the complete object is, nobody knows.”

The few cultivators ate as they discussed and Ye Fan gathered much information.

“Over two years have passed and that piece of ruins is already covered in a mountain of corpses and drowned in a sea of blood, who knows how many more people will die before something actually happens. Thinking about it, the freedom of us wandering cultivators is still the best, otherwise, if we were within a large sect, we could have been forced to head there and only death would await us.”

“Various sects seem to have heeded the advice from a certain bigwig and are planning to use endless number of lives to perform blood sacrifices, forcefully opening that Yin grave. I have a premonition that as long as the Desolate Pagoda isn’t forced out, the Eastern Badlands will never be peaceful. That area will be a demonic area that is stained with blood. The demon emperor of the demonic race is simply too frightening, he likely anticipated this all those years ago, leaving behind a wake of destruction and calamity.”

“That’s right, various Sacred Grounds and ancient aristocratic families are unwilling to give up on the Desolate Pagoda and continue to attempt to get it at all costs.”

Ye Fan felt very relaxed, he had the aurichalcite of the Central Province in his possession and did not have any ideas of obtaining the Desolate Pagoda. That was not something that he could acquire and the mysterious aurichalcite was already plenty. What he needed to consider now was how to enter the Forbidden Ancient

Desolate Land, he would certainly not take part in the snatching of the most precious treasure and the further he could stay away the better.

As he was about to leave, Ye Fan heard an important piece of news but did not have any change in expression as he sat back down.

“Several bigwigs of different Sacred Grounds and ancient aristocratic families were at death’s door and it’s rumoured that they have plans to enter the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land.”

“That doesn’t seem likely, who would dare to barge in there? Since ancient times there have been countless people who have attempted to explore it but without exception, all of them have died. Back then, there was a certain immortal sect sacred ground who were at their very peak, using all their might they sent tens of thousands of expert cultivators to charge in but were all wiped out, that place is definitely a hell on earth…….”

“The Sacred Ground which got wiped out deserve it because they wanted to barge into the most inner depths of the abyss within the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land. This time those Sacred Grounds and ancient aristocratic families have been forced into a corner, their powerful experts could die at any moment and they wish to go to the top of the nine different mountains to pick the divine medicine to save them, their goal is not to enter into the depths of the abyss.”

“I’m guessing that all the people who enter will die, the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land is even more frightening than

the burial mound of the demonic emperor!”

“This isn’t necessarily the case, since ancient times there have been a small group of people who have successfully obtained a sacred medicine, the exact price that they had to pay to do so is however unknown. Those Sacred Grounds and ancient aristocratic families have deep backgrounds and since they have the idea of going there to pick the medicines, they will definitely be well prepared and the hope of them succeeding is rather large.”

“This is also a large matter that will shake up the entire Eastern Badlands, the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land is one of the seven areas within the Eastern Badlands where life is forbidden and after a gap of such a long time there is finally a group of people who are prepared to enter into that place again.”

“When will those Sacred Grounds and ancient aristocratic families move out? Why don’t we go and join in on the action? When they climb those nine mountains to gather the sacred medicines, we will stay at the outer fringes to pick some ordinary spiritual medicines, there shouldn’t be too big of a problem.”

“We may still have to wait for a period of time, this is currently the most dangerous period within the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land……”

Finally, Ye Fan left this small town and his mind was filled with the discussions of the wandering cultivators, he felt there was a need to earnestly consider his next moves.

“That area where life is forbidden is more dangerous than I

thought, back then the reason why we could live is likely due to the nine dragon corpses as well as the presence of the large bronze coffin."

"Ye Fan did not fly but rather walked and actually came across the capital city of the Yan State. This city was very grand and took up a large area of land, the walls seemed endless as they stood erected there.

The capital city of the Yan State was very prosperous and the streets were bustling with activity with people everywhere. Ye Fan felt overwhelmed, he had been alone cultivating in the mountains for over two years, comparing that silence and peace to the ruckus before him, it was two entirely different perspectives.

Facings forests, stone cliffs and mountain gorges everyday, the hustle and bustle of the prosperous city felt extremely familiar to him.

"Golden Silk Candied Jujube, big and sweet!"

"Crisp-fried chicken wings, if it's not nice don't pay!"

"Zhang Shi Guan's steamed dumpling, thin skin, plenty of filling and extremely juicy and delicious, come and have a taste!"

"Candied fruits! One stick only requires one bronze coin!"

Various sounds of peddling drowned the streets, there were even

several areas along the street where people were basking and performing various arts, surrounded by several children and adults. Various shops had enthusiastic waiters who were pulling customers as they flattered with enough words to fill up a wicker basket.

“Cultivating is so bitter, human society is so carefree……” Ye Fan lamented, he felt that everything was so familiar and moving when compared to the bitter life of cultivating, this was a simple life that he actually yearned for.

However, he could not give up on cultivating, he missed home and wanted to return to the place where he had grown up.

Three years had passed since Ye Fan came to this world and his bitter cultivating had finally ended as he returned to human society. He had tens of thousands of thoughts and found it difficult not to think of home.

“Time flies by and three years have already passed, I wonder how the other classmates are faring……” Ye Fan thought of Pang Bo and was very concerned for him, thereafter he thought of Liu Yi Yi, Zhang Zi Jun, Li Jia, Wang Zi Ling, Zhou Yi and the others.

“Before entering the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land, maybe I should visit those classmates of old first.” He wanted to visit Liu Yi Yi and Zhang Zi Jun, they had separated for three years and he wanted to know their current situation.

“Big brother……. I’m hungry, can you buy a bun for me too eat?

I'm begging you please, I am extremely hungry." At this moment, Ye Fan noticed a pitiful little girl who was covered in dirt staring at him with her big eyes, she was looking up towards him, her clothes were in tatters and stains covered her face, only her eyes were clear and bright.

Ye Fan could not stand seeing such a scene and each time it would leave a bitter taste in his mouth. He swiftly bought a few steaming hot dumplings from the nearby bun shop and greasy paper to contain them before handing it over to the pitiful little girl. Thereafter he took all the money he had on him and stuffed it in her bosom before anyone noticed.

Until he disappeared from the street, the little girl was still standing there dazed.

Ye Fan took big strides as he left the city, he realised that he was closest to the Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary and the distance was barely four hundred odd miles, he remembered that Liu Yi Yi had become a disciple of that sect and decided to go there to take a look first.

The Yan State was two thousand miles from North to South and three thousand miles from East to West, the Forbidden Ancient Desolate Land was located within the centre and the surroundings were endless mountains, the Ling Xu Immortal Sanctuary, Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary and the other four sects were all located in the outer regions of this area.

The Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary was surrounded by celestial mountains, cloud and mist swirled and from a distance it was only

faintly discernible, like a piece of pure land that was not of this world.

Ye Fan came before the main gate and felt a natural,auspicious and peaceful aura, this place had green peaks and green jade like valleys, flowing streams ended in waterfalls, vegetation was lush and abundant, birds and beasts had gained spiritual awareness, like a world from a painting.

Before the main gate of the Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary, there was a unique beast that stood guard, its body was like that of a bull but its head was like that of a qilin, its body was nine metres long and was lying prone within a puddle, its huge eyes were open as they stared will ill intent at Ye Fan.

“Who are you, why did you come to our Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary?” At this moment, the disciple in charge of guarding the main gate of the sect noticed him.

“I’ve come to the Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary to look for a friend.” When Ye Fan said Liu Yi Yi’s name, the expression on the face of the disciple guarding the main gate became less tense as he said: “Wait a while, I will sent someone to inform.”

Half a minute later, Liu Yi Yi did not appear but a youth with greying hair on his temples suddenly shouted as he saw Ye Fan: “Ye Fan! It’s really you!”

Ye Fan was stunned before an expression of happiness appeared on his face: “So you’re also cultivating within the Yu Ding

Immortal Sanctuary.”

This person was a classmate of the past, Zhang Wen Chang, whether it be during school or after graduation, he was always ordinary and normal, he was inarticulate and did not like to talk much, when the group gathered it was easy for people to forget about him.

Ye Fan went forward and laughed as he gave him a light punch: “You’ve regained your youth! Congrats!”

Zhang Wen Chang had a bitter smile on his face as he said: “Only my skin isn’t wrinkled anymore, look, the hair by the side of my temples is actually greying.”

“Much better than when we separated, back then you already seemed senile, like a youth who had grown white hair early.”

“I really envy you, enjoying your youth once again.” Zhang Wen Chang who was usually inarticulate had also learned how to make fun of people.

The two people laughed loudly as they looked at each other, old friends reacquainting themselves made a real feeling of happiness well up within them.

Back then, each of the six immortal sanctuary had chosen two people and equally divided the group, only Ye Fan was an exception.

Zhang Wen Chang and Liu Yi YI were taken away by Liu Yi Yi to the Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary and had cultivated there for three years already.

“Yi Yi is the favourite of the elders within the sect, her potential is the greatest and she is currently engaging in closed meditation. It’s rumoured that she may be able to reach the Spring of Life realm within half to a full year, this cultivating speed is too frightening.”

“You aren’t too bad yourself, you’re looking quite good.”

“I can’t compare to Yi Yi, within the sect I can only be considered to have a middle-low aptitude, the reason why I could regain my looks was because Yi Yi pleaded with a venerable elder to do so.”

Zhang Wen Chang brought Ye Fan into the Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary, it was really beautiful inside with lush green celestial mountains that were like green jade, dots of light could be seen and a mist swirled about it, waterfalls could be seen flowing down and the white streams seemed to be condensed and was formed from starlight.

Several misty clouds shrouded the tops of the mountains and one could occasionally see palaces and buildings, extremely faint giving off a very celestial vibe.

What was most astonishing was a snow white tall mountain that stood in the middle of the group of mountains, its entire body was

like jade, totally barren as it flashed with dots of light, its form was like a circular cauldron.

“We’ve parted ways for three years, we must have a good drink today.” Zhang Wen Chang was clearly happy and excited.

“Your sect has wine and meat?” When Ye Fan was within the Ling Xu Immortal Sanctuary, Pang Bo and him had to eat vegetarian every day, that period was a sort of torture for them.

“Relax, there’s wine and meat, I’ve already stepped on the path of cultivation and no longer need to eat vegetarian to train my will like those disciples who had just joined the sect.”

The Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary was very vast and after traversing over several mountains, Zhang Wen Chang brought Ye Fan to a patch of peach blossom trees, there were several small taverns here and they seemed to have a picturesque charm to them.

“Cultivators are also human, they also need to relax.” Zhang Wen Chang laughed as he explained: “Of course we can’t guzzle wine like in the mortal world or have an overpowering greed for food, we only eat and drink in small amounts, enjoying delicious fine food.

“This isn’t bad.” Ye Fan nodded as he smiled: “otherwise, I would actually believe that cultivators needed to cut off their seven emotions and six desires.”

The two people found a small bar and sat down with pear wood octagonal tables and on peach wood seats. Seeming to carry a feelings of ancientness together with an old smell. By the side, peach blossom trees were erected and the scenery was beautiful. The other bars were also like this and the tables and chairs were all placed outside.

They ordered some dishes and wine and began to drink, coming to this strange world and meeting an old classmate, the people people were deeply moved and had endless things to talk about.

“Coming to this unfamiliar world, I was unable to have a good night’s rest for a long time, in my dreams I would dream of going back, I miss my parents and friends……” Zhang Wei Chang who was usually inarticulate spoke a lot today, his emotions flowed out as though he had met a relative.

Li Xiao Man had been cold and indifferent while Zhang Wei Chang was enthusiastic, the disparity between the two made Ye Fan feel wistful.

“Who knows? We may be able to return in the future.” Ye Fan replied.

“Going back……. I no longer hold any hopes for that.” Zhang Wei Chang bitterly shook his head: “How have you been these three years? Were you at the Ling Xu Immortal Sanctuary or living an ordinary life within the mortal world, why did I hear news that Pang Bo disappeared?”

Seeing an old classmate, Ye Fan really wanted to say the truth but he swallowed it down. His experiences were very complex and the words he shared between the two would certainly bring about many problems. He could only nod: “Pang Bo has indeed gone missing and I’m very worried. I left the Ling Xu Immortal Sanctuary a long time ago and I’m currently travelling between places.”

“Ai, we both haven’t had it easy. Ordinary people don’t have it easy and cultivating isn’t as wonderful as I imagined, extremely vexing. In the future I may even have to face with various life threatening situations.”

“You should be more careful, focus on cultivating and don’t travel too much.” Ye Fan reminded.

Zhang Wen Chang nodded as a bitter smile floated onto his face: “I’ve come to accept the fact that no matter where I go, I won’t become famous. It was like that in the past and even now it remains the same. I will only be able to be mediocre throughout life. Maybe one day I will leave this place and go to the mortal world, open a bar and live a simple and dull life.”

“Don’t be so negative……” Ye Fan attempted to console.

“You don’t know, the world of cultivators is cruel. If I don’t extricate myself, I will die sooner or later in someone’s hands. By then I would die without a single trace, like a normal wave on a flowing river, no one would notice and no one would cry for me, only I would know that I no longer exist within the world.”

Hearing this, Ye Fan felt for him, he had not really stepped into the world of cultivators and it could be seen that it was really rather cruel.

Zhao Wen Chang lamented: “I’ve heard that Lin Jia, Zhou Yi, Wang Zi Wen and Li Xiao Man have been doted on heavily by their elders, it seems that for some people no matter where they go, they will always be able to be dazzling.”

The two people drank as they chatted and spoke about many matters, they spoke about their current difficulties and finally when Zhang Wen Chang was thoroughly drunk, he actually lay on the table as he began to cry: “I really wish to go back, I don’t want to stay within this unfamiliar world, when I left my wife was pregnant and our child would have been born at any time, I disappeared when she most needed me and arrived here…….”

He could no longer control his emotions as he began to bawl bitterly like a little child.

“I really wish to go back…… my child should already be three years old, even in my dreams I will see him, hug him, kiss him…….”

Seeing Zhang Wen Chang cry so bitterly, Ye Fan’s emotions were riled and he continually consoled.

“I was thinking who was crying, so it’s actually this useless old man.” Not far away, mocking laughter could be heard as a few

youths with obvious loathing expressions on their faces walked over.

“Your hair’s all white, a half crippled person still wants to cry.”

“It’s really laughable!”

The few people looked to be in their twenties and did not give any face was they ridiculed.

Ye Fan sighed, he finally understood that Zhang Wen Chang had been having a hard time within the Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary. Two streaks of divine light seemed to shine from his eyes as he looked down on the few people before him and said: “You people should be more conscientious in your speech.”

“Who are you? Before bothering with other people’s business you should first measure your own strength.”

“You really believe that you’re an expert of the Spring of Life realm, laughable!”

“The friend of a half crippled old man, what kind of expert could he be…….”

“Don’t talk like this, if Liu Yi Yi finds out she might go and tell on us again.”

“It’s you!” At this moment, the eyes of the youngest amongst them widened as he had an incensed expression on his face and glared at Ye Fan.

“Junior brother Han, you recognise him?” The few youths by the side questioned.

Fire seemed to spit out from the eyes of the youth as he grit his teeth: “Of course I recognise him, he isn’t someone from your Yu Ding Immortal Sanctuary, he had previously stayed in our Ling Xu Immortal Sanctuary and is a complete wastrel!”

Ye Fan sighed in his heart, he felt that the world was really so small at times, who knew that he would meet Han Fei Yu once again.

“Is that right, so it’s actually a wastrel, birds of a feather do indeed stick together. The friend of a half crippled old man is also a cripple.” By the side, the few youths began to laugh unrestrainedly.

# *Chapter 100: Looking For Teeth All Over The Ground*

Zhang Wen Chang who was lying on the table lifted his head and hurriedly used his sleeve to wipe the tear stains on his face as he hid the sadness and grief on his face with a smile: “Sorry everyone, I’ve drank too much and was thinking of things in the past causing me to lose control of my emotions.”

Ye Fan sighed in his heart, this old classmate of his had really been living a bitter life, letting his wife down, never seeing his child, he was unable to restrain his emotions and had bawled his heart out but had been ridiculed by this bunch of people. He then had to hide his grief and apologise to these people, what was he feeling right now?

Zhang Wen Chang was currently greying at the temples, his two eyes were swollen and the tear stains had not dried up, the sorrow and grief he hid in his heart could be clearly felt by others, Ye Fan’s heart felt an aching pain, the life of this old classmate was really difficult, he was a simple and unsophisticated guy but had actually fallen to such straits.

“Half crippled old man, we really can’t be bothered with your sort, even if you cry it really doesn’t concern us. However, the words of your friend are really quite abrasive and we would really like to get to know him better.”

The few people had mocking expression on their faces as they came before the table, looking down on Ye Fan and Zhang Wen Chang from their high horse. Han Fei Yu had a cold smile on his

face as he stared at Ye Fan: “It really is a small world, I always thought they you had died within that piece of ruins, who knew that we would actually meet here, over two years have gone by and every moment I have been thinking of getting closer to you.”

Ye Fan calmly sat down as he poured a glass of wine for himself, unhurried and unbothered as he lifted the wine glass and gulped it down: “It is a small world..... I’m actually hearing these same words again, the previous person who said this wanted to harm others but ended up harming himself, I wonder if this will happen again.” He thought of elder Han and hearing these same words from Han Fei Yu’s mouth, he felt strange.

“You seem unflustered, don’t pretend to be calm, no one will be able to save you today, I will carve out your flesh!” Having said this, Han Fei Yu’s eyebrows raised as his eyes seemed cold and his face became ferocious, he could not forget the previous brutal beating he had suffered and this had always been a thorn within his heart.

“Junior brother Han, what grievance do you have with him? Just leave it to us, we’ll just cripple him, there’s nothing to really be concerned about here.”

“This wastrel’s words were very abrasive, even if he did not provoke junior brother Han in the past we would definitely not let him go.”

The few people had cold smiles on their faces as they prepared to act.

Zhang Wen Chang hurriedly stood up as he spoke: “Senior and junior brothers, don’t be like this, he is merely an ordinary person, don’t do reckless things.”

“Half crippled old man, just wait by the side, there’s nothing to be concerned here.” One of the youths had disdain written on his face, seemingly very impatient as he pushed Zhang Wen Chang aside, causing him to stumble and almost fall.

“When you first entered the sect, elder Ma Yun treated you like a treasure but what was the outcome? You were only fortunate to establish your sea of bitterness but what use does that have? Time has passed and you have been thoroughly knocked back to your original form……”

“Half crippled old man, don’t bother us anymore, if it weren’t for Liu Yi Yi constantly protecting you…… Hmph!” The person who spoke had a cold smile on his face and although he did not finish his sentence, anyone could tell what he meant.

“My fellow sect mates, I’ve already apologised to you, if you aren’t satisfied you can come at me, don’t make things difficult for my friend.” Zhang Wen Chang stretched his hand to block the group, shielding Ye Fan behind him.

“Half crippled old man, you really think you’re an important person now? Think about it carefully, what are you even worth?” One of the people amongst them was very unhappy as he gazed at him with contempt before heavily pushing him and shouting:

“Scram!”

Ye Fan supported Zhang Weng Chang as his gaze swept past the few people: “Then what are you people worth?”

“Ye Fan, don’t be like this……” Zhang Wen Chang hurriedly tried to stop Ye Fan, preventing him from continuing his sentence before walking forward: “Sect members, I’m really sorry, my friend is only an ordinary human being, don’t mind him. If you’re feeling angry you can come at me, don’t make things difficult for him.”

The youth who was in the lead was already very restless and could bear it no longer as he grabbed Zhang Wen Chang’s collar: “You really believe that just because Liu Yi Yi is backing you it will be enough to protect you? If you don’t want to die you better scam!”

“Let him go!” Ye Fan continued to sit there without moving as he lifted his wine glass and splashed at the person’s face. “You’re looking for death!” The male who was in the lead had a sinister look on his face as he pushed Zhang Wen Chang aside before slapping with his palm towards Ye Fan’s face.

Ye Fan sat there without moving as he stretched his hand to grab that palm which was slapping towards him, twisting downwards a loud ‘Crack!” could be heard as the other party’s wrist was instantly snapped and became the shape of a fishing hook. Thereafter he slapped towards the person’s face as the palm landed heavily.

“Pa!”

It was a very crisp slap and one could clearly see the shape of the face warp before his teeth started flying out, blood splattered out as his entire person was sent flying seven to eight metres like a puppet before heavily falling to the ground.

No one could have expected this outcome, that person struggled on the ground for a while but could not climb back up as a ringing sound resounded in his hears, his head was heavy and dizzy and it felt as though his head had almost been slapped off as he shouted: “Kill him!”

Han Fei Yu had a better understanding of Ye Fan and immediately retreated as he reminded the others: “Be careful, this wastrel has a unique physique that contains immense strength, don’t be caught by him and attack from a distance. Send your weapons out and chop him into meat chunks!”

His words were too slow and Ye Fan’s speed was too fast as he instantly grabbed a male and slapped him twice, causing the person to become dizzy as blood and spittle spewed from his mouth, it seemed as though Ye Fan was holding onto a strawman and wielding him like a weapon.

“Bang! Bang!”

Ye Fan’s strength and speed were very frightening as he wielded the male who was in his grasp, sending him flying towards three cultivators who were pouncing towards him, sounds of bone cracking could be heard.

“Quick, retreat! Don’t go near him!” Han Fei Yu shouted.

At this point, no one needed any reminders, it was clear that the delicate youth before them was like a human shaped ferocious beast, simply too wild, using a living person like a toothpick and smashing him into the others causing them all to tumble to the ground.

“Junior brother Han, didn’t you say he was a wastrel?”

“How could this wastrel have such divine strength?”

The remaining people had lingering fear in their hearts as they questioned Han Fei Yu.

“He really is a wastrel, he can’t cultivate but his strength is quite immense. Don’t go near him and killing him will be easy.” Han Fei Yu had a ferocious cold smile on his face.

Everyone sent their weapons flying out as lights flashed, Azure Wood Seal, Cold Steel Ruler, Crimson Blood Spear and other weapons all floated in the air as they aimed at Ye Fan.

“If you want him dead, all of you should just send out all your weapons. I don’t mind using him as a human meat shield.” Ye Fan waved the person he was holding in his hand as he spoke indifferently, fighting against cultivators of the Sea of Bitterness realm, he did not need to showcase any of his real abilities.

“Don’t! Everyone let’s calm down.” Zhang Wen Chang walked forward and panic could be seen on his face as he stood in front of Ye Fan and shouted at the group: “He’s not only my friend, he’s also Liu Yi Yi’s friend, you people can’t treat him like this……”

“Half crippled old man, you better scam. Whoever you mention is also useless, if I don’t kill him I won’t be able to get rid of the hatred in my heart!” The male who was the first to be sent flying with a slap by Ye Fan held his swollen face as he stood up, a cold light flashed in his eyes: “Is Liu Yi Yi very impressive? If she dares to to criticize our actions, there will be someone to take care of her!”

Looking at this classmate who had been living such a bitter life, Ye Fan lightly sighed as he patted his shoulder and said in a low voice: “Retreat, they can’t deal with me.” Having said this, Ye Fan grabbed Zhang Wen Chang’s arm as he sent him flying backwards.

“What are all of you standing there dazed for, slice him into pieces!” The leading male angrily shouted.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

Sounds of streaking resounded as the Azure Wood Seal, Cold Steel Ruler, Crimson Blood Spear and other weapons swiftly chopped towards Ye Fan.

Ye Fan was calm and composed as he wielded the human meat shield to continually block.

“Aaahhhh……. You guys……. are chopping towards my body!”

The male who was still within Ye Fan’s grasp had finally come to his senses as he screamed miserably while he cursed angrily. If it weren’t for the other people stopping their attacks in time, this cultivator would have already been chopped into pieces.

“Attack together, I don’t believe he can block all of us, I will chop him up!” The leading male had a sinister look as he commanded everyone to attack together.

“Chen Feng, don’t do it! I’ll die because of you!” The cultivator who was still within Ye Fan’s grasp shouted in fear as he was smashed by the Azure Wood Seal and immediately fainted.

The people in the surroundings listened the Chen Feng’s orders as they all sent their weapons chopping forward, although they were very careful, streaks of blood began to spurt from the wounds of the human meat shield.

Ye Fan did not want to continue wasting time with them, he had already reached the Spring of Life realm and killing a cultivator at the Sea of Bitterness realm was as easy as squashing an ant. He lifted the cultivator in his grasp before him to block as he became a streak of green light, instantly rushing before Chen Feng and grabbed him before the other party could even react.

“Aaaahhh!” Chen Feng screamed miserably, he was currently being used as a human meat shield and multiple wounds appeared

on his body.

The people in the surroundings had a feeling of not acting against an evil so as to prevent harm to the innocent, Ye Fan was like lightning as he swiftly ran, “Bang! Bang! Bang!” continually resounded as the people were all smashed to the ground.

Only Han Fei Yu continued to struggled as he sent the Azure Wood Seal flying out, smashing towards Ye Fan wanting to crush him to death. However, he was terrified to find out that the Azure Wood Treasure Seal which had already become the size of a millstone had been grabbed by Ye Fan without being able to move a single inch.

“Bang!”

Han Fei Yu was frightened to the point that his soul felt as though it would leave his body, his Azure Wood Treasure Seal had been easily grabbed by Ye Fan before being smacked away like a fly, at this moment, he really felt like he was simply a fly.

“Crack!”

It was unknown how many bones of Han Fei Yu’s ribcage had shattered as he spat blood and tumbled to the ground, no longer able to move.

Before the bar was a floor covered with injured people who were moaning in pain, no one was able to stand and Zhang Wen Chang

could barely believe his eyes: “This……”

Ye Fan picked these people up one by one as he threw them to a corner and slapped them one after another: “Just you few and you want to bully us? This wastrel who can’t cultivate will still be able to cause all of you to look for your fallen teeth on the ground.”

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

Ye Fan’s two hands swiftly moved as slap after slap landed, these people continually spat out saliva and blood as blood splattered in all directions mixed with teeth.

All the people screamed miserably as they pleaded for mercy.

Ye Fan’s focus was mainly on Han Fei Yu and Chen Feng and treated them like dogs as he placed them together and continually rained slaps on them, the crisp sounds continually resounding.

“You…….” Han Fei Yu had blood dripping from his mouth and nose as his eyes filled with hatred.

“Pa!”

Ye Fan sent a slap flying over before lifting him up: “It really is a small world……”

Hearing these words, Han Fei Yu was incensed to the point of

spitting a large mouthful of blood, his entire body was trembling and he wanted to die.